



THE JOURNAL
OF
THE REV. CHARLES WESLEY, M.A.,
SOMETIME STUDENT OF CHRIST CHURCH, OXFORD,
TO WHICH ARE APPENDED
SELECTIONS FROM HIS CORRESPONDENCE
AND POETRY.
WITH
AN INTRODUCTION AND OCCASIONAL NOTES,
BY THOMAS JACKSON.
IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

We gather up, with pious care,
What happy saints have left behind ;
Their writings in our memory bear,
Their sayings on our faithful mind :
Their works, which traced them to the skies,
For patterns to ourselves we take ;
And dearly love, and highly prize,
The mantle for the wearer's sake.

CHARLES WESLEY.

LONDON :
WESLEYAN METHODIST BOOK-ROOM, 2, CASTLE STREET,
CITY ROAD, E.C. ; AND 66, PATERNOSTER ROW, E.C.

2.1-2.

ENTERED AT STATIONER'S-HALL.

287.1

W 5162

v.1

317717

HAYMAN BROTHERS AND LILLY,
HATTON HOUSE, 113, FARRINGTON ROAD, LONDON, E.C.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

RELIGIOUS projects and actions not unfrequently produce results which their authors never contemplated. When the two Wesleys at Oxford became impressed with the supreme importance of Christian piety, as the great end of their being, and regarded it as an absolute conformity to the will of God, they adopted the purest rules of conduct ; keeping a constant watch over their minds and hearts, and subjecting themselves at stated periods to the most searching scrutiny ; that they might ascertain whether or not they had fulfilled their sacred vows, or had trifled with their engagements and responsibilities. That they might be the better able to discharge the duty of self-examination, each of them commenced the practice of keeping a journal, in which they carefully recorded the events of every day, with their spiritual conflicts, victories, and failures ; for the purpose of calling forth increased gratitude, humility, or caution, as the case might be. Of course these personal and moral histories were, in the first instance, never intended to meet the public eye, but merely to promote the religious benefit of the writers ; for, when these simple-minded, but gifted, men began this practice, they intended to spend their lives in comparative retirement and seclusion, not having the most distant thought of the notoriety which was afterwards forced upon them.

In these matters, however, they were overruled, being providentially called from the cloisters of Oxford to preach salvation by faith in the highways and hedges ; in consequence of which the world was filled with the report of

their names and doings; and their journals, which were designed to be nothing more than a record of their feelings and course of action, the details of which no second person should ever peruse, are, in fact, the most circumstantial and authentic history of a deep and widely-extended revival of religion, such as the world has scarcely witnessed since the apostolic times. Hence it is that these documents, so private and unpretending in their origin, possess a profound interest, which they will possess as long as the English language is understood, and Christianity in its blessedness, activity, and power is duly appreciated.

After the brothers had entered upon their singular career of ministerial labour, so as to be in some quarters highly commended, and in others severely censured,—while multitudes wondered why it was that gentlemen and scholars violated all the rules of ecclesiastical etiquette, and voluntarily endured incredible toils and hardships,—Mr. John Wesley deemed it requisite to publish from time to time large extracts from his private journal, as furnishing, in his estimation, the best explanation and apology that he was able to offer. This practice he continued till the end of his life: and, notwithstanding all that has been subsequently written, it must be confessed that these artless narratives constitute the best history of the origin and progress of Methodism, and its most powerful defence.

For many years Mr. Charles Wesley followed his brother, as an itinerant and field Preacher, with equal steps; but he would never commit his journal to the press. He appears to have written it, from day to day, upon loose sheets of paper, and to have transmitted large portions of it to his wife and friends in the form of letters, some of which have been preserved. Much of it, there is reason to believe, he himself destroyed; and it is probable that much more of it has long since perished, through the carelessness of the persons to whom it was transmitted. That which is now published, and which is all that is known to exist, was transcribed, with great neatness and accuracy,

by the venerable author himself, carefully paged, and was bound in a thick octavo volume. This precious relic he bequeathed to his widow, with a request that she would retain it in her own exclusive possession. About three or four years after his death, it was, however, placed in the hands of Dr. Whitehead, who published large extracts from it in the *Life of the author*, which was prefixed to the *Life of the Rev. John Wesley*. Extracts from this manuscript, still more copious, were inserted in the "*Life of the Rev. Charles Wesley*," in two octavo volumes, which appeared in the year 1841; but the entire document is now for the first time presented to the public. It was purchased some years ago of the writer's heir, the late Charles Wesley, Esq., of musical celebrity; having, however, undergone some mutilations, the occasion of which it would perhaps be impossible to ascertain. A little while before it was purchased, it was in great danger of being irrecoverably lost. It was found among some loose straw on the floor of a public warehouse in London, where the furniture of the owner was for a time deposited; several leaves in the volume being cut from the binding, and yet not removed. The intelligent and pious reader, it is presumed, after perusing and weighing its valuable contents, will be thankful that its publication effectually prevents the recurrence of a similar casualty, and will preserve it from oblivion. It is sent forth into the world, not to gratify an idle curiosity, but as an instructive record of a work of God; presenting, in a manner which every one may understand, the omnipotence of divine grace and truth.

II.

THE published *Journal of Mr. John Wesley* commences with his embarkation at Gravesend for the North American continent, as a Missionary to the heathen tribes then bordering upon the infant colony of Georgia: Charles's begins with their arrival at the place of their destination. As the mission upon which they then entered was the first event

in their lives that called forth their peculiar talents, and exhibited their capabilities,—especially with respect to the patient endurance of hardships and privations, and the courage which never yields to difficulties,—it may not be improper to give a brief notice of the nature of that mission, and of the circumstances in which it was undertaken.

The colony of Georgia was projected by James Edward Oglethorpe, who was in many respects one of the most remarkable men of his age ; having acquired considerable celebrity both as a soldier and a statesman, but most of all as a philanthropist. He was the fourth and youngest son of Sir Theophilus Oglethorpe, of Godalming, in the county of Surrey, and is said to have been born in the year 1698. In 1714 he entered Corpus Christi College, Oxford ; but his destination was quickly changed ; for in the same year we find him Captain-Lieutenant in the first troops of Queen's Guards. He afterwards acquired a more perfect acquaintance with the science of war under the famous Prince Eugene, of Savoy, and other eminent Commanders, among whom was the great Duke of Argyle, who was his patron. At the recommendation of John, Duke of Marlborough, Oglethorpe acted as Secretary and Aide-de-camp to the Prince, whom he attended in his campaigns in Germany and Hungary, where he acquired much practical knowledge concerning military affairs. He had flattering prospects with respect to the German service, but sacrificed them all, that he might apply his talents to the benefit of his own country.

On his return to England he was elected member of the House of Commons for the borough of Haslemere, which he represented in five successive Parliaments, from 1722 to 1754. During this period many regulations, which had for their object the enlargement of the national commerce, were proposed by him, and adopted by the Senate ; for he was a man of an active mind, of large views, of an enterprising genius, and a zealous patriot. While attending the

sittings of Parliament, Oglethorpe, who was well acquainted with the Wesley family, and had generously assisted the venerable Rector of Epworth in his pecuniary difficulties, cultivated the friendship of Samuel Wesley, jun., who was one of the Ushers of Westminster School, and who for intelligence and moral worth was every way worthy of the statesman's confidence and respect. To the honour of Samuel Wesley, it is but just to state that, with a limited income, a subordinate situation, and many calls upon his friendly aid in behalf of his own relations, he was a principal means of establishing a Dispensary for the relief of the sick poor in Westminster: the first institution of the kind that was founded in that important city.* In the year 1728, probably during the Parliamentary recess, this upright man, and excellent poet, addressed "An Ode to James Oglethorpe, Esq., in the Country," in which he expresses himself in such a manner as to convey the impression that a confidential familiarity subsisted between them; so that the senator would not be offended to find himself publicly addressed as the poet's "friend." The last five stanzas contain a fine compliment to Oglethorpe, and not less to Oglethorpe's father, who had also distinguished himself in the service of his country, but was favourable to the exiled family of the Stuarts.

"From pole to pole our squadrons go,
Excelling ancient fables far,
Of Argo, when a ship below,
Or when exalted to a star:
Preserved from rocks and storms in vain,
Laden with wealth and fame they come;
Should erring counsellors ordain,
They suffer shipwreck here at home.

"Them Virtue rises to defend,
In spite of numbers bold:
See Avarice awhile suspend
Its wonted thirst of gold!

* Life, prefixed to his Poems, p. iv., edit. 1743.

What Pride or Fraud may have design'd,
See Reason overbear!
And fleets a port of safety find,
If OGLETHORPE is there.

"The Pious grateful duty owes
To the dear land where he was born;
A glorious debt! which Nature knows
With fairest interest to return.
He merits first his country's praise
Who steers her helm through danger on;
And he deserves the second place,
Who guards her safety with a son.

"'Twas thus the father of my friend
Wisely secured a lasting fame,
Beyond the reach of death to' extend
His public and domestic name.
'Tis single, 'tis imperfect light,
The world, from worth unwedded, shares;
He only shines completely bright,
Who leaves his virtues to his heirs.

"O thus too may his offspring haste
His glory to improve,
And, fired by love to Britain, taste
The bliss of private love!
With joy his summons I attend,
And fly with speed away;
Let but the Patriot condescend
To fix his marriage-day!"

When these beautiful lines met the eye of Oglethorpe, he was engaged in an enterprise of mercy, for which he deserves to be ever had in respectful remembrance, and for which he received the blessings of multitudes who were ready to perish. He was the generous friend of the prisoner; and in the order of time took the precedence of Howard, of Sir Samuel Romilly, and of Sir Fowell Buxton, in zealous attempts to alleviate the misery of those outcasts of society,—the debtor and the felon. The manner in which he was induced to engage in this service, the nature of his efforts, and the results to which they led, are all worthy of special record. Early in the year 1728, an

ingenious architect, of the name of Castel, died in the Fleet prison, where he was confined for debt. He was a friend of Oglethorpe, who used to visit him, doubtless for the purpose of relieving his necessities; and here Oglethorpe received information of the hardships which the unfortunate man endured, and which were said to be the cause of his death. Oglethorpe justly concluded that this was not a solitary case, and therefore moved, in the House of Commons, for a Committee to inquire into the state of the jails in England. The proposal was accepted: a large and efficient Committee was appointed, of which Oglethorpe was made the Chairman.

On entering upon their work, fearful abuses were soon discovered, and appalling scenes of misery were presented to their view. It was found that when insolvent debtors entered the gloomy abodes to which they were destined, keeper after keeper extorted from them sums of money, under the name of fees; that these harpies not unfrequently seized, for their own use, articles of clothing of which they found the prisoners possessed, as well as supplies of food which were provided for them; that the keepers, according to their own caprice, tormented the prisoners by loading them with heavy irons, and inflicting upon them cruel stripes; that in many cases the prisoners had nothing in the shape of a bed to rest upon, but were doomed to sleep, if they could sleep at all, upon the unpaved floors of their several cells; that when any of the prisoners, driven to desperation by hard treatment, committed suicide, their clothes were seized by the keepers, as a perquisite of office; and that some of the most notorious prisoners of the age had effected their escape by means of bribes, which the jailers had accepted as the reward of their infidelity.

The Committee had not long been engaged in their inquiries, before they found occasion to draw up a series of resolutions, which Oglethorpe moved in the House of Commons, where they were unanimously adopted. They embody a specimen of the deeds of darkness which were

then brought to light, and are to the following effect:—
“That Thomas Bambridge, acting Warden of the Fleet prison, hath wilfully permitted several debtors to the Crown in great sums of money, as well as debtors to divers of His Majesty’s subjects, to escape; that he hath been guilty of the most notorious breaches of trust, great extortion, and the highest crimes and misdemeanors, in the execution of his office; and hath arbitrarily and unlawfully loaded with irons, put into dungeons, and destroyed, prisoners for debt, treating them in the most barbarous and cruel manner, in high violation and contempt of the laws of this kingdom:—That John Huggins, Esq., late Warden of the Fleet prison, did, during his wardenship, wilfully permit many considerable debtors in his custody to escape; and was notoriously guilty of great breaches of trust, extortions, cruelties, and other high crimes and misdemeanors, in the execution of his office, to the great oppression and ruin of many of the subjects of this kingdom:—That James Barnes, William Pindar, John Everett, and Thomas King, were agents of and accomplices with the said Thomas Bambridge, in the commission of the said crimes.” It was also agreed to address His Majesty, requesting him to command the Attorney-General to prosecute these offenders; who were ordered to be committed close prisoners to Newgate; and two bills were directed to be brought in: the one, to disable Thomas Bambridge to hold the office of Warden of the Fleet, or exercise any authority relating thereto: the other, for the better regulating the Fleet prison, and more effectually preventing and punishing arbitrary and illegal practices in connexion with it.*

These achievements of this Parliamentary Committee, in behalf of the oppressed, filled the mind of Oglethorpe’s poetic friend with thankfulness and admiration; and hence, one of the finest productions of Samuel Wesley’s genius is entitled, “THE PRISONS OPENED: a Poem, occasioned by the GLORIOUS PROCEEDINGS of the Committee of the House

* Salmon’s Chronological Historian, vol. ii., p. 210, edit. 1747.

of Commons, appointed to inquire into the state of the Jails of this kingdom, in the year 1728." This poem is the more valuable because of the intimacy which subsisted between the author and Oglethorpe; so that the stirring facts which it describes may be fairly assumed to have been derived from that benevolent and energetic man, with whose kind feelings the poet cherished a deep sympathy. The poem is dedicated to Oglethorpe, with the other members of the Committee, and must have produced a thrilling interest at the time of its first appearance; the public mind not being then so familiar with subjects of this kind as it has been since the press was brought into greater requisition. A few brief extracts from this admirable composition, which evidently flowed from the writer's heart, will not be deemed irrelevant in this place.

“ What various paths unhappy mortals tread,
Which down to dungeons and to tortures lead!
In jail a few secure their ill-got store;
By vices many fall, by folly more.
The flatter'd heir in short-lived pomp behold,
How flush'd with youth, and wine, and love, and gold!
All arts, all baits, unnumber'd tempters try,
Friendship's endearing form, and Beauty's eye.
Manors are lost, though petty stakes are won,
And garter'd sharpeners urge his ruin on.
By pity some (a glorious fault!) have fail'd,
A friend supported, or a father bail'd:
Some perish void of error and offence,
Cast headlong by resistless Providence:
Orphans, who frauds of guardians cannot shun;
Clients, by legal labyrinths undone;
The trader, strictly just, yet overthrown
By others' crimes, and losses not his own.
Nor more redress the breaking merchant finds
From Spanish seizures, than from adverse winds.
Lo! countless swarms the dire abode receives,
Thick as in autumn drop the sapless leaves,
Whom State deceit and South-Sea plunder drain'd,
Which like a general deluge swept the land;
Whom public faith could no protection lend,
Seeming, and only seeming, to defend.

" When wretches, stripp'd of Fortune's gifts, repair
 To the dark dome of temporal despair,
 Fast by the prison-gates, with sleepless eyes,
 Sits griping, never-sated Avarice ;
 To him the' admitted fine for being poor,
 And ope with gold the' inhospitable door ;
 Compell'd, since laws and jailers so ordain,
 To pay for misery, and to bribe for pain :
 To gain the' asylum of the Fleet they strive,
 The privilege to be entomb'd alive.
 So, as the Pagan fabling poets tell,
 Was Charon fee'd for wafting souls to hell :
 To pass the lake thick-thronging ghosts desire,
 To torments most condemn'd, and penal fire ;
 As if Alecto's snakes they long'd to feel,
 Or Tityus' vulture, or Ixion's wheel.

" The jail (sad emblem of flagitious times,
 Revenging virtues, and rewarding crimes,)

Sees only villains thrive, by ruin great,
 Who owe to guilt the splendour of their state ;
 Who, placed by fraud and wealth from justice free,
 In ease or pomp enjoy captivity ;
 Who sure escape by massy gold can force,
 While wardens share the wealth of creditors ;
 Or those who basely join to' afflict the good,
 Comrades of theft, and instruments of blood ;
 Whose well-feign'd worth the merchant's trust deceives,
 And stocks with monthly spoils the den of thieves ;
 Who, as superiors dictate, witness bear,
 To riot, murder, nay, to treason, swear ;
 Who aid to worst barbarities afford,
 Relentless hell-hounds, worthy of their lord ;
 Who drink to burning Fever's thirst deny,
 And see the famish'd swoon with stony eye ;
 Permit not prisoners even on alms to feed,
 But snatch from starving mouths the scanty bread.

* * * * *
 " The Fleet's stern king, circled with guards like these.
 Each helpless subject robs, and strips, and fleas ;
 Incarnate fiends for torturing shackles call,
 Except the captive yields them—more than all :
 In prison within prison staked he lies,
 And keepers under keepers tyrannize :
 With weighty fetters gall'd, the sufferers groan,
 Or close-screw'd rivets crack the solid bone ;

Their only bed dank earth, unpaved and bare,
 Their only covering is the chains they wear :
 Debarr'd from cheerful morn, and human sight,
 In lonely, restless, and enduring night ;
 The strongest health unsinew'd by disease,
 And Famine wasting life by slow degrees :
 Piecemeal alive they rot, long doom'd to bear
 The pestilential, foul, imprison'd air ;
 Unless the friendly fumes on reason prey,
 And kind Distraction take their sense away.
 But each black view of horrible restraint,
 What verse can number, and what pencil paint ?
 Dire scenes ! which Huggins and his Bambridge know,
 Where ghastly spectres utter tales of woe ;
 As if the prisoners were condemn'd to dwell
 With pains, with darkness, and with fiends of hell.
 No smallest glimpse of distant hope they see ;
 O lowest depth of human misery !
 When wish'd-for death's approach shows quiet nigh,
 The soul just fluttering is forbid to fly ;
 Then, seeming kind, the curst tormentors strive
 To keep departing anguish still alive.
 So when the long-robed murderers of Rome,
 Inquisitors, a wretch to tortures doom,
 They heal the limbs which can no more endure,
 Less cruel when they rack than when they cure,
 That nature, spent, recruits of strength may gain,
 For fresh distortion, and repeated pain.
 When wild despair, impatient of its woes,
 By fond self-murder would suborn repose,
 A life destroy'd unmoved the keeper sees,
 And only mourns his loss of bribes and fees.
 Here, though his barbarous rigours find an end,
 Farther will powerful avarice extend :
 Like the Grand Turk, he pleases to declare
 Himself, of all that die, the general heir :
 What every vassal leaves he speaks his own,
 But yields no portion to the wife or son.

* * * * *

So Purgatory's realm the Pope obeys,
 The founder he and warden of the place !
 There souls are feign'd fierce flames to undergo,
 Intense as everlasting burnings glow ;
 Though Christ had clear'd their guilt, they long remain,
 Pardon'd, and prisoners to infernal pain ;

No charitable Pontiff turns the keys,
 Till priestly jailers have secured their fees.
 Is ours the land where peace and freedom smile ?
 What wrathful influence cursed our age and isle,
 Monsters of boundless avarice to see,
 Unblushing fraud, unsated cruelty ?

* * * * *

“ Yet, Britain, cease thy captives’ woes to mourn,
 To break their chains, see OGLETHORPE was born !
 Vernon, whose steady truth no threats can bend !
 And Hughes, the sailor’s never-failing friend !
 Towers, whose rich youth can ease and pleasure fly,
 And Percival, renown’d for piety !
 Cornewall, to aid the friendless never slow,
 Whose generous breast still melts at others’ woe !
 These dare the tyrants, long secure, oppose ;
 Thus gracious Heaven its benefits bestows,
 The antidote is found there where the poison grows. } ”

* * * * *

“ Soon as the Fleet receives each welcome guest,
 Joy, long-forgotten, cheers the faintest breast ;
 Pain at their presence stops the rising sigh,
 And languid Famine opes her hollow eye ;
 Horror flies thence, they once appearing there,
 And the worst torment of the jail—Despair.
 So, at the’ Almighty’s nod, with rapid wings,
 Forth from the throne a guardian angel springs,
 Through space immense, quick as the morning ray,
 To succour earth distress’d he shoots away,
 Bids Peter rise, from bonds and keepers free,
 And looks the prisoner into liberty.

“ Fear’d, honour’d, loved, long may the Patriots stand,
 Support and honour of their native land !
 Warm without rage, without vain-glory brave,
 Firm to protect, and obstinate to save !
 Whom no false scents deceive, no searches tire ;
 Resistless to revenge, as to inquire !
 He who for injured right dares strongly plead,
 The prisoner’s counsel, earnest, though unfee’d ;
 To guard the weak, who scorns the mighty’s frown,
 Despising no man’s danger but his own ;
 In camps his courage as in senates tried,
 Daunts with severe rebuff the sons of pride :
 O that his soul with healthier limbs were join’d,
 A body less unequal to his mind !

* * * * *

" Proceed, disinterested few, proceed,
 Heal every wound, and succour every need ;
 Let all Britannia's misery be redress'd,
 Cite every tyrant to the righteous test ;
 The test which innocence can never fear,
 Candid though strict, impartial though severe.
 No artful guesses there to proofs advance,
 Help'd by dark, dubious, distant circumstance ;
 Nor bribes, nor threats, nor hinting prompters there
 Inform the wavering witness how to swear.
 Go on ! let none your ardent zeal withstand,
 And shower diffusive mercies o'er the land,—
 That Heaven by you may bless our happy isle,
 And even the tradesman and the merchant smile ;
 While crowds unchain'd your fame with shouts declare,
 Restored to vital light, and vital air.
 So sudden this deliverance which they meet,
 Their grief so hopeless, and their joy so great,
 Scarce to the change they yet can credit give,
 Scarce are they yet persuaded that they live.
 So, when the' archangel gives the fated sign,
 (If human joys we liken to divine,)
 The summons universal Nature hears,
 Nor pleads prescription of six thousand years ;
 Not everlasting hills their dead retain,
 Not deep abysses of the' unfathom'd main ;
 The sleeping saints look up with joyful eyes,
 And, quickening at the sacred trump, arise ;
 Their pains all past, their transport to succeed,
 Immortal lives in endless bloom they lead,
 From death's tyrannic chain, and earth's dark prison, freed." }

Samuel Wesley was not the only poet who celebrated the generous deeds of Oglethorpe and his associates. The muse of Thomson poured forth the following strains in honour of "the Jail Committee, in the year 1729 :"—

" And here can I forget the generous band,
 Who, touch'd with human woe, redressive search'd
 Into the horrors of the gloomy jail ?
 Unpitied and unheard, where misery moans,
 Where sickness pines, where thirst and hunger burn,
 And poor Misfortune feels the lash of Vice.
 While in the land of liberty, the land

Whose every street and public meeting glow
 With open freedom, little tyrants raged,
 Snatch'd the lean morsel from the starving mouth,
 Tore from cold wintry limbs the tatter'd weed,
 Even robb'd them of the last of comforts,—sleep ;
 The freeborn BRITON to the dungeon chain'd,
 Or, as the lust of cruelty prevail'd,
 At pleasure mark'd him with inglorious stripes,
 And crush'd out lives, by secret, barbarous ways,
 That for their country would have toil'd or bled.
 O great design, if executed well,
 With patient care, and wisdom-temper'd zeal !
 Ye sons of mercy ! yet resume the search,
 Drag forth the legal monsters into light,
 Wrench from their hands Oppression's iron rod,
 And bid the cruel feel the pains they give.
 Much still untouch'd remains ; in this rank age,
 Much is the patriot's weeding hand required.
 The toils of law, (what dark, insidious men
 Have cumbrous added to perplex the truth,
 And lengthen simple justice into trade,)
 How glorious were the day that saw these broke,
 And every man within the reach of right !" *

III.

ONE act of generosity prepares the way for another. Scarcely had Oglethorpe succeeded, with the aid of his associates, in dragging to open view the scandalous abuses which were practised in the public prisons, and in restoring many of their unfortunate inmates to liberty, before we find him engaged in an undertaking of greater magnitude and difficulty, the management of which devolved principally upon himself. This was the establishment of the colony of Georgia ; the idea of which, in all probability, was suggested to his mind by the situation of the men whom he had rescued from the fangs of the jailer, and the horrors of imprisonment. Many of them were without character and without property ; and to put them into a way of providing for themselves, in their own country, was a hopeless task. Emigration seemed to be their only practicable

* Winter.

resource ; and their number was such as to require extensive arrangements, in order that their case might be effectually relieved.

Upon this subject the friends of the colony laid great stress when making their appeal to the people of England for help. In an able pamphlet, which was published in a handsome quarto size, and entitled, “Reasons for establishing the Colony of Georgia,” the following course of argument is employed, “in respect of those who are thrown into prison for debt :”—“I believe the calculation will not be thought immodest, if I estimate these at four thousand every year ; and that above one third part of the debts is never recovered hereby. If one half of these, or only five hundred of them, were to be sent every year into Georgia, to be incorporated with those foreign Protestants who are expelled their own countries for religion, what great improvements might not be expected in our trade, when these, as well as the foreigners, would be so many new subjects gained to England ! for, while they are in prison, they are absolutely lost. The public loses their labour and their knowledge. If they take the benefit of the Act of Parliament, that allows them liberty on the delivery of their all to their creditors, they come naked into the world again ; as they have no money, and little credit, they find it almost impossible to get into business, especially when our trades are overstocked ; they therefore, by contracting new debts, must return again into prison, or, how honest soever their dispositions may be, by idleness and necessity will be forced into bad courses, such as begging, cheating, or robbing.” “The colony of Georgia will be a proper asylum for these. Here they will have the best motive for industry,—a possession of their own, and no possibility of subsisting without it.

“I have heard it said that our prisons are the properest places for those who are thrown into them, by keeping them from being hurtful to others. Surely this way of thinking is too severe. Are these people, with their liberty,

to lose our compassion? Are they to be shut up from our eyes, and excluded from our hearts? Many of very honest dispositions fall into decay, nay, perhaps because they are so, because they cannot allow themselves that latitude which others take to be successful. The ways that lead to ruin are various. Some are undone by over-trading; others by want of trade; many by being responsible for others. Do all these deserve such hardship? If a man sees a friend, a brother, or a father, going to a prison, where felons are to be his society, want and sickness his sure attendants, and death, in all likelihood, his only but quick relief; if he stretches out his hand to save him; if, to rescue him from immediate slavery and ruin, he runs the risk of his own liberty, and at last loses it; is there any one who will say this man is not an object of compassion? not only so, but of esteem, and worth preserving for his virtue? But, supposing that idleness and intemperance are the usual cause of his ruin, are these crimes adequate to such a punishment as confinement for life? But even granting that these unhappy people deserve no indulgence, it is certainly imprudent in any state to lose the benefit of the labour of so many thousands.

“But the public loss, by throwing men into prison, is not confined to them only. They have, many of them, wives and children. These are also involved in their ruin. Being destitute of support, they must perish, or become a burden to their parishes by their inability to work, or a nuisance by their thefts.”

The subject and the earnestness of this appeal clearly connect the origin of the colony of Georgia with the Parliamentary inquiry into the state of the English prisons, the conducting of which had been confided to Oglethorpe; especially when we find that some of the men who were associated with him in redressing the wrongs of the prisoner, were his fellow-Trustees for the new colony. Among these we may particularly mention Thomas Towers and James Vernon, Esqrs., and Lord Viscount Percival.

But Englishmen of desperate fortunes were not the only parties whose interests it was intended to secure by the transatlantic colony. Protestant exiles from various continental nations, the victims of Papal intolerance and cruelty, were invited to share in the benefits which were provided in this promising settlement. Of this class of persons who availed themselves of the invitation, the Salzburghers, as they were called, were the first and the most numerous. A few notices concerning these interesting people will serve at once to show the generosity of Oglethorpe, and of the men who were associated with him ; the importance of the colony at that particular juncture ; the execrable intolerance of Popery ; and the spirit of meekness, resignation, and fidelity, with which Christianity inspires those who are under its power.

Salzburg is a city of Bavaria, the Archbishop of which was a temporal Prince, as well as an ecclesiastical dignitary. In his dominions were several Protestants, some of whom held the tenets of the Lutherans, and others those of the Reformed. True to the principles of his Church, he declared that he "should be inexcusable if, as an ecclesiastical Prince, he should tolerate the exercise of a religion in his Archbishopric contrary to the Roman Catholic religion ; which," added he, "by the grace of God, is of more than twelve hundred years' standing." He therefore prohibited all public worship and preaching among his Protestant subjects ; forbidding more than three persons ever to meet together on a religious account. Finding that even this severe measure was not sufficient to arrest the progress of alleged heresy, he issued an edict requiring all his Protestant subjects to leave his dominions ; claiming for himself the credit of "clemency," for granting them permission to leave their homes and country. "Workmen, valets, or domestics of both sexes," were to "depart, with all their effects, in eight days." A month's time was granted to such Protestants as were worth one hundred and fifty florins, and two months to such as were possessed of property

to a greater amount, that they "might sell their effects in the best manner they could;" and in the mean while, all Protestants who were engaged in the public service were dismissed, and their wages discontinued. This merciless edict bears the date of October 31st, 1731; it was sent forth in the name of "Leopold, by the grace of God, Archbishop of Salzburg, Legate of the Holy See Apostolical, and Primate of Germany," and addressed "to all our Vice-Deans, Bailiffs, Provosts, Governors, their substitutes, Judges, and to all our other officers, greeting;" and was therefore brought into general operation in the middle of winter. At this inclement season, therefore, TWENTY THOUSAND SIX HUNDRED AND SEVENTY-EIGHT PERSONS, men, women, and children, the aged, the sick, new-born infants, with their mothers, were driven from the land of their fathers, and sent forth through fields of snow, in quest of a people who were not hardened into fiends by Papal superstition, and among whom they might dwell in safety and peace.

These persecuted exiles divided themselves into different companies, and went forth in various directions, as circumstances might dictate, obtaining sympathy and aid from the pious and humane, but often cruelly insulted by the sons of Rome. Letters from Germany, detailing the hardships and wrongs which these people endured, with the meek and devout spirit by which the sufferers were actuated, were sent to England; and some of these narrations were presented in translations to the public, producing deep emotion in many an English heart; for the Protestant monarchy of this country was then comparatively weak, so that many British subjects trembled for their own liberties and rights. We select a few paragraphs from a scarce and interesting pamphlet, entitled, "An Account of the Sufferings of the persecuted Protestants of Salzburg, with their Reception in several Imperial Cities in Germany: together with their Confession of Faith: taken from Authentic Papers. To which is added, the

Archbishop's Decree and Passport, and two Letters relating thereto, from the Evangelic Body at Ratisbon. 1732."

"KAUFFBEYERN. On St. John's day, after Christmas, 1731, late at night, when the city gates were shut, about eight hundred Protestant exiles of Salzburg, of both sexes, arrived here, under the guidance of a Bavarian messenger. They had been driven out of their native country for the sake of their religion, and forced to leave their all behind them. A report was spread that they had themselves desired to be conducted hither; but, upon inquiry, they solemnly protested that they had not known whither they were to go; and that all they desired was, to be admitted into some Protestant town, for the spiritual comfort of their souls. After the arrival of these poor people, (who were very meanly clothed, and were for the most part labouring people and servants, and had brought a few children with them,) they patiently waited without the city-gates for admission, (which they had earnestly solicited by about forty of their deputies, who arrived just before the gates were shut,) singing, with great devotion, Luther's hymn,

'God is our Refuge in distress,' &c.

"Orders were soon given for their reception; and some of them had lodgings assigned them in the Protestant inns, whilst many were received into private houses, not without many tears. They were as hospitably entertained as the smallness of the place would admit of, and provided with spiritual and temporal food till the 30th of December. On Innocents' day they heard, for the first time, the morning sermon; and at noon they attended a sermon suited to their present circumstances, at which they expressed an uncommon desire and zeal for the word of God. Their behaviour among us was as became true Christians. They were modest, humble, peaceable, contented with, and thankful for, whatever was given them; and expressed the greatest delight in praying, singing psalms, and reading good books.

“As they had been expelled their country on a sudden, and not permitted to furnish themselves with necessaries for their journey, our Protestant citizens have testified their charity to them, by furnishing them with useful books, and better clothing for this cold season, and with food and money. Several of them have been taken into service in the town ; some of the children put out apprentices, and to school ; and their sick and weak provided for in the hospital.

“When the Roman Catholic members of our Magistracy had complained in form of the stay of these poor people, and other circumstances had intervened which rendered their further entertainment here very difficult, (especially since nineteen thousand more were to make their pilgrimage through these parts,) we came to this resolution, that all who could not be provided for here, should be sent through three different roads to Memmingen, Augsburg, and Kempten, under the conduct of some of our Protestant citizens. The necessary passports, with the money collected at the church-door towards defraying the expenses of their journey, were delivered to the deputies that went to conduct them ; and four waggons were provided for carrying the old weak people and the children, with the few things they had brought with them.

“On the day of their departure, after they had heard the morning sermon, and had taken necessary refreshment, they repaired to our Trinity church, at noon, where they heard a farewell discourse, with many tears, and a hearty affection for the word of God, and concluded with the hymn,

‘ God is our Refuge in distress,’

which was sung only by themselves. After this, the deputies led them, two by two, between the Mayor and Aldermen, on one side of the church-door, and the reverend Ministry on the other. Being dismissed by the citizens with innumerable blessings, they took their several roads

in God's name, like so many flocks of sheep, with great patience and humility.

“Although we could not imagine that the quiet march of these poor exiles would be anywhere obstructed, yet they that were ordered to go to Kempten found that not one of their number could be permitted to pass that way. The deputy went to lodge them in Ober Beuern, a village belonging to this city, till further orders. But the Roman Catholics of that place opposed their entrance in so violent a manner, that all their lives had been in danger if they had not retired. They therefore came back to this city, and were lodged at the Golden Crown. The next day, being the 31st of December, they were sent to Memmingen, where they met with a joyful reception.”

“AUGSBURG. On the 30th of December, 1731, the Protestant Magistracy of Augsburg, having had notice given them, by the Magistracy and Ministry of Kauffbeyern, that eight hundred exiles of Salzburg had arrived there, and intended to march thither, earnestly desiring, for the sake of Christ, that they would receive them; the same was immediately communicated by the reverend Ministry of this city to the congregation at the cathedral church of St. Anne. As soon as the sermon was ended, the Protestant Senate met, with our head Almoner and Recorder; and, having resolved to make a collection on New-Year's day, for the benefit of these poor people, they desired the senior Rectors to draw up an account of them, to be read after the noon and evening sermons. But when the Protestant part of the Senate acquainted the Roman Catholic part, that many Salzburg exiles were expected, and should be divided among the Protestants, without the least molestation to the Roman Catholics, the Roman Catholics opposed their admission, under several prettexts, insomuch that nothing could be effected; but we were obliged to quarter them among the Protestants of the suburbs, some in inns, others in silver and copper mills, in sawing mills, the hospital, and garden-houses. To all this the inhabitants

expressed so great a readiness, that they who were not able to receive any, lamented it as their misfortune. So great was the charity of all ranks of people, that they had not patience to wait for their coming ; but, some on foot, some on horseback, and some in coaches, went to meet them several miles out of the town. Two hundred of them, with their deputed Commissary of Kauffbeyern, arrived that evening, and marched two by two over the fields, amidst some thousands of people, both Papists and Protestants, some of whom distributed money among them. Every Protestant was desirous to comfort and relieve these distressed brethren. Several tradesmen and merchants were not ashamed to call them brethren and sisters in the fields. They were ordered into their assigned quarters ; and there they lifted up their hands to heaven, and gave thanks to God.

“ On New-Year’s day, after the morning service, the Protestant Senate ordered the two senior Rectors of the Augustan Confession to preach to these poor exiles, in two different places without the city. This was done accordingly, in the presence of a great multitude of people, in Mr. Schawer’s garden. The service began with singing the hymn,

‘ Commit thy ways and doings.’

Then followed a prayer, suited to the circumstances of the exiles : then a discourse on the name of JESUS, with a particular application to the occasion ; showing how this holy Name ought to influence the conduct both of the Augsburgers and the exiles.

“ They are generally of good courage, and, notwithstanding all the misery they have gone through, of a cheerful temper. There appears so much honesty and fidelity in their countenances, that one may almost affirm they are without guile. They are, for the most part, of a robust constitution, and from twenty to thirty-six years of age ; though some few of them are from forty to sixty.

“These people behave themselves not only very thankfully, contentedly, meekly, and patiently, but, when they have an occasion of mentioning their afflictions, they do it without the least bitterness or murmuring against their former superiors: and they incessantly pray, with many tears, for their relations whom they have left behind, not knowing what sufferings they may have to undergo.

“As to those who were sent to Memmingen, they have been received as brethren and sisters, and carefully provided for. The greatest part of those who are yet come are poor labouring people and servants; but some of those who are to follow are of better condition. Some are still in prison, where they content themselves with bread and water, praying, and singing psalms or hymns.

“The third part of these exiles, who went to Ulm, found their way prepared by God. They were conducted, amidst a great concourse of people, from the Danube-gate to the Town-House, singing all the way the hymns which begin thus:—

‘God is our Refuge in distress,’

and,

‘He that confides in his Creator.’

Many thousands of people were excited by these exiles to join with them in praising God. They were immediately ordered out of the cold, into a warm room, every one being desirous to give them some refreshment. After the Magistrate had taken an account of them, they were quartered in the several inns of the town, which were hardly large enough to contain the great concourse of other Protestants who flocked thither, who all joined with one accord in praises and thanksgivings to God, and continued till late at night.

“The next day the Rev. Rector Frick preached a sermon upon Gen. xii. 1, 2. As this discourse was chiefly applied to the Salzburgers, it is impossible to express with what attention they heard the word of God. They stood

like people who have had no food for a great while, and therefore wait with greater eagerness to receive some to satisfy their hunger.

“Being averse to nothing more than idleness, and ready to undertake the hardest labour, many have already found a subsistence, as we hope the rest very shortly will.”

In their own country, “at first, all pains were taken to dissuade them from the Protestant religion, by arguments from worldly interest ; and when that would not do, their books, which they had been many years in collecting, were seized in several places ; and it is reported of the Dean of Werffen, that he burned them. After they were thus deprived of the word of God, their enemies proceeded to more violent means. Many were apprehended, particularly those who were suspected to be leaders, and sent in fetters, dressed in derision with white caps, which hung down to their breasts, into the deepest dungeons in Salzburg ; and others have been sent away, their relations not knowing whither. When this would not do, the Papists threatened them with beheading, drowning, the galleys, and the like. To all this these poor people made only the following reply : ‘ In God’s name ; in God’s name.’ When it was found that they could not be brought by any of these means to love their lives and fortunes more than God and His truth, they were on a sudden ordered to leave the country ; and these orders were immediately executed with all imaginable rigour. Some were taken from the field ; others were dragged naked out of their beds. All had a sudden summons to depart ; and very few were permitted to sell their goods, or take anything necessary with them. Many have been obliged to leave their wives and substance behind them, and to go away deprived of all they had in the world. And what increased their calamity was, that they were forced to begin their journey in the depth of winter, when the cold is most severe. The first eight hundred spent five whole weeks in their journey, and that in the most bitter cold and stormy weather ; and were

a fortnight in wandering over mountains and hills, not knowing whither they went. This fatigued and emaciated them so much, that they were almost starved, having been in want of bread for three days together. This is the case of these poor exiles, whose number will be considerably augmented by those that are yet to come."

"AUGSBURG. Jan. 25th, 1732, there arrived in our neighbourhood five hundred more exiles of Salzburg, besides their women and children. One of our Protestant Aldermen was immediately sent to meet them, who read their passports, registered them, and provided a dinner for the whole company. After which they were divided into parties; so that one hundred in one place, eighty in another, sixty in a third, and fifty in a fourth, might be quartered for this first day without the city; and, when they were arrived in their lodgings, they sang hymns and prayed with great devotion. There were with them three waggons full of women, new-born children, and old people, who were taken to the hospital. It was a signal mercy that they did not all perish with cold; considering that they came in a severe frost, being poor, and many of them very bare. Indeed, some did fall sick by the hardships they endured; among whom was an old man, since dead, who, being asked whether he was not sorry for having left his native country, answered, 'No: I die with joy, and in hope of a better life.'"

The publication in England of details like these could not fail to make a deep impression upon the public mind. Several persons of known probity and honour engaged to receive contributions for the relief of these suffering people; and British charity placed in their hands the noble sum of £33,000 for that purpose.* Oglethorpe not only

* The following persons offered their services as treasurers of the Salzburghers' fund:—the Rev. Mr. Archdeacon Denne, Rector of Lambeth; Benjamin Hoare, Esq., Banker, Fleet-street; Sir John Philips, Bart., Bartlett's Buildings; William Tillard, Esq., Spital-square, Bishopsgate-street; James Vernon, Esq., Grosvenor-street;

mentioned their case in Parliament, but also proposed to his brother Trustees of the projected colony, that they should give a general invitation to these pious strangers to accept of a settlement and asylum there. To this they readily assented ; so that the invitation was given ; and by many of the expatriated Salzburgers it was gratefully accepted.

In the mean while arrangements were made with all practicable expedition for the commencement of this great undertaking. The House of Commons voted £10,000 in behalf of the colony ; congregational collections were extensively made for the same object ; and the general fund was greatly augmented by private liberality. A ship was engaged, of about two hundred tons' burden ; the emigrants, consisting of thirty-five families, including one hundred and sixteen settlers, among whom were farmers, carpenters, bricklayers, &c., embarked at Deptford, November 16th, 1732 ; Oglethorpe accompanying them at his own expense, and being debarred by the charter from receiving any pecuniary benefit from the scheme which he had originated, and engaged to carry into effect. On the 13th of January following they arrived at Charlestown, in Carolina, where they were kindly received ; and from thence Oglethorpe proceeded, with his fellow-voyagers, and such help as he could obtain, to the tract of country which was assigned them, and which is situated between Florida and the province of Carolina. Here they formed the plan of a town, to which they gave the name of Savannah, from the river with which it is connected. Portions of land were also allotted to the settlers.

While Oglethorpe was thus employed, the Trustees of the colony, whom he had left behind, were not unmindful of the persecuted Salzburgers. A ship was sent to Rotterdam, for the purpose of receiving such of them as were

the Rev. Mr. Ziegenbagen, Chaplain to His Majesty, and Preacher in the German chapel, St. James's, at his house in St. James's Place.

willing to embark under the British banner for the American wilderness. They were first conveyed to Dover, and doubtless received there the requisite supplies for their voyage and ultimate destination. From thence they sailed, January 8th, 1734, for the far west, accompanied by two of their own Ministers, and by Baron Von Reck, as Commissary. They were cordially received at Charlestown, where they met with Oglethorpe, and afterwards at Savannah, where the English settlers saluted them with a hearty cheer, to which they gave an equally hearty response. The choice of a situation was offered to them; and they selected one, the scenery of which bore some resemblance to that of their own country. Here they knelt down before God, in grateful acknowledgment of all His mercies to them in their extensive and perilous wanderings; with the Bible in their hands, they then marched up to the place which they deemed the most suitable as the site of a town; they then sang a hymn, and one of the Pastors pronounced the usual benediction. To the town which they intended forthwith to build they gave the name of EBENEZER.*

Having made these arrangements, and provided for the maintenance of order during his absence, Oglethorpe left the colony, May 7th, 1734, and arrived at St. Helen's, in the Isle of Wight, on the 16th of June; bringing with him several Indians of distinction, who declared their desire that they and their people should be instructed in the Christian religion, and also stand in a friendly relation to the British subjects who had recently become their neighbours. He was received in England with the greatest respect; and was everywhere met with congratulations on

* A very interesting pamphlet, bearing the following title, was published in London in the year 1734:—"An Extract from the Journals of Mr. Commissary Von Reck, who conducted the first Transport of Salzburgers to Georgia; and of the Reverend Mr. Bolzcius, one of their Ministers: giving an Account of their Voyage to, and happy Settlement in, that Province. Published by the Direction of the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge." 12mo.

the success of his benevolent enterprise. Among other persons who addressed him in this strain was the venerable Rector of Epworth, who, though labouring under the infirmities of age and disease, had still a heart to feel for the welfare of mankind. The following letter, which was written by him, has never before appeared in any work that has issued from the British press :—

“ Epworth, July 6th, 1734.

“HONOURED SIR,—May I be admitted, while such crowds of our nobility and gentry are pouring in their congratulations, to press with my poor mite of thanks into the presence of one who so well deserves the title of UNIVERSAL BENEFACTOR OF MANKIND? It is not only your valuable favours on many accounts to my son, late of Westminster, and myself, when I was not a little pressed in the world, nor your more extensive charity to the poor prisoners ; it is not these only that so much demand my warmest acknowledgments, as your disinterested and immovable attachment to your country, and your raising a new colony, or rather a little world of your own, in the midst of wild woods and uncultivated deserts, where men may live free and happy, if they are not hindered by their own stupidity and folly, in spite of the unkindness of their brother mortals.

“ I owe you, Sir, besides this, some account of my little affairs since the beginning of your expedition. Notwithstanding my own and my son’s violent illness, which held me half a year, and him above twelve months, I have made a shift to get more than three parts in four of my Dissertations on Job * printed off, and both the paper, printing, and maps, hitherto, paid for. My son John at Oxford, now that his elder brother is gone to Tiverton, takes care of the remainder of the impression at London ; and I have

* These Dissertations are comprised in a large folio volume, in Latin, which was published by subscription. Oglethorpe subscribed for NINE copies, two of them large paper : a greater number than was subscribed for by any other man.

an ingenious artist here with me in my house at Epworth, who is gravating and working off the remaining maps and figures for me ; so that I hope, if the printer does not hinder me, I shall have the whole ready by next spring ; and, by God's leave, I shall be in London myself, to deliver the books perfect. I print five hundred copies, as in my proposals ; whereof I have about three hundred already subscribed for ; and among my subscribers, fifteen or sixteen English Bishops, with some in Ireland.

"If you will please herewith to accept the tender of my most sincere respect and gratitude, you will thereby confer one further obligation, honoured Sir, on

"Your most obedient and humble servant,

"SAMUEL WESLEY.*

"*To James Oglethorpe, Esq.*"

The learned writer of this beautiful epistle was disappointed in his plans. Instead of going to London the following spring, to deliver with his own hands to the subscribers the elaborate volume upon which he had expended much time and thought, he passed to his final reward ; dying on the 25th of April, 1735, in the seventy-second year of his age. After his death it was proposed to his sons John and Charles, to accompany Oglethorpe to Georgia ; John as a Missionary to the Indians, and Charles as Oglethorpe's Secretary. To this proposal they demurred for some time, particularly on account of the situation of their mother ; but when the matter was proposed to her, she at once gave her free consent. Notwithstanding her widowhood, and the straitened circumstances in which she was placed, this noble-minded woman said, "Had I twenty sons, I should rejoice that they were all so employed, though I should never see them more." †

* This letter is copied from "Biographical Memorials of James Oglethorpe, Founder of the Colony of Georgia, in North America. By Thaddeus Mason Harris, D.D. Boston, 1841." This production of the American press is characterized by extensive research, and the facts which it embodies are extremely interesting.

† Moore's Life of the Rev. John Wesley, vol. i., p. 234.

The brothers were considered to be eminently qualified for the work which they were requested to undertake, by the zeal and earnestness with which they applied themselves to the duties of religion and benevolence, and by their habits of strict self-denial; each of them possessing what they afterwards so appropriately expressed,—

“ A soul inured to pain,
To hardship, grief, and loss,
Bold to take up, firm to sustain,
The consecrated cross.”

It is not generally known that Mr. John Wesley went to Georgia under the sanction of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. He was well known to Dr. Burton, the estimable President of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, who was one of the Trustees of the colony. Dr. Burton introduced him to Oglethorpe, who pressed him to undertake the mission; and, having gained his consent, the Trustees recommended him to the Society, by whom he was readily accepted; and it was resolved that he should receive £50 a year from the Society's funds. He was to take the place of a Clergyman of the name of Quincy, who was already in Georgia, but wished to return; and Mr. Wesley's salary was to commence from the time of Quincy's departure.*

During Oglethorpe's stay in England, several other emigrants found their way to Georgia. The Indian Chiefs, after an introduction to royalty, and a sight of the most interesting objects in London and its vicinity, returned to their native land, laden with rich presents, accompanied by many more of the Salzburg exiles. A considerable number of hardy Scotchmen also removed, with their families, to this genial soil and climate, where they had every reason to believe that their labour would be rewarded by plenty.

* Historical Notices of the Missions of the Church of England in the North American Colonies, previous to the Independence of the United States. By Ernest Hawkins, B.D. Pp. 92—98.

Oglethorpe himself prepared to return, accompanied by a large number of additional emigrants ; and greater caution was used in the selection of them than was deemed necessary in the first instance ; for some of the men, who had formerly been taken from the streets and jails of London, being unaccustomed to hard labour, were rather a burden than a benefit to the new settlement ; their habits being indolent and litigious. Two ships having been engaged, the "London Merchant" and the "Simmons," and all things being in readiness for the voyage, on the 13th of October, 1735, fifty-six men, women, and children, Salz-burgers, accompanied by Von Reck, who had attended the transport of 1733, and Captain Hermsdorf, went on board the "London Merchant." The charge of their subsistence and journey from Ratisbon and Augsburg to Rotterdam, and from thence to London, was defrayed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, out of the collections which were committed to them for that purpose. These interesting strangers were accompanied by some members of the Moravian Church, who, being persecuted by the Papists in Bohemia, sought an asylum in this new colony, where religious liberty was offered as a common boon. The next day the two Wesleys, the Rev. Benjamin Ingham, who was one of the Oxford Methodists, and Charles Delamotte, the son of a London merchant, who voluntarily offered his services as the friend and assistant of Mr. John Wesley, went by water to Gravesend, for the purpose of taking their places on board the "Simmons ;" where they were joined by Oglethorpe, and by a great number of poor English families, who were sent out at the expense of the Trustees. The two ships soon after sailed for their destination.

This renewed and enlarged expedition of philanthropy was regarded by religious and benevolent people with entire satisfaction ; and the energy, patriotism, and disinterested generosity of Oglethorpe commanded universal admiration. One of the King's sloops was ordered to convey

him across the Atlantic ; but he chose rather to sail with the Missionaries and the poor emigrants. Amidst the general excitement the poets celebrated his deeds of valour and benevolence. Samuel Wesley, who had sung the praises of his friend on the occasion of his interference in behalf of oppressed prisoners, now published, a handsome folio pamphlet, under the title of, "Georgia, a Poem ; Tomo Chichi, an Ode ; and a Copy of Verses on Mr. Oglethorpe's Second Voyage to Georgia." He thus addresses the former settlers :—

" See once again, see on your shores descend
Your generous leader, your unwearied friend !
No storm of chance his vessel thither drives ;
No ! to secure and bless you, he arrives.
To Heaven the praise,—and thanks to him repay,
And let remotest times respect the day.
He comes, whose life, while absent from your view,
Was one continued ministry for you ;
For you he laid out all his pains and art,
Won every will, and soften'd every heart.
With what paternal joy shall he relate
How views the mother Isle your little state ;
How aids the Senate, how the nation loves,
How GEORGE protects, and CAROLINE approves !
A thousand pleasures crowd into his breast ;
But one, one mighty thought absorbs the rest :
And ' Give me, Heaven, to see ' (the patriot cries)
' Another Britain in the desert rise ! ' "

With reference to the same occasion Thomson poured forth the following laudatory strains :—

* Lo ! swarming southward on rejoicing suns,
Gay colonies extend ; the calm retreat
Of undeserved distress, the better home
Of those whom bigots chase from foreign lands.
Nor built on Rapine, Servitude, and Woe,
And in their turn some petty tyrant's prey ;
But, bound by social Freedom, firm they rise :
Such as, of late, an Oglethorpe has form'd,
And, crowding round, the charm'd Savannah sees."*

Even Pope, who was far more inclined to satirize than commend, could not withhold his meed of praise from the founder of Georgia :—

“ Or, driven by strong benevolence of soul,
Will fly, like OGLETHORPE, from pole to pole.”

The labours of the two Wesleys in Georgia, the defectiveness of their religious views at this period, the failure of their mission, their return to England, the manner in which they were more perfectly instructed in the way of the Lord, their subsequent labours and success, are all matters of history, and are generally known ; but, upon all these interesting subjects, further light will be thrown by the two volumes which are now before the reader.

The particulars of Oglethorpe's life which have just been related possess a more than common interest ; inasmuch as they present a striking illustration of the fact, which is confirmed by the entire history of the church, that it pleases Almighty God often to accomplish the most important objects of His wisdom and mercy by means the most simple and unpromising. An insolvent debtor dies in one of the prisons of London, in circumstances which awaken suspicion in the mind of his friend, who obtains a Parliamentary commission to inquire into the state of prisons generally. The inquiry leads to the emancipation of large numbers of poor men, the victims of oppression, with damaged character, who are thrown upon society in a state of destitution and helplessness. A new colony is projected with a special reference to their relief ; and pious foreigners, suffering persecution from Papal governments, are invited to share in the benefit. The two Wesleys, impressed with the supreme importance of spiritual religion, but still “ carnal and sold under sin,” their consciences sorely lacerated by their daily failures, meet with these devout strangers, who teach them the all-important doctrine of present salvation from sin by faith in Christ crucified ; the truth of which becomes to them matter of personal experience. They are thus qualified for the work that is assigned them

in the divine purpose, and are a means of promoting a revival of religion, the benefits of which are at this day felt in all evangelical churches throughout the world. "Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindleth!" "Whoso is wise, and will observe these things, even they shall understand the lovingkindness of the Lord."

This is not the proper place for any extended details respecting Oglethorpe. It will appear, from the Journal of Mr. Charles Wesley, that this great and generous man had the weakness, for a short time, to yield to the influence of some females of doubtful character, and to listen to the tales of parasites, so as to treat his secretary with a harshness which was nearly fatal to his life. But his unworthy treatment of one who was every way entitled to his confidence and affection was of short continuance, and was succeeded by substantial and permanent kindness. Oglethorpe, who was afterwards raised to the rank of a General, having achieved the establishment of the colony, and defended it against a formidable attack which was made upon it by the Spaniards, returned to England, where he lived to a very protracted period, perhaps as much respected as any man of his age. He was intelligent, frank, and gentlemanly in his demeanour, and enjoyed the friendship of statesmen, and of the first literary characters of the times. Dr. Johnson proposed to write his Life, if the General would supply the requisite facts; and Burke said, that "he looked upon him as a more extraordinary person than any he had ever read of; for he had founded the province of Georgia; had absolutely called it into existence; and had lived to see it severed from the empire which created it, and become an independent state."* Oglethorpe was a subscriber to the concerts of the musical sons of Charles Wesley, which were held in their father's house in London; so that he and his former secretary, in all probability, had frequent interviews when they were both very aged men. General Oglethorpe died of fever at his seat at Cranham,

* Mrs. Hannah More's *Life and Letters*, vol. i., p. 204.

June 30th, 1785. The following epitaph is inscribed upon white marble, in the chancel of Cranham church. It was written by Capel Lofft, and is far more copious than such compositions usually are :—

“Near this place lie the remains of James Edward Oglethorpe, Esq., who served under Prince Eugene, and, in 1714, was Captain Lieutenant in the first troop of the Queen’s Guards. In 1740 he was appointed Colonel of a Regiment to be raised in Georgia. In 1745 he was appointed Major-General, and in 1747 Lieutenant-General, and in 1760 General, of His Majesty’s forces. In his civil station he was equally conspicuous. He was chosen Member of Parliament for Haslemere, in Surrey, in 1722, and continued to represent it till 1754. In the Committee of Parliament for inquiring into the state of the jails, formed 25th of February, 1728, and of which he was Chairman, the active and persevering zeal of his benevolence found a truly suitable employment, by visiting, with his colleagues of that generous body, the dark and pestilential dungeons of the prisons which at that time dishonoured the metropolis; detecting the most enormous oppressions, obtaining exemplary punishment on those who had been guilty of such outrage against humanity and justice, and redressing multitudes from extreme misery to light and freedom. Of these, about eleven hundred, rendered, by long confinement for debt, strangers and helpless in the country of their birth, and desirous of seeking an asylum in the wilds of America, were by him conducted thither in 1732. He willingly encountered, in their behalf, a variety of fatigue and danger; and thus became the founder of the colony of Georgia; a colony which afterwards set the noble example of prohibiting the importation of slaves. This new establishment he strenuously and successfully defended against a powerful attack of the Spaniards. In the year in which he quitted England to found this settlement, he nobly strove to secure our true national defence by sea and land,—a free navy, without impressing,—a constitu-

tional militia. But his social affections were more enlarged than even the term patriotism can express: he was the friend of the oppressed Negro; no part of the globe was too remote, no interest too unconnected, or too much opposed to his own, to prevent the immediate succour of suffering humanity. For such qualities he received, from the ever-memorable John Duke of Argyle, a full testimony, in the British Senate, to his military character, his natural generosity, his contempt of danger, and regard for the public. A similar encomium is perpetuated in a foreign language;* and, by one of our most celebrated poets, his remembrance is transmitted to posterity in lines justly expressive of the purity, the ardour, and the extent of his benevolence. He lived till the 1st of July, 1785; a venerable instance of what a duration a life of temperance and virtuous labour is capable of being protracted. His widow, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Nathan Wright, of Cranham Hall, Bart., and only sister of Sir Samuel Wright, of the same place, surviving, with regret, but with due submission to divine Providence, an affectionate husband, after an union of more than forty years, hath inscribed to his memory these faint traces of his excellent character.

‘ Religion watches o’er his urn,
And all the Virtues bending mourn:
Humanity, with languid eye,
Melting for others’ misery;
Prudence, whose hands a measure hold,
And Temperance, with a chain of gold;
Fidelity’s triumphant vest,
And Fortitude, in armour dress’d;
Wisdom’s grey locks, and Freedom, join
The moral train to bless his shrine;
And pensive all, around his ashes holy,
Their last sad honours pay in order melancholy.’ †

* Referring to the eulogium of the Abbé Raynal, in his *Histoire Philosophique et Politique*.

† These verses are said to have been written by an old friend of the General,—the Rev. Moses Browne.

Such was the man who drew the Wesleys from an ascetic and retired state of life, in which they intended to spend their days, into a course of active service for the good of mankind, and whose name is therefore associated with theirs in the imperishable records of the church.

IV.

A FEW brief observations concerning the contents of the ensuing volumes must suffice, considering the unexpected length to which this introduction has been extended.

The Journal of Mr. Charles Wesley, which is placed the first in order, contains an artless but spirited account of his labours and sufferings in Georgia, accompanied by many interesting notices respecting the colony; his return to England, as the bearer of dispatches from the Governor, with a description of some singular characters that came under his observation during the voyage; the manner in which he was led to a practical reception of the doctrine of present salvation from sin by faith in the Lord Jesus. From this time, it will be found that his character was entirely changed. He was no longer the anxious, perplexed, and disappointed inquirer after peace and holiness; wishing to die, because, while he earnestly sought these blessings, he found them not; supposing that a joyous certainty of acceptance with God, and of conformity to His will, is unattainable in this life. Instead of singing, in a tone of pensiveness and despair, as he had formerly done,

“Doubtful and insecure of bliss,
Since Death alone confirms me His,”

he now possessed the inward and abiding witness of his personal adoption, and exclaimed, with holy thankfulness,

“No condemnation now I dread,
Jesus, and all in Him, is mine!
Alive in Him, my living Head,
And clothed in righteousness divine,
Bold I approach the’ eternal throne,
And claim the crown through Christ my own.”

Instead of being "carnal, and sold under sin," he felt that, "to be spiritually minded is life and peace." This great salvation from the guilt, the misery, and the power of sin, the faith by which it is obtained, the penitence by which it is preceded, and the practical holiness which is invariably consequent upon it, formed the chief subjects of his effective ministry, which ended only with his life.

His laborious zeal and his success, as an Itinerant Evangelist, which may be gathered from the subsequent parts of his *Journal*, have seldom been equalled, and perhaps in no instance surpassed, at least since the apostolic times. They place him on a level with his honoured brother, and their common friend Mr. Whitefield. In London, Bristol, Bath, Birmingham, Nottingham, Sheffield, Leeds, Manchester, Newcastle, Wales,—among the miners of Cornwall, Kingswood, Staffordshire, Yorkshire, and the north,—among the Romanists of Dublin, and of the south and west of Ireland,—his labours were abundant, his persecutions and privations severe, and his success was most encouraging. Many of the Wesleyan societies in those places were formed by him at the hazard of his life; and his *Journal*, with that of his brother, will supply ample materials for a history of Methodism, which is greatly needed, and which it is hoped some person of competent abilities and leisure will at no distant period undertake.

There is one subject of painful interest in the *Journal*, upon which it is requisite to offer a remark,—the separation of the two Wesleys from the Moravian Brethren, to whom they were both indebted, under God, for correct views concerning the nature and method of salvation, and therefore for their religious enjoyments. It cannot be denied that some persons of leading influence among the Moravians, then in England, held and propagated grievous errors respecting the ordinances of religion, by means of which not a few persons lost the fervent piety by which they had been distinguished. The abettors of these errors the Wesleys felt it their duty, in all faithfulness, to with-

stand, and to warn their children in the Lord against them. On this subject the testimonies of the brothers are in perfect agreement. It is, however, due to the Moravian body to state, that the men who propagated these errors departed from the recognised creed of the Church to which they belonged ; so that the Church should not be held responsible for their peculiar tenets ; except in this, that the offending parties were silently tolerated, and not subjected to the rebuke and correction which they merited, and which every church is bound to administer in cases of this kind. The doctrine of the Moravian Church, in respect of Christian ordinances, as it is expounded by Spangenberg and La Trobe,* does not appear at all to differ from the doctrine of other Protestant communities ; so that the “stillness” which Molther and some of his associates inculcated, and which consisted in abstinence from prayer, from reading the Scriptures, and from attending the public preaching of the Gospel, was not less opposed to the tenets of their own Church, than it was to the judgment of the Wesleys. The evils which resulted from it were great ; so that strong and decisive measures in opposition to it were indispensable.

The Correspondence of Mr. Charles Wesley, which immediately follows the Journal, consists mostly of letters which were addressed to his wife in Bristol, when he was fulfilling his ministerial duties in London. These artless epistles, which were written without the slightest apprehension that they would ever be published, and which express the undisguised sentiments of his heart, are conceived to be of inestimable value. To a great extent they supply the deficiencies of the Journal ; for they record the writer’s feelings and labours when the Journal was discontinued. They prove that when he had become the head

* An Exposition of Christian Doctrine, as taught in the Protestant Church of the United Brethren. Written in German, by August Gottlieb Spangenberg ; with a Preface, by Benjamin La Trobe. 8vo. 1796.

of a family, and ceased to travel through England and Ireland as he had formerly done, his zeal still burned with an ardent and steady flame ; conversions under his word were numerous ; he freely sacrificed the pleasures of domestic life for considerable periods of time, when the necessities of the people required his absence from home ; the unction of God still rested upon him ; and the effusions of divine influence which came upon him and his congregations, especially when they were engaged in their sacramental services, were powerful, frequent, and refreshing ; so that the people knew not how to separate. The Pastor entered fully into the spirit of devotion, so as to have power with God ; the communicants sympathized with him in his pleading importunity ; and all felt that "the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much." Of these seasons of special visitation and blessing, Mrs. Wesley was often apprized by her absent lord.

These domestic letters bespeak the hand and heart of the husband and of the father, and convey a favourable impression of the writer in both these sacred relations. They manifest his uninterrupted concern for the health and comfort of his wife, and above all for her spiritual welfare. His pious inquiries concerning her religious progress, the encouragements which he suggests to stimulate her faith, his kind and delicate promptings of her to prayer, and especially secret prayer, his tender questionings respecting his infant children, and his suggestions concerning the Christian management of them as their mental faculties expanded, are honourable to him, and contain many lessons of great practical importance to all who sustain the same relations. His wife and children he regarded as a trust committed to him by God ; and he was anxious to resign his trust with acceptance and joy.

His letters also show, in an incidental manner, something of the esteem and affection with which he was regarded by an extensive circle of intelligent Christians, among whom were several of the most eminent Ministers of the age,

especially the evangelical Clergy ; such as Venn of Clapham, Romaine of St. Ann's, Jones of Southwark, and Madan of the Lock chapel, before he had ruined his reputation and usefulness by his speculations on polygamy.

The selections from the author's poetry, which follow next in order, reflect great honour upon his genius. Notwithstanding the sameness of the subjects which they embrace, and the occasions upon which they were written, they present a beautiful variety both of sentiment and expression. They exhibit, with no less distinctness, the tenderness and piety of his personal friendships, and the spirit of the people whose characters were formed under his ministry and that of his fellow-labourers. Happy the men whose preaching was followed by such results ! who saw among their own spiritual children persons who adorned the doctrine of God our Saviour, by their spirit and deportment, in all the relations of social and domestic life, and then passed to the companionship of angels and of glorified saints with the very language of heaven upon their lips.

Some of these poetical compositions were never before printed ; and the rest have been hitherto known by only a very limited number of readers ; most of them having been out of print more than half a century, and others of them for twice that period. They show how the Methodist Christians, who were in religious fellowship with the Wesleys, lived and died a century ago. In the beautiful and expressive lines of the venerable Charles Wesley, these devout people still speak, reminding the members of the living church of their high privilege and calling, and beckoning them to the heaven which is provided for them.

The second series of poetical selections mostly refer to facts which are recorded in the Journal and Correspondence, and therefore serve to illustrate the author's personal history. They express, in his own inimitable manner, the spirit of faith, of patience, and of holy zeal, in which he laboured and suffered as a Christian Evangelist and Pastor,

who was intrusted with the Gospel message, and the care of souls.

The Editor of these volumes cherishes a feeling of lively satisfaction in sending them forth into the world, persuaded as he is of their tendency to promote true spiritual religion; "righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost." They exhibit the power of evangelical truth, and the signs which follow, when it is preached by men of faith and prayer. Why should not conversions be as numerous in the congregations of the present age, as they were in the days of the Wesleys? Gospel truth is the same; the mercy and power of Christ have suffered no diminution; the grace of the Holy Spirit is as omnipotent as it ever was; the ordinances of day and night shall cease sooner than the word of the living God shall fail; the gracious covenant of God still remains in force, so that fervent and believing prayer is as prevalent as it was even in the apostolic times. O for a return of those days when in every religious assembly the power of the Lord was signally present, to wound the consciences of the impenitent, to heal the broken in heart, to comfort and sanctify those who had through grace believed! Let all who are interested in the cause of Christianity remember, that the irrevocable word which secures the future enlargement of the church has passed the lips of Him who cannot lie.

"Faith, mighty faith the promise sees,
And looks to that alone,
Laughs at impossibilities,
And cries, 'IT SHALL BE DONE!'"

THOMAS JACKSON.

RICHMOND,
March 7th, 1849.

CONTENTS.

	Page.
INTRODUCTION	iii

JOURNAL.

PART I.

FROM MARCH 9TH, 1736, WHEN HE ARRIVED IN GEORGIA, TO DECEMBER 2D, 1736, WHEN HE RETURNED TO ENGLAND ...	1
--	---

PART II.

FROM DECEMBER 3D, 1736, WHEN HE LANDED IN ENGLAND, TO MAY 31ST, 1738, WHEN HE RECEIVED THE CHRISTIAN SALVATION	55
--	----

PART III.

FROM JUNE 1ST, 1738, WHEN HE BEGAN TO INCUPLICATE THE DOCTRINE OF PRESENT SALVATION BY FAITH, TO THE END OF THE YEAR	98
--	----

PART IV.

FROM JANUARY 2D, 1739, TO NOVEMBER 6TH, 1739	139
--	-----

PART V.

FROM MARCH 14TH, 1740, TO DECEMBER 31ST, 1740	195
---	-----

PART VI.

FROM APRIL 3D, 1741, TO SEPTEMBER 22D, 1741	265
---	-----

PART VII.

FROM JANUARY 2D, 1743, TO DECEMBER 31ST, 1743	302
---	-----

PART VIII.

	Page.
FROM JANUARY 1ST, 1744, TO DECEMBER 30TH, 1744	344

PART IX.

FROM JANUARY 4TH, 1745, TO DECEMBER 31ST, 1746	392
--	-----

PART X.

FROM JANUARY 1ST, 1747, TO DECEMBER 28TH, 1747	438
--	-----

JOURNAL

OF

THE REV. CHARLES WESLEY, M.A.,

SOMETIME STUDENT OF CHRIST CHURCH, OXFORD.

FROM MARCH 9TH, 1736, TO DECEMBER 28TH, 1747.

THE JOURNAL

OF

THE REV. CHARLES WESLEY, M.A.

PART I.

FROM MARCH 9TH, 1736, WHEN HE ARRIVED IN GEORGIA,
TO DECEMBER 2D, 1736, WHEN HE RETURNED TO ENGLAND.

TUESDAY, March 9th, 1736, about three in the afternoon, I first set foot on St. Simon's island, and immediately my spirit revived. No sooner did I enter upon my ministry, than God gave me, like Saul, another heart. So true is that [remark] of Bishop Hall : "The calling of God never leaves a man unchanged ; neither did God ever employ any one in His service, whom He did not enable to the work He set him ; especially those whom He raises up to the supply of His place, and the representation of Himself." The people, with Mr. Oglethorpe, were all arrived the day before.

The first who saluted me on my landing was honest Mr. Ingham, and that with his usual heartiness. Never did I more rejoice at the sight of him ; especially when he told me the treatment he has met with for vindicating the Lord's day : such as every Minister of Christ must meet with. The people seemed overjoyed to see me : Mr. Oglethorpe in particular received me very kindly.

I spent the afternoon in conference with my parishioners. (With what trembling ought I to call them mine !) At seven we had evening prayers, in the open air, at which Mr. Oglethorpe was present. The lesson gave me the fullest direction, and greatest encouragement : "Continue instant in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving ; withal praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ ; that I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak. Walk in wis-

dom toward them that are without, redeeming the time. Let your speech be alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man." "Say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received of the Lord, that thou fulfil it." (Col. iv. 2-6, 17.) At nine I returned, and lay in the boat.

Wed., March 10th. Between five and six in the morning I read short prayers to a few at the fire, before Mr. Oglethorpe's tent, in a hard shower of rain. Mr. Oglethorpe had set up a tent for the women, near his own. Toward noon I found an opportunity of talking at the tent-door with Mrs. W. I laboured to guard her against the cares of the world, and to give herself to God in the Christian sacrifice; but to no purpose. God was pleased not to add weight to my words; therefore they could make no impression.

After dinner I began talking with M. Germain, about baptizing her child by immersion. She was much averse to it, though she owned it a strong, healthy child. I then spoke to her husband, who was soon satisfied, and brought his wife to be so too.

In the evening I endeavoured to reconcile M. W. to M. H., who, I assured her, bore her no ill-will. She replied, "You must not tell me that. M. H. is a very subtle woman. I understand her perfectly. There is a great man in the case; therefore I cannot speak; only that she is exceeding jealous of me." Company stopped her saying more.

Thur., March 11th. At ten this morning I began the full service, to about a dozen women, whom I had got together; intending to continue it, and only to read a few prayers to the men before they went to work. I also expounded the second lesson with some boldness, as I had a few times before.

After prayers I met M. H.'s maid, in a great passion of tears, at being struck by her mistress. She seemed resolved to make away with herself, to escape her Egyptian bondage. With much difficulty I prevailed upon her to return, and carried her back to her mistress. Upon my asking M. H. to forgive her, she refused me with the utmost roughness, rage, and almost reviling.

Mr. Tackner, whom I talked with next, made me full amends. He was in an excellent temper ; resolved to strive, not with his wife, but himself, in putting off the old man, and putting on the new.

In the evening I heard the first harsh word from Mr. Oglethorpe, when I asked for something for a poor woman. The next day I was surprised by a rougher answer, in a matter that deserved still greater encouragement. I know not how to account for his increasing coldness.

My encouragement was the same in speaking with M. W., whom I found all storm and tempest. The meek, the teachable M. W. (that *was* in the ship) was now so wilful, so untractable, so fierce, that I could not bear to stay near her. I did not mend myself by stumbling again upon Mr. Oglethorpe, who was with the men under arms, in expectation of an enemy. I stayed as long as I could, however,

“ Unsafe within the wind

Of such commotion : ”

but at last the hurricane of his passion drove me away.

Sun., March 14th. We had prayers under a great tree. In the Epistle I was plainly shown what I ought to be, and what to expect. “ Giving no offence in anything, that the ministry be not blamed : but in all things approving ourselves as the Ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings ; by pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned, by the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left, by honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report : as deceivers, and yet true ; as unknown, and yet well known ; as dying, and, behold, we live ; as chastened, and not killed ; as sorrowful, yet always rejoicing ; as poor, yet making many rich ; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.” (2 Cor. vi. 3-10.)

I preached with boldness, on singleness of intention, to about twenty people, among whom was Mr. Oglethorpe. Soon after, as he was in M. H.’s hut, a bullet (through the carelessness of one of the people, who were exercising to-day) flew through the wall, close by him.

M. Germain now retracted her consent for having her child baptized: however, M. Colwell's I did baptize by trine immersion, before a numerous congregation.

At night I found myself exceeding faint, but had no better bed to go to than the ground; on which I slept very comfortably, before a great fire, and waked the next morning perfectly well.

Tues., March 16th. I was wholly spent in writing letters for Mr. Oglethorpe. I would not spend six days more in the same manner for all Georgia.

Wed., March 17th. I found an opportunity to tell M. W. the reason why I had not talked with her lately was, my despair of doing her any good. She acknowledged herself entirely changed, but could never tell me the cause. I immediately guessed it, and mentioned my conjecture. She confessed the truth of it. My soul was filled with pity; and I prayed God the sin of others might not ruin her.

Thur., March 18th. To-day Mr. Oglethorpe set out with the Indians, to hunt the buffalo upon the main, and to see the utmost limits of what they claimed. In the afternoon M. W. discovered to me the whole mystery of iniquity.

I went to my myrtle-walk, where, as I was repeating, "I will thank thee, for thou hast heard me, and art become my salvation," a gun was fired from the other side of the bushes. Providence had that moment turned me from that end of the walk, which the shot flew through; but I heard them pass close by me.

Sun., March 21st. Mr. Oglethorpe had ordered, oftener than once, that no man should shoot on a Sunday. Germain had been committed to the guard-room for it in the morning, but was, upon his submission, released. In the midst of the sermon a gun was fired. Davison, the constable, ran out, and found it was the Doctor; told him it was contrary to orders, and he was obliged to desire him to come to the officer. Upon this the Doctor flew into a great passion, and said, "What, do not you know I am not to be looked upon as a common fellow?" Not knowing what to do, the constable went, and returned, after consulting with Hermsdorf, with two centinels, and brought him to the guard-room. Hereupon M. H. charged and fired a gun; and then ran thither, like a mad woman, crying she had

shot, and would be confined too. The constable and Hermsdorf persuaded her to go away. She cursed and swore in the utmost transport of passion, threatening to kill the first man that should come near her. Alas, my brother! what has become of thy hopeful convert?

In the afternoon, while I was talking in the street with poor Catherine, her mistress came up to us, and fell upon me with the utmost bitterness and scurrility; said she would blow me up, and my brother, whom she once thought honest, but was now undeceived: that I was the cause of her husband's confinement; but she would be revenged, and expose my d—d hypocrisy, my prayers four times a day by beat of drum, and abundance more, which I cannot write, and thought no woman, though taken from Drury-lane, could have spoken. I only said, I pitied her, but defied all she or the devil could do; for she could not hurt me. I was strangely preserved from passion, and at parting told her, I hoped she would soon come to a better mind.

In the evening hour of retirement I resigned myself to God, in my brother's prayer for conformity to a suffering Saviour.

Faint and weary with the day's fatigue, I found my want of true holiness, and begged God to give me comfort from his word. I then read, in the evening lesson, "But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses." (1 Tim. vi. 11, 12.) Before prayers I took a walk with Mr. Ingham, who was surprised I should not think innocence a sufficient protection. I had not indeed acquainted him with what M. W. had told me. At night I was forced to exchange my usual bed, the ground, for a chest, being almost speechless through a violent cold.

Tues., March 23d. In reading Hebrews xi., I felt my faith revive; and I was confident God would either turn aside the trial, or strengthen me to bear it. In the afternoon Mr. Davison informed me, the Doctor had sent his wife word to arm herself from the case of instruments, and forcibly make her escape; to speak to Mr. Oglethorpe

first, and even to stab any that should oppose her. M. Perkins told me, she had heard M. H. say, "Mr. Oglethorpe dares not punish me." I was encouraged by the lesson : "God hath not given us the spirit of fear ; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner : but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the power of God." "Whereunto I am appointed a Preacher. For the which cause I also suffer these things : nevertheless I am not ashamed : for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day." (2 Tim. i. 7, 8, 11, 12.)

Wed., March 24th. I was enabled to pray earnestly for my enemies, particularly Mr. Oglethorpe, whom I now looked upon as the chief of them. Then I gave myself up entirely to God's disposal, desiring I might not now want power to pray, when I most of all needed it. Mr. Ingham then came, and read the thirty-seventh psalm : a glorious exhortation to patience, and confidence in God, from the different estate of the good and wicked. After breakfast I again betook myself to intercession, particularly for M. W., that Satan, in the shape of that other bad woman, might not stand at her right hand. Doubting whether I should not interpose for the prisoners, I consulted the oracle, and met Jer. xlv. 16, 17 : "As for the word which thou hast spoken to us in the name of the Lord, we will not hearken unto it : but we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth." This determined me not to meddle with them at all.

At eleven I met M. Perkins, who told me of the infamy M. H. has brought on Mr. Oglethorpe, and the utter discouragement it will be to the people, if she is supported. Farther she informed me that M. W. begins to repent of having engaged so far with her, confessing she has done it through cowardice, as thinking Mr. Oglethorpe will bear her out against all the world.

Soon after I talked with M. W., and with the last degree of astonishment heard her accuse herself. Horror of horrors ! Never did I feel such excess of pity. I gave myself up to prayer for her. Mr. Ingham soon joined me.

All the prayers expressed a full confidence in God : when notice was given us of Mr. Oglethorpe's landing. M. H., Mr. Ingham, and myself were sent for. We found him in his tent, with the people round it ; Mr. and M. H. within. After a short hearing, the officers were reprimanded, and the prisoners dismissed. At going out M. H. modestly told me, she had something more to say against me, but would take another time. I only answered, " You know, Madam, it is impossible for *me* to fear *you*." When they were gone, Mr. Oglethorpe said he was convinced, and glad I had had no hand in all this. I told him I had something to impart, of the last importance, when he was at leisure. He took no notice, but read his letters ; and I walked away with Mr. Ingham, who was utterly astonished. The issue is just what I expected.

I was struck with those words in the evening lesson : " Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus." " Endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ." " Remember that Jesus Christ was raised from the dead according to my Gospel : wherein I suffer trouble, as an evil-doer, even unto bonds ; but the word of God is not bound. Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory. It is a faithful saying : For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him : if we suffer, we shall also reign with him." (2 Tim. ii. 1, 3, 8-12.) After reading I could not forbear adding, " I need say nothing. God will shortly apply this."

Glory be to God for my confidence hitherto ! O what am I if left to myself ? but I can do and suffer all things through Christ strengthening me.

Thur., March 25th. At five I heard the second drum beat for prayers, which I had desired Mr. Ingham to read, being much weakened by my fever. But considering I ought to appear at this time especially, I rose and heard those animating words : " If any man serve me, let him follow me ; and where I am, there shall also my servant be. if any man serve me, him will my Father honour. Now is my soul troubled ; and what shall I say ? Father, save me from this hour : but for this cause came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name." (John xii. 26-28.)

At half-hour past seven Mr. Oglethorpe called me out of my hut. I looked up to God, and went. He charged me with mutiny and sedition ; with stirring up the people to desert the colony. Accordingly he said they had had a meeting last night, and sent a message to him this morning, desiring leave to go ; that their speaker had informed against them, and me the spring of all ; that the men were such as constantly came to prayers, therefore I must have instigated them ; that he should not scruple shooting half-a-dozen of them at once ; but that he had, out of kindness, *first* spoke to me. My answer was, "I desire, Sir, you would have no regard to my brothers, my friends, or the love you had for me, if anything of this is made out against me. I know nothing of their meeting or designs. Of those you have mentioned, not one comes constantly to prayers, or sacrament. I never incited any one to leave the colony. I desire to answer my accuser face to face." He told me, my accuser was Mr. Lawley, whom he would bring, if I would wait here. I added, "Mr. Lawley is a man who has declared he knows no reason for keeping fair with any man, but a design to get all he can by him : but there was nothing to be got by the poor Parsons." I asked whether he himself was not assured that there were enough men in Frederica, to say or swear anything against any man that should be in disgrace : whether, if he himself was removed, or succeeded ill, the whole stream of the people would not be turned against him ; and even this Lawley, who was of all others the most violent in condemning the prisoners, and justifying the officers. I observed, this was the old cry, "Away with the Christians to the lions ;" mentioned H. and his wife's scandalizing my brother and me, and vowing revenge against us both, threatening me yesterday even in his presence. I asked what redress or satisfaction was due to my character ; what good I could do in my present parish, if cut off by their calumnies from ever seeing one half of it. I ended with assuring him, I had and should still make it my business to promote peace among all. I felt no disturbance while speaking, but lifted up my heart to God, and found him present with me. While Mr. Oglethorpe was fetching Lawley, I thought of our Lord's words, "Ye shall be brought before Governors and Kings for my

sake. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak : for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak ;" (Matt. x. 18, 19 ;) and applied to Him for help, and words to make my defence.

Before Mr. Oglethorpe returned I called in upon Mr. Ingham, and desired him to pray for me : then walked, and, musing on the event, opened the book on Acts xv. 31—33 : " Which when they had read, they rejoiced for the consolation ; and.....exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them. And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace." Mr. Ingham coming, I related all that had passed. On sight of Mr. Oglethorpe and Lawley, he retired.

Mr. Oglethorpe observed, the place was too public. I offered to carry him to my usual walk in the woods. On our way God put it into my heart to say, " Show only the least disinclination to find me guilty, and you shall see what a turn it will give to the accusation." He took the hint, and instead of calling upon Lawley to make good his charge, began with the quarrel in general ; but did not show himself angry with me, or desirous to find me to blame. Lawley, who appeared full of guilt and fear, upon this dropped his accusation, or shrunk it into my " forcing the people to prayers." I replied, that the people themselves would acquit me of that ; and as to the officers' quarrel, I appealed to the officers for the truth of my assertion, that I had had no hand at all in it ; professed my desire and resolution of promoting peace and obedience : and as to the people, I was persuaded their desire of leaving the colony arose from mistake, not malice. Here Mr. Oglethorpe spoke of reconciling matters ; bade Lawley tell the petitioners, he would not so much as ask who they were, if they were but quiet for the future. " I hope," added he, " they will be so ; and Mr. Wesley here hopes so too." " Yes, Sir," says Lawley, " I really believe it of Mr. Wesley, and had always a very great respect for him." I turned, and said to Mr. Oglethorpe, " Did not I tell you it would be so?" He replied to Lawley, " Yes ; you had always a very great respect for Mr. Wesley. You told me he was a stirrer up of sedition, and at the bottom of all this disturbance." With this gentle reproof he dismissed him ; and I

thanked him for having first spoken to me of what I was accused of, begging he would always do so. This he promised, and then I walked with him to M. H.'s door. She came out aghast to see me with him. He there left me, "and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion."

I went to my hut, where I found Mr. Ingham. He told me this was but the beginning of sorrows. "Not as I will, but as Thou wilt." About noon, in the midst of a violent storm of thunder and lightning, I read the eighteenth Psalm, and found it gloriously suited to my circumstances. I never felt the Scriptures as now. Now I need them, I find them all written for my instruction and comfort. At the same time I feel great joy in the expectation of our Saviour thus coming to judgment, when the secrets of all hearts shall be revealed, and God shall make my innocency as clear as the light, and my just dealing as the noon-day.

At three I walked with Mr. Ingham, and read him the history of this amazing day. We rejoiced together in the protection of God, and through comfort of the Scriptures.

The evening lesson was full of encouragement. "This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be—*false accusers*, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high-minded, —*but they shall proceed no further*: for their folly shall be made manifest unto all men. But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life,—what persecutions I endured; but out of them all the Lord delivered me. Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution. But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived. All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness." (2 Tim. iii. 1—4, 9—13, 16.) Blessed be God, I begin to find it so!

Meeting with Mr. Hird, I persuaded him to use all his interest with the people, to lay aside all thoughts of leaving the colony. He told me he had assured Mr. Ogleshorpe that this was always my language toward him and the rest; but was answered short, with, "You must not tell me that; I know better."

After spending an hour at the camp, in singing such

Psalms as suited the occasion, I went to bed in the hut, which was thoroughly wet with the day's rain.

Fri., March 26th. "My soul is always in my hand ; therefore will I not forget thy law." This morning, early, Mr. Oglethorpe called me out to tell me of Mrs. Lawley's miscarriage, by being denied access to the Doctor for bleeding. He seemed very angry, and to charge me with it ; saying he should be the tyrant if he passed by such intolerable injuries. I answered, I knew nothing of the matter, and it was hard it should be imputed to me ; that from the first Hermsdorf told the Doctor he might visit whom of his patients he pleased ; but the Doctor would not. I denied my having the least hand in the whole business, as Hermsdorf himself had declared. He said, "Hermsdorf himself assured me, what he did, he did by your advice." I answered, "You must mistake his imperfect English ; for many have heard him say the contradiction of this. Yet I must be charged with all the mischief." "How else can it be," said he, "that there should be no love, no meekness, no true religion among the people ? but instead of that, mere formal prayers." "As to that, I can answer for them, that they have no more of the form of godliness than the power. I have seldom above six at the public service." "But what would an unbeliever say to your raising these disorders?" "Why, if I had raised them, he might say there was nothing in religion ; but what would that signify to those who had experienced it ? They would not say so." He told me the people were full of dread and confusion ; that it was much easier to govern a thousand than sixty men ; for in so small a number, every one's passion was considerable ; that he durst not leave them before they were settled, &c. I asked him, "Would you have me forbear conferring at all with my parishioners?" To this I could get no answer, and went on : "The reason why I did not interpose for or against the Doctor was his having, at the beginning, charged me with his confinement. I talked less with my parishioners these five days past, than I had done in any one afternoon before. I shunned appearing in public, lest my advice should be asked, or lest, if I heard others talking, my very silence should be deciphered into advice. But one argument of my

innocence I can give, which will even convince you of it. I know my life is in your hands : and you know, that was you to frown upon me, and give the least intimation that it would be agreeable to you, the generality of these wretched people would say or swear anything." To this he agreed, and owned the case was so with them all. "You see that my safety depends on your single opinion of me. Must I not therefore be mad, if I would in such a situation provoke you by disturbing the public peace? Innocence, I know, is not the least protection ; but my sure trust is in God." Here company interrupted us, and I left him.

I was no longer careful of the event, after reading those words in the morning lesson : "Thou canst not follow me now ; but thou shalt follow me afterwards." (John xiii. 36.) Amen. When Thou pleasest. Thy time is best.

Mr. Oglethorpe, meeting me in the evening, asked when I had prayers. I said, I waited his pleasure. While the people came slowly, "You see, Sir," said I, "they do not lay too great a stress on forms." "The reason of that is, because others idolize them." "I believe few stay away for that reason." "I don't know that." Mr. Oglethorpe stood over against me, and joined audibly in the prayers. The chapter was designed for me, and I read it with great boldness, as follows :—"I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom ; preach the word ; be instant in season, out of season ; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine." "But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an Evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry." "At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me." "Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me.....that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear : and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom : to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen." (2 Tim. iv. 1—3, 5, 16—18.)

Sat., March 27th. This morning we began our Lord's last discourses to his disciples : every word was providen-

tially directed to my comfort, but particularly those : " Let not your heart be troubled : ye believe in God, believe also in me." " I will not leave you comfortless : I will come to you." " Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid." (John xiv. 1, 18, 27.)

I was sensibly concerned this afternoon at hearing that M. W. is growing more and more like M. H., declares she will be no longer priest-ridden, jests upon prayers, and talks in the loose, scandalous dialect of her friend. In the evening a thought came into my mind of sending Mr. Ingham for my brother. He was much averse to leaving me in my trials, but was at last persuaded to go.

Sun., March 28th. I went to the storehouse (our tabernacle at present) to hearken what the Lord God would say concerning me. Both myself and the congregation were struck with the first lesson : Joseph and Potiphar's wife. The second was still more animating : " If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own." (John xv. 18, 19.) After the prayers poor Mr. Davison stayed behind, to take his leave of Mr. Ingham. He burst into tears, and said, " One good man is leaving us already. I foresee nothing but desolation. Must my poor children be brought up like these savages?" We endeavoured to comfort him by showing him his calling. At ten Mr. Ingham preached an alarming sermon on the day of judgment, and joined with me in offering up the Christian sacrifice.

In my walk at noon I was full of heaviness ; complained to God that I had no friend but Him ; and even in Him could now find no comfort. Immediately I received power to pray ; then, opening my Bible, read as follows :— " Harken unto me, ye that seek the Lord : look unto the rock whence ye are hewn." " Fear ye not the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their revilings." " Who art thou, that thou shouldest be afraid of a man that shall die ;and hast feared continually every day because of the fury of the oppressor? and where is the fury of the oppressor?" (Isai. li. 1, 2, 12, 13.) After reading this, no wonder that I found myself renewed in confidence.

While Mr. Ingham waited for the boat, I took a turn

with Mr. Horton. He fully convinced me of M. H.'s true character; ungrateful in the highest degree, a common prostitute, a complete hypocrite. He told me, her husband and she had begged him upon their knees to intercede with Mr. Oglethorpe, not to turn them out of the ship, which would be their utter ruin. This he accordingly did; though Mr. Oglethorpe at first assured him he had rather give one hundred pounds than take them. The first person she fell upon, after this, was Mr. Horton himself, whom she abused, as she has since done me. From him I hastened to the water-side, where I found Mr. Ingham just put off. O happy, happy friend! *Abiit, erupit, evasit!* But woe is me, that I am still constrained to dwell with Meshech! I languished to bear him company, followed him with my eyes till out of sight, and then sunk into deeper dejection than I had known before.

Mon., March 29th. I was revived by those words of our Lord: "These things have I spoken unto you, that you should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me." "In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world." (John xvi. 1—3, 33.)

Knowing I was to live with Mr. Oglethorpe, I had brought nothing with me from England, except my clothes and books; but this morning, asking a servant for something I wanted, (I think a tea-kettle,) I was told Mr. Oglethorpe had given orders that no one should use any of his things. I answered, that order, I supposed, did not extend to me. "Yes, Sir," says she, "you was excepted by name." Thanks be to God, that it is not yet made capital to give me a morsel of bread.

Tues., March 30th. Having laid hitherto on the ground, in a corner of Mr. Reed's hut, and hearing some boards were to be disposed of, I attempted in vain to get some of them to lie upon. They were given to all besides. The Minister only of Frederica must be *αφρητωρ, αθεμιστος, ανεστιος*. Yet are we not hereunto called, *ασταγειν, κακοπαθειν*. Even the Son of man had not where to lay his head!

I find the Scripture an inexhaustible fund of comfort. "Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot save? or have I no power to deliver? I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair. I hid not my face from shame and spitting. For the Lord God will help me, therefore shall I not be confounded. Therefore have I set my face like a flint; and I know that I shall not be ashamed. He is near that justifieth me; who will contend with me? Let us stand together. Who is mine adversary? let him come near to me. Behold, the Lord God will help me: who is he that shall condemn me?"

Wed., March 31st. I begin now to be abused and slighted into an opinion of my own considerableness. I could not be more trampled upon, was I a fallen Minister of state. The people have found out that I am in disgrace, and all the cry is,

*Curramus præcipites, et
Dum jacet in ripâ calcemus Casaris hostem.*

My few well-wishers are afraid to speak to me. Some have turned out of the way to avoid me. Others desired I would not take it ill, if they seemed not to know me when we should meet. The servant that used to wash my linen sent it back unwashed. It was great cause of triumph my being forbid the use of Mr. Oglethorpe's things, and in effect debarred of most of the conveniences, if not necessities, of life. I sometimes pitied, and sometimes diverted myself with, the odd expressions of their contempt; but found the benefit of having undergone a much lower degree of obloquy at Oxford.

Thur., April 1st. In the midst of morning service a poor scoutboat-man was brought in, who was almost killed by the burst of a cannon. I found him senseless and dying. All I could do was to pray for him, and try by his example to wake his two companions. He languished till the next day, and died.

Hitherto I have been borne up by a spirit not my own; but exhausted nature at last prevails. It is amazing she held out so long. My outward hardships and inward conflicts, the bitterness of reproach from the only man I wished to please,

"At last have borne my boasted courage down."

Accordingly, this afternoon, I was forced by a friendly fever to take my bed. My sickness, I knew, could not be of long continuance; but, as I was in want of every help and convenience, must either shortly leave me, or release me from farther suffering.

In the evening Mrs. Hird and Mrs. Robinson called to see me, and offered me all the assistance in their power. I thanked them, but desired they would not prejudice themselves by taking this notice of me. At that instant we were alarmed with a cry of the Spaniards being come; heard many guns fired, and saw the people fly in great consternation to the Fort. I felt not the least disturbance or surprise; bade the women not fear, for God was with us. Within a few minutes news was brought us that the alarm was only a contrivance of Mr. Oglethorpe, to try the people. My charitable visitants then left me, and soon returned with some gruel, which threw me into a sweat. The next morning, April 2d, they ventured to call again. At night, when my fever was somewhat abated, I was led out to bury the scoutboat-man, and envied him his quiet grave.

Sat., April 3d. Nature I found endeavoured to throw off the disease by excessive sweats: I therefore drank whatever my women brought me.

Sun., April 4th. Many of the people had been ill of the bloody flux. I escaped hitherto by my vegetable diet; but now my fever brought it. Notwithstanding this, I was obliged to go abroad, and preach, and administer the sacrament. My sermon on, "Keep innocency, and take heed to the thing that is right, for this shall bring a man peace at the last," was deciphered into a satire against M. H. At night I got an old bedstead to lie on, being that on which the scoutboat-man had died.

Mon., April 5th. At one this morning the sandflies forced me to rise, and smoke them out of the hut. The whole town was employed in the same manner. My congregation in the evening consisted of two Presbyterians and a Papist. I went home in great pain, my distemper being much increased with the little duty I could discharge.

Tues., April 6th. I found myself so faint and weak, that

it was with the utmost difficulty I got through the prayers. Mr. Davison, my good Samaritan, would often call, or send his wife to tend me : and to their care, under God, I owe my life.

To-day Mr. Oglethorpe gave away my bedstead from under me, and refused to spare one of the carpenters to mend me up another.

Fri., April 9th. While talking to Mrs. Hird, I turned my eyes towards the huts, and saw Mr. Lassel's all in a blaze. I walked towards the fire, which, before I could come up to it, had consumed the hut, and everything in it. It was a corner-hut, and the wind providentially blew from the others, or they would have been all destroyed.

Sat., April 10th. Mr. Reed waked me with news of Mr. Delamotte and my brother being on their way to Frederica. I found the encouragement I sought in the Scriptures for the day, Psalm liii. : "Why boastest thou thyself in mischief, O mighty man? the goodness of God endureth continually. Thy tongue deviseth mischiefs; like a sharp razor, working deceitfully. Thou lovest evil more than good; and lying than to speak righteousness." At six Mr. Delamotte and my brother landed, when my strength was so exhausted I could not have read prayers once more. He helped me into the woods; for there was no talking among a people of spies and ruffians; nor even in the woods, unless in an unknown tongue. He told me the scripture he met with at landing was, "If God be for us, who can be against us?" and that Mr. Oglethorpe received him with abundant kindness. I began my account of all that has passed, and continued it till prayers. It were endless to mention all the scriptures which have been for so many days adapted to my circumstances; but I cannot pass by the evening lesson, Heb. xi. I was ashamed of having well-nigh sunk under mine, when I beheld the conflicts of those triumphant sufferers, of whom the world was not worthy.

Sun., April 11th. What words could more support our confidence, than the following, out of the Psalms for the day?—"Be merciful unto me, O God, for man goeth about to devour me. He is daily fighting, and troubling me. Mine enemies are daily in hand to swallow me up; for

they be many that fight against me, O thou Most Highest. Nevertheless, though I am sometimes afraid, yet put I my trust in thee. I will put my trust in God, and will not fear what man can do unto me. They daily mistake my words: all that they imagine is to do me evil." (Psalm lvi. 1-5.) The next Psalm was equally animating:—"Be merciful unto me, O God; for my soul trusteth in thee: and under the shadow of thy wings shall be my refuge, until this tyranny be overpast. I will call upon the most high God; even unto the God that shall perform the cause which I have in hand. He shall send down from heaven, and save me from the reproof of him that would eat me up. God shall send forth his mercy and truth; my soul is among lions. And I lie even among the children of men, that are set on fire: whose teeth are spears and arrows, and their tongue a sharp sword. Set up thyself, O God, above the heavens; and thy glory above all the earth." (Psalm lvii. 1-6.)

I had just recovered strength enough to consecrate at the sacrament: the rest my brother discharged. We then got out of the reach of informers, and proceeded in my account; being fully persuaded of the truth of M. W.'s information against Mr. Oglethorpe, M. H., and herself.

Next morning Mr. Oglethorpe met and carried us to breakfast at the modest M. H.'s. At noon my brother repeated to me his last conference with M. W., in confirmation of all she had ever told me.

At night I took leave of Mr. Horton, Mr. Hermsdorf, and Major Richards, who were going, with thirty men, to build a fort over against the Spanish look-out, twelve leagues from Augustine.

Wed., April 14th. By a relation which my brother gave me of a late conference he had with her, I was, in spite of all I had seen and heard, half persuaded into a good opinion of M. H. For the lasting honour of our sagacity be it written!

Fri., April 16th. My brother brought me off a resolution which honour and indignation had formed, of starving rather than ask for necessaries. Accordingly I went to Mr. Oglethorpe, in his tent, to ask for some little things I wanted. He sent for me back again, and said, "Pray, Sir,

sit down. I have something to say to you. I hear you have spread several reports about.” *

The next day my brother and Mr. Delamotte set out in an open boat for Savannah. I preached in the afternoon on, “He that now goeth on his way weeping, and beareth forth good seed, shall doubtless come again with joy, and bring his sheaves with him.”

Easter-eve, April 24th. At ten I was sent for by Mr. Oglethorpe. He began, “Mr. Wesley, you know what has passed between us. I took some pains to satisfy your brother about the reports concerning me, but in vain. He here renews his suspicions in writing. I did desire to convince him, because I had an esteem for him ; and he is just so considerable to me as my esteem makes him. I could clear up all, but it matters not. You will soon see the reason of my actions.

“I am now going to death. You will see me no more. Take this ring, and carry it from me to Mr. V.† If there is a friend to be depended upon, he is one. His interest is next to Sir Robert’s. Whatever you ask, within his power, he will do for you, your brother, and your family. I have expected death for some days. These letters show that the Spaniards have long been seducing our allies, and intend to cut us off at a blow. I fall by my friends ;—Gascoin, whom I have made ; the Carolina people, whom I depended upon to send their promised succours. But death is to me nothing. T. will pursue all my designs ; and to him I recommend them and you.”

He then gave me a diamond ring : I took it, and said, “If, as I believe,

Postremum fatus, quod te alloquor, hoc est,

hear what you will quickly know to be true, as soon as you are entered upon the separate state. This ring I shall never make any use of for myself. I have no worldly hopes. I have renounced the world. Life is bitterness to me. I came hither to lay it down.

* Several paragraphs following are written in a private character.—EDIT.

† Most probably Mr. Vernon, one of the Trustees of the colony.—EDIT.

"You have been deceived, as well as I. I protest my innocence of the crimes I am charged with; and take myself to be now at liberty to tell you what I thought never to have uttered."*

When I had finished this relation he seemed entirely changed, full of his old love and confidence in me. After some expressions of kindness, I asked him, "Are you satisfied?" He replied, "Yes, entirely." "Why then, Sir, I desire nothing more upon earth; and care not how soon I follow you." He added, he much desired the conversion of the Heathen, and believed my brother intended for it. "But I believe," said I, "it will never be under your patronage; for then men would account for it without taking in God." He replied, "I believe so too:" then embraced and kissed me with the most cordial affection. I attended him to the scout-boat, where he waited some minutes for his sword. They brought him first, and a second time, a mourning sword. At last they gave him his own, which had been his father's. "With this sword," says he, "I was never yet unsuccessful." "I hope, Sir," said I, "you carry with you a better, even the sword of the Lord, and of Gideon." "I hope so too," he added.

When the boat put off, I ran before into the woods, to see my last of him. Seeing me and two others running after him, he stopped the boat, and asked whether we wanted anything. Captain Mackintosh, left Commander, desired his last orders. I then said, "God be with you. Go forth, *Christo duce, et auspice Christo!*" "You have," says he, "I think, some verses of mine. You there see my thoughts of success." His last word to the people was, "God bless you all!" The boat then carried him out of sight. I interceded for him, that God would save him from death, would wash out all his sins, and prepare, before he too, the sacrifice to himself.

Easter-day, April 25th. The people were alarmed at night, by the sight of two great fires, on either side of the town, not knowing if they were made by friends or enemies. Next morning news was brought of a boat coming up. Every one seemed under a consternation, though no one but myself was fully apprized of our dangers. At

* Here follow in the manuscript some lines in cipher.—EDIT.

night the watch was doubled by Captain Mackintosh. The people being unwilling to comply with his orders, I was forced to tell Mr. Hird, the constable, that there might be danger which Mackintosh alone knew of, and therefore they ought to obey. He promised it for himself and the rest. Though I expected every hour that the Spaniards would bring us the news of Mr. Oglethorpe's death, yet I was insensible of fear, and careless of the consequence. But my indifference arose from stupidity rather than faith. There was nothing I cared for in life, and therefore the loss of it appeared a trifle.

Thur., April 29th. About half-hour past eight I went down to the bluff, to see a boat coming up. At nine it arrived with Mr. Oglethorpe. I blessed God for still holding his soul in life. In the evening we took a walk together, and he informed me more particularly of our past danger. Three great ships, and four smaller, had been seen for three weeks together at the mouth of the river ; but the wind continuing full against them, [they] were kept from making a descent, till they could stay no longer. I gave him back his ring, and said, "I need not, Sir, and indeed I cannot, tell you how joyfully and thankfully I return this." "When I gave it you," said he, "I never expected to receive it again, but thought it would be of service to your brother and you. I had many omens of my death, particularly their bringing me my mourning sword ; but God has been pleased to preserve a life which was never valuable to me ; and yet, in the continuance of it, I thank God, I can rejoice." "I am now glad of all that has happened here, since without it I could never have had such a proof of your affection as that you gave me, when you looked upon me as the most ungrateful of villains." While I was speaking this, he appeared full of tenderness ; and passed on to observe the strangeness of his deliverance, when betrayed on all sides, without human support, and utterly defenceless. He condemned himself for his anger, (God forgive those who made me the object of it !) which he imputed to his want of time for consideration. "I longed, Sir, to see you once more, that I might tell you some things before we finally parted : but then I considered that if you died, you would know them all in a moment." "I know not whether separate spirits regard our

little concerns. If they do, it is as men regard the follies of their childhood, or as I my late passionateness."

Fri., April 30th. I had some farther talk with him in bed. He ordered me whatever he could think I wanted ; promised to have me an house built immediately ; and was just the same to me he had formerly been.

Sun., May 2d. I went to him to ask if there was any truth in the report, that Major Richards and Mr. Horton were detained at Augustine, and the men at St. George's run away. He told me, he hoped that the gentlemen were well received ; but the people had been frightened away by two soldiers bringing a civil proffer of refreshment ; that thereupon the men mutinied, and obliged Captain Hermsdorf to quit the advanced post, and turn homeward, which he had done pursuant to Ferguson's advice ; that he intended immediately to go in quest of them. In an hour's time he set out accordingly.

In the evening I endeavoured to convince Mr. Moore (as I had done some few besides) of Mr. Oglethorpe's innocence. He then read me a list of the officers that were to be : and who should be appointed head-bailiff, but my dear friend the Doctor ?

Mon., May 3d. The people had observed that I was taken into favour again, which I found by their provoking civilities.

Wed., May 5th. At night news was brought of a boat being seen off the point, which would not come to, though the soldiers had fired at her several times. The people were greatly alarmed, being in no preparation for an enemy. I went to bed, but was soon awakened by the firing of a gun ; and, rising, found all the town flocking towards the fort, in the utmost consternation. I walked leisurely after them, without fear, yet without faith ; found the uproar was occasioned by a friendly Indian ; and walked back again.

Sat., May 8th. I had some affecting talk with a poor man, belonging to the scout-boat, who had broke his arm. He owned himself greatly moved by the Christian Monitor I had given him ; convinced thereby of the truth of religion ; unable to read for tears ; and fully resolved to obey the motions of the Holy Spirit, by leading a new life.

Between ten and eleven I was waked again by an alarm. I rose, as did all the women, and found a signal had been made from the man-of-war. I sent away the women, and, being myself of equal service, soon followed their example, and went to sleep again.

Sun., May 9th. Notice was given me that Mr. D., Chaplain to the Independent Company, was landed, and walking toward me. His moral character did not recommend him. I had just time to run away into the woods, and so escaped his visit. The next morning Mr. Oglethorpe returned, from whom I had the following account of his expedition.

On Saturday, May 1st, late at night, arrived the "Caroline" scout-boat, with Captain Ferguson, bringing advice that Major Richards and Mr. Horton (who had carried answers to the Spanish Governor's letters) had landed at their look-out, and he believed were made prisoners by the Spaniards; for they had heard no more of them, except by a blind letter, written with a pencil; that the boats, in which were the men under Captain Hermsdorf, were come about thirty miles on this side St. George's Point, and there waited for orders; that the men were mutinous, and Hermsdorf believed he should be forced to retire to Fort St. Andrews; that he was apprehensive they would either murder their officers, and turn pirates, or be cut off by the Spaniards. Mr. Oglethorpe, on Sunday, went on board the man-of-war, and proceeded from thence with the man-of-war's boat, commanded by the Lieutenant, and the Georgia scout-boat. They arrived that night at Fort St. Andrews. On Monday they came up with the south point of Cumberland, where we met with the boats under the command of Captain Hermsdorf. Mr. Oglethorpe immediately took them out to sea with him, round Amelia Island. He found, upon examination, that the men did not intend to mutiny; but that the suspicion was occasioned by the lies of one man, who was hereupon sentenced by Mr. Oglethorpe to run the gauntlet.

He went to Point St. George, within sight of the Spanish look-out, and re-settled them on the same place where Mr. Hermsdorf had before taken up his quarters. It had been agreed that the Spaniards should make a signal; and from thence he would repair with his boats, to fetch Major Rich-

ards back, who was gone to Augustine, at the request of the Governor, who promised to send horses to conduct him, but did not. It likewise was agreed that the boats should patrol up and down the rivers, to prevent the Indians, our allies, passing over to molest the Spaniards; as they should prevent their Indians passing over to molest us.

Mr. Oglethorpe went that afternoon to the Spanish lookout, with a flag of truce; but not being able to perceive any one, leaving the boat at her grappling, he leaped ashore himself, to see if he could discover anybody there; and going along the beach, at distance from the sandy hillocks, to prevent surprise, he surrounded the hillocks, where he found two horses hobbled. He went forward to a palmetto hut; but could find no man. After this he sent the flag of truce into a great savannah, to see if that would draw down any people to a conference. Upon this W. Frazer, a Scotch lad, going into the neighbouring woods, and finding a Spaniard, brought him to Mr. Oglethorpe, to whom he delivered two letters; one from Major Richards, the other from Mr. Horton, directed to Mr. Hermsdorf, acquainting him that he should be back with him in two days' time. Mr. Oglethorpe gave the man a bottle of wine, victuals, and tobacco, and a moidore for his trouble in bringing the letters; and inquired where Major Richards and Mr. Horton were. The man said he knew nothing concerning them; that he was an horseman, and sent by the Colonel of the cavalry from the head-quarters, which were about twelve leagues off, with these letters, to wait there till he should see an English boat appear, and deliver it to them; that he had lain four days on the beach, and had not discovered a boat in that time. Mr. Oglethorpe delivered to him letters for the Governor of Augustine; and between ten and eleven on Thursday morning set out with the man-of-war's boat, and Georgia scout-boat, to meet the man again, according to appointment.

He discovered a guard-coast full of men, that lay behind the sand-bank, beyond the breakers, on the English side of the water; and soon after he discovered several men hid in the woods, next to some sand-hills. Two horsemen showed themselves, and beckoned to the boats, which had a flag of truce flying, to come down to a point, beyond

which the guard-coast lay concealed : on which Mr. Oglethorpe rowed with the two boats toward the guard-coast, that he might not leave her behind to intercept us and our people at St. George's Point.

There seemed to be about seventy men on board her, and there were in our boats twenty-four. She lay still for some time ; but when they found plainly that they were discovered, they rowed away with incredible swiftness, directly out to sea, toward Augustine.

Mr. Oglethorpe returned to the horsemen, who seemed very unwilling to approach the boats ; but at last agreed to receive a letter, if Mr. Oglethorpe would send an unarmed man ashore. One of them, seemingly an officer, forbade the boats to land on the King of Spain's ground. Mr. Oglethorpe answered, that as it was the King of Spain's ground, the English would forbear landing on it, since the Spaniards requested it ; but that the Spaniards should be very welcome to land on the King of England's ground, which was on the opposite side of the river, and should be welcome to a glass of wine with him there. He asked him for the news of Mr. Horton and Mr. Richards, and whether he could not send anything to them. The man said he knew nothing of them ; that he received his orders from the Colonel of horse, who was quartered at twelve leagues' distance ; and that he could carry no news but to him. Upon this Mr. Moore, Lieutenant of the "Hawke" man-of-war, wrote a letter to the Colonel of the horse, acquainting him that he was come thither with boats, to conduct back the gentlemen who were sent by Mr. Oglethorpe to treat with the Governor of Augustine ; and that, if at any time he would make three fires on the Spanish main, he would take it as a signal that the gentlemen were come, and would come over with a boat and fetch them. The Spanish officer promised to deliver the letter by night to the Colonel of horse. Mr. Oglethorpe stayed till Saturday night, expecting an answer, and sent over to the Spanish side every day ; but could find nobody to have conference with. By the look-out within-land they have a vineyard, flocks of turkeys, cattle, and horses ; but great care was taken that none of our people should touch any of them. On Saturday night Mr. Oglethorpe set out, leaving Captain

Hernsdorf with an armed periague, the Georgia scout-boat, and another boat.

Tues., May 11th. I had now so far recovered my strength, that I could again expound the lesson. In the lesson next morning was Elisha encompassed with the host at Dothan. It is our privilege, as Christians, to apply those words to ourselves: "There be more that be with us, than those that be against us." God spoke to us yet plainer in the second lesson: "Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils;.....and ye shall be brought before Governors and Kings for my sake." "And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another." "The disciple is not above his master." "Fear ye not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed, and hid that shall not be known." (Matt. x. 16—26.) In explaining this, I dwelt on that blessed topic of consolation to the innocent, that however he suffers under a false accusation here, he will shortly be cleared at God's righteous bar, where the accuser and the accused shall meet face to face, and the guilty person acquit him whom he unjustly charged, and take back the wickedness to himself. Poor M. W., who was just over against me, could not stand it, but first turned her back, and then retired behind the congregation.

While I waited for Mr. Oglethorpe, setting out again for the southward, Mr. Appee* accosted me, a young gentleman, lately come from Savannah. He mentioned his desire of being baptized (having only received lay-baptism before). I thought he ought to have a longer trial of his own sincerity. He passed on to his intended marriage with Miss Bovey, which I dissuaded him from, not thinking either sufficiently prepared for it. He owned he had made little progress in subduing his will, and ought to be more dead to the world before he threw himself into it. Near mid-

* This young Dutchman, who affected conscientious scruples on the subject of his baptism, Mr. Charles Wesley afterwards found to be an infidel, a libertine, a liar, and a thief.—EDIT.

night I took leave of Mr. Oglethorpe, who set out in the scout-boat, after the other boats, for St. George's. The remainder of the night I passed upon the ground in the guard-room.

At four the next day I set out for Savannah, whither the Indian traders were coming down to meet me, and take out licences. I was overjoyed at my deliverance out of this furnace, and not a little ashamed of myself for being so.

Sun., May 16th. We landed at Skiddoway, and dined at Mrs. M.'s. I then went round, and asked the few people there were upon the island, to come to prayers : which accordingly I read, and preached to about ten in the guard-room ; and promised so to contrive, if possible, that they should be supplied once a month.

At four we returned to our boat, and by six reached Thunderbolt ; whence I walked the five remaining miles to Savannah. Mr. Ingham, Mr. Delamotte, and my brether, were surprised at my unexpected visit : but it being late, we each retired to his respective corner of the room, where, without the help of a bed, we slept soundly till the morning.

Wed., May 19th. According to our agreement, my brother set forward for Frederica, and I took charge of Savannah in his absence. The hardest duty imposed on me was the expounding the lesson morning and evening to one hundred hearers. I was surprised at my own confidence, and acknowledged it not my own. The day was usually divided between visiting my parishioners, considering the lesson, and conversing with Mr. Ingham, Delamotte, and Appee.

Tues., May 25th. I visited a girl of fifteen, who lay a-dying of an incurable illness. She had been in that condition many months, as her parents, some of the best people of the town, informed me. I started at the sight of a breathing corpse. Never was real corpse half so ghastly. Her groans and screams alone distinguished her from one. They had no intermission : yet was she perfectly sensible, as appeared by her feebly lifting up her eyes when I bade her trust in God, and read the prayers for the energumens. We were all in tears. She made signs for me to come again.

Fri., May 28th. Mr. Oglethorpe returned from the fron-

tiers. The following account of his expedition I extracted out of his letter to the Trustees :—

“After that flagrant breach of the law of nations, putting our messengers, sent with a flag of truce, under arrest, I could expect nothing but farther hostilities, and therefore prepared to repel force by force. We fortified, with the utmost speed that the smallness of our number would allow, St. George’s Point, within sight of the Spanish outguards, and were much facilitated by finding the ruins of a fort, built by Sir Francis Drake : so that we had nothing to do but to repair and palisade the breaches made by time, and to clear the ditches, which were originally thirty foot deep.

“The Independent Company and man-of-war being posted below Frederica, I drew out from thence, and from the Scotch settlements, what men I possibly could, to increase the garrison on St. George’s Point. While we were getting down recruits and cannon, the Governor of Augustine, having before put our messengers under arrest, sent out Don Ignatio, Colonel of foot, with thirty of his picked men, some Yamasaw Indians, and a strong boat’s crew, about sixty men, in a launch, to reconnoitre our settlements ; and, if he had found us so weak as the advices from Carolina said we were, to dislodge us. Don Ignatio came out by sea, and attempted to get undiscovered into Jekyl’s Sound ; was discovered by Ensign Delegall, who commanded a guard upon the sea-point. He hailed them to give an account who they were ; which they refusing, he fired some cannon with powder ; and about the same time they discovered the man-of-war lying within the sound. They ran out to sea with great precipitation, and strove to get in at another inlet, by the island of Cumberland ; where the Scotch from St. Andrews challenged them. They neither answered, nor hung out colours, but rowed away in such haste, that the same night they reached the Spanish outguards, on St. John’s river, near sixty miles distant.

“Don Ignatio landed in the night, and had a conference with Don Pedro de Lamberti, the Commander of the Spanish horse ; who was come up by land to the look-out, with one hundred and sixty foot, and fifty horse. They concluded by the two forts they had met with, and the man-of-war’s being there, that all our strength lay at Frederica,

and that we were weak at Fort St. George ; therefore resolved to try to surprise some of our boats, and upon their intelligence leave their horses, carry over their men by water, and attack us the night following. This was on Wednesday. I, having discovered some fires on the Spanish main, concluded troops came down, and therefore, in order to make them delay attacking us till our succours should arrive on Thursday morning, I had two carriage-guns, and two swivel-guns, which we had brought with us, carried into the woods, that the Spaniards might not distinguish where they were fired ; and ordered the swivel-guns to be re-charged so often as to make a salute of seven, and with the carriage-guns fired five shot in answer. The swivel-guns, by reason of the smallness of the report, seemed like a ship at a distance saluting, and the carriage-guns like batteries answering from the shore.

“ I set out with two boats, and a flag of truce, to meet the Spaniards. They concluded from the guns, as I have heard since, that there was a new strength arrived ; in which they were confirmed by our boats rowing briskly toward them : on which their launch thought proper to make the best of their way toward Augustine. There the soldiers and boatmen, fatigued with over-labour, spread such dismal accounts, magnifying our strength and diligence, in order to save their own reputation, that they created a general uproar among the people.

“ That night I had several fires made in the woods, some at two, some at three, miles’ distance from Point St. George. On Friday morning the foot and horse, under the command of Don Pedro, finding themselves abandoned by the launch, and therefore in no possibility of passing over into the island against us ; and from the many fires in the woods collecting that the Creek Indians were come up ; having left a small guard of horse to observe our motions, retired in good order to Augustine. Their arrival doubled the confusion, they apprehending that if the Indians should cut off their communication by land, as the man-of-war might do by sea, they should perish by famine. The Governor was obliged to call a council of war, in which the oldest officers, and indeed almost all, gave their opinion, that the gentlemen sent by me should be immediately released, and sent

back in the most honourable manner, with an officer attending them, to treat with me, and desire me to restrain the Indians from invading them : at the same time to ask me why we settled upon lands and territories belonging to the King of Spain.

“Not knowing anything of these proceedings, except that the Spaniards were retired, I lay at Fort St. George from Thursday to Sunday ; in which time fresh troops arrived : and falling all of us to work, with the officers and men of the King’s troop, who distinguished themselves upon this occasion, we mounted some guns upon the batteries along the river, and got the fortifications in good forwardness ; and having left the fort under the command of Captain Hermsdorf, retired with the utmost diligence to Frederica.

“There I found the King of the Uchees, with thirty men, who offered to assist me with one hundred more against the Spaniards. King Tomo Chachi was also there, with thirty men, and an account that hundreds of the Creeks eagerly desired to fall upon the Spaniards. In three days I set out with a large periagua, and fifty men, cannon and provision for two months, two ten-oared boats, and the Indians in their own boats, to relieve St. George, which I imagined by that time might be besieged. God was pleased to prosper us ; so that about fifteen miles from St. George’s, being fortunately an hour a-head of the rest of the boats, I met a Spanish boat, with a flag of truce flying, and Mr. Dempsey, and the gentlemen sent to Augustine, in her, together with Don Pedro de Lamberti, Captain of their troop of horse, and Don Manuel, Secretary to the Governor, and Adjutant of the garrison. It was lucky the Indians were not foremost ; for if they had been, they would certainly have engaged the Spanish boat ; which, as it was, I could hardly prevent, by sending a ten-oared boat to guard them to Frederica. Then I ordered them to be received on board the man-of-war, where they dined with me. I received them with the greatest form I could, having a guard of the King’s troops on the right hand, with their bayonets fixed ; and on the left hand the Highlanders, with their targets, and broad-swords drawn.

“After dinner we drank the King of Britain’s and the King of Spain’s health, under the discharge of cannon from

the ship ; which was answered with fifteen pieces of cannon from Delegall's fort, at the sea-point. That again was followed by the cannon from the fort of St. Andrews, and that by those of Frederica and the Darien, as I had before ordered. The Spaniards seemed extremely surprised that there should be so many forts, and all within hearing of one another. Don Pedro smiled, and said, 'No wonder Don Ignatio made more haste home than out.' After the healths were done, a great number of Indians came on board, naked, painted, and their heads dressed in feathers. They demanded of me justice against the Spaniards, for having killed some of their men in time of full peace. They farther proved, that after the woman was taken, she was abused by numbers of men ; and when she had satisfied their lust for two days, they inhumanly burned her alive.

"Don Pedro, having asked several questions, acknowledged himself fully satisfied of the fact ; excusing it by saying he was then in Mexico ; and that the Governor, being newly come from Spain, and not knowing the customs of the country, had sent out Indians under the command of the Pohoia King of the Floridas, who had exceeded his orders, which were not to make war with the Creeks. But the Indians not being content with that answer, he undertook that, at his return to Augustine, he would have the Pohoia King put to death, if he could be taken ; and if he could not, that the Spaniards would supply his people with neither powder, arms, nor anything else, but leave them to the Creeks. The Indians answered that he spake well ; and if the Spaniards did what he said, all should be white between them ; but if not, they would take revenge ; from which, at my desire, they would abstain till a final answer came.

"The Indian matters being thus settled, we had a conference with the Spanish Commissioners. They thanked me first for my restraining the Indians who were in my power, and hoped I would extend that care to the upper Indians. They then, after having produced their credentials, presented a paper, the contents whereof were to know by what title I settled upon St. Simon's, being lands belonging to the King of Spain. I took the paper, promising an answer the next day. The substance was, that the

lands belonged to the King of England by undoubted right ; that I had proceeded with the utmost caution, having taken with me Indians, the natives, and possessors of those lands ; that I had examined every place, to see if there were any Spanish possessions, and went forward till I found an out-guard of theirs, over against which I settled the English, without committing any hostilities, or dislodging any. Therefore I did not extend the King's dominions, but only settled with regular garrisons that part of them which was before a shelter for Indians, Pireks, and such sort of disorderly men.

“ The rest of the evening we spent in conversation, which chiefly turned upon the convenience it would be, both to the Spaniards and English, to have regular garrisons in sight of each other. Don Pedro smiled, and said he readily agreed to that ; and should like very well to have their Spanish guard upon the south side of H—— river (which is within five miles of Charlestown, and where the Spaniards had a garrison in King Charles the First's time). I replied, I thought it was better as it was ; for there were a great many people living between, who could never be persuaded to come into his sentiments. At last Don Pedro acquainted me, that he thought the Spaniards would refer the settling of the limits to the courts of Europe : for which purpose he would write to their court ; and in the meantime desired no hostilities might be committed ; and that I would send up a Commissary to sign with the Government an agreement to this purpose. I thereupon appointed Mr. Dempsey to be my Commissary, and to return with them.

“ Don Pedro is the ruling man in Augustine, and has more interest with the Council of War than the Governor. As he passed by St. George's Point, he sent a whole ox as a present to their garrison. He gave me some sweetmeats and chocolate. I gave him a gold watch, a gun, and fresh provisions. To Don Manuel I gave a silver watch, and sent back a boat to escort them. If the Spaniards had committed any hostilities, I could, by the help of the Indians, have destroyed Augustine with great facility. But, God be praised, by His blessing, the diligence of Dempsey, and the prudence of Don Pedro, all bloodshed was avoided.”

Sat., May 29th. At ten this evening I first met my tra-

ders, at Mr. Causton's,* the head bailiff: as I did some or other of them every day for some weeks.

Mon., May 31st. About noon Mr. Oglethorpe sent us word that he was going to court. We went, and heard his speech to the people, in the close of which he said, "If any one here has been abused or oppressed by any man, in or out of employment, he has free and full liberty of complaining. Let him deliver in his complaints in writing, at my house. I will read all over by myself, and do every particular man justice."

At eight in the evening I waited upon him, and found the three Magistrates, who seemed much alarmed by his speech, and hoped he would not discourage government. He dismissed them, and told me, he feared his following my brother's advice, in hearing all complaints, would ruin the people; and he should never have any to serve him. I replied, I thought the contrary; and that such liberty was the happiest thing that could happen to the colony, and much to be desired by all good men. He fell, I know not how, into talk of Frederica, and said,—†

Sun., June 6th. I passed good part of this as of every day in conversing with Mr. Appee, who generally breakfasted and supped at our house. The subject of our discourse was my intention of resigning my place, which I resolved to do after my last conference with Mr. Oglethorpe. The giving up my salary and certain hopes of preferment weighed nothing against my resolution. I made Mr. Appee a proffer of them, which he did not accept, being obliged to return, to look after his fortune in Holland.

Tues., June 8th. I was present at court, and heard the accusations against Mr. Causton, who stood by while Parker, the first tribune of the people, on whom the malcontents had built all their hopes, brought the heaviest charges I suppose that could be brought against him. But they were

* This is the man who was principally concerned in the persecution which was subsequently raised against Mr. John Wesley, and which induced him to leave the colony. He was a man of lax morality, having been convicted, both in England and in Georgia, of fraudulent practices in the application of public money. See the *Life of Charles Wesley*, vol. i., pp. 93, 95.—EDIT.

† Here follow in the original manuscript several paragraphs in cipher.—EDIT.

so incredible, trifling, and childish, that I thought them a full vindication of the Magistrates, and admired Mr. Oglethorpe's patience in hearing them.

Wed., June 16th. This and many foregoing days have been mostly spent in drawing up bonds and affidavits, licences and instructions, for the traders ; the evenings in writing letters for Mr. Oglethorpe. We seldom parted till midnight. To-night, at half-hour past twelve, he set out in the scout-boat for Frederica. I went to bed at one, and rose again at four ; but found no effect this variety of fatigue had upon my body till some time after.

Sun., June 20th. Walking in the Trustees' garden, I met the Miss Boveys, whom I had never been in company with. I found some inclination to join them ; but it was a very short-lived curiosity.

Sat., June 26th. Mr. Oglethorpe and my brother returned from Frederica.

Thur., July 1st. I was at court while the Creek Indians had an audience with Mr. Oglethorpe ; which I took down (as several afterwards) in short hand.

Wed., July 7th. Between four and five this morning Mr. Delamotte and I went into the Savannah. We chose this hour for bathing, both for the coolness, and because the alligators were not stirring so soon. We heard them indeed snoring all around us ; and one very early riser swam by within a few yards of us. On Friday morning we had hardly left our usual place of swimming, when we saw an alligator in possession of it. Once afterwards Mr. Delamotte was in great danger ; for an alligator rose just behind him, and pursued him to the land, whither he narrowly escaped.

Sat., July 10th. I was waked by the news my brother brought us, of Miss Bovey's sudden death.* It called up all my sorrow and envy. "Ah, poor Ophelia !" was continually in my mind, "I thought thou shouldst have been my Hamlet's wife." Mr. Appee was just set out for Charlestown, [on his way to] Holland, intending to return, when he had settled his affairs, and marry her.

"But death had quicker wings than love."

* Under the date of July 6th, 8th, and 10th, 1736, Mr. John Wesley has related in his Journal some interesting facts which occurred in connexion with the death of this lady.—EDIT.

The following evening I saw her in her coffin, and soon after in her grave.

Wed., July 21st. I heard by my brother that I was to set sail in a few days for England.

Thur., July 22d. To-day I got their licences signed by Mr. Oglethorpe, countersigned them myself, and so entirely washed my hands of the traders.

Sun., July 25th. I resigned my Secretary's place, in a letter to Mr. Oglethorpe. After prayers he took me aside, and asked me whether all I had said was not summed up in the line he showed me on my letter:—

Magis apta tuis tua dona relinquo.

“Sir, to yourself your slighted gifts I leave,
Less fit for me to take, than you to give.”

I answered, I desired not to lose his esteem, but could not preserve it with the loss of my soul. He answered, he was satisfied of my regard for him; owned my argument drawn from the heart unanswerable; and yet, said he, “I would desire you not to let the Trustees know your resolution of resigning. There are many hungry fellows ready to catch at the office; and in my absence I cannot put in one of my own choosing. The best I can hope for is an honest Presbyterian, as many of the Trustees are such. Perhaps they may send me a bad man; and how far such a one may influence the traders, and obstruct the reception of the Gospel among the Heathen, you know. I shall be in England before you leave it. Then you may either put in a deputy or resign.

“You need not be detained in London above three days; and only speak to some of my particular friends, (Vernon, Hutchinson, and Towers,) to the Board of Trustees, when called upon, and the Board of Trade.

“On many accounts I should recommend to you marriage, rather than celibacy. You are of a social temper, and would find in a married state the difficulties of working out your salvation exceedingly lessened, and your helps as much increased.”

Mon., July 26th. The words which concluded the lesson, and my stay in Georgia, were, “Arise, let us go hence.” Accordingly at twelve I took my final leave of Savannah.

When the boat put off I was surprised that I felt no more joy in leaving such a scene of sorrows.

July 31st. I arrived with my brother at Charlestown. I lay that night at an inn. Next morning I was much rejoiced at hearing Mr. Appee was still in town, waiting for my company to England. His ingenuous, open temper, and disengagement from the world, made me promise myself a very improving and agreeable voyage: especially as I doubted not but the sudden death of his mistress had taken off that appearance of lightness, which I attributed rather to his youth and education, than any natural inconstancy. After breakfasting with Mr. Eveley, a merchant who had bespoke lodgings for us, I went in quest of my friend. We met with equal satisfaction on both sides: but I did not observe those deep traces of sorrow and seriousness which I expected. I asked him whether his loss had had its due effect, in making his heart more tender, and susceptible of divine impressions. By his answer I concluded his heart was right, and its uppermost desire was to recover the divine image.

Something of this desire I felt myself at the holy sacrament, and found myself encouraged, by an unusual hope of pardon, to strive against sin.

Mon., August 2d. I had observed much, and heard more, of the cruelty of masters towards their negroes; but now I received an authentic account of some horrid instances thereof. The giving a child a slave of its own age to tyrannize over, to beat and abuse out of sport, was, I myself saw, a common practice. Nor is it strange, being thus trained up in cruelty, they should afterwards arrive at so great perfection in it: that Mr. Star, a gentleman I often met at Mr. Lasserre's, should, as he himself informed L., first nail up a negro by the ears, then order him to be whipped in the severest manner, and then to have scalding water thrown over him, so that the poor creature could not stir for four months after. Another much-applauded punishment is, drawing their slaves' teeth. One Colonel Lynch is universally known to have cut off a poor negro's legs; and to kill several of them every year by his barbarities.

It were endless to recount all the shocking instances of diabolical cruelty which these men (as they call them-

selves) daily practise upon their fellow-creatures ; and that on the most trivial occasions. I shall only mention one more, related to me by a Swiss gentleman, Mr. Zouberbuhler, an eye-witness, of Mr. Hill, a dancing-master in Charlestown. He whipped a she-slave so long, that she fell down at his feet for dead. When, by the help of a physician, she was so far recovered as to show signs of life, he repeated the whipping with equal rigour, and concluded with dropping hot sealing-wax upon her flesh. Her crime was overfilling a tea-cup.

These horrid cruelties are the less to be wondered at, because the government itself, in effect, countenances and allows them to kill their slaves, by the ridiculous penalty appointed for it, of about seven pounds sterling, half of which is usually saved by the criminal's informing against himself. This I can look upon as no other than a public act to indemnify murder.

Wed., August 11th. Coming on board our ship, I found the honest Captain had let my cabin to another. My flux and fever that has hung upon me, forced me for some nights past to go into a bed ; but now my only bed was a chest, on which I threw myself in my boots, and was not overmuch troubled with sleep till the morning. What was still worse, I then had no asylum to fly to from the Captain ; the most beastly man I ever saw ; a lewd, drunken, quarrelsome fool ; praying, and yet swearing continually. The first sight I had of him was upon the cabin-floor, stark naked, and dead drunk.

Fri., August 13th. The wind was still contrary ; so that we were forced to lie off the bar, about five miles from Charlestown.

Mon., August 16th. A faint breeze springing up, the pilot, weary of waiting a week to no purpose, said he would venture over the bar, though he feared there was not water enough. Accordingly we attempted it, and had got above half of the two miles between us and the sea, when a violent squall arose, and drove the ship before it with incredible swiftness. Before it began we were almost becalmed, so that it saved the ship, at least, from being a-ground, though with the immediate hazard both of that and our lives. The sailors were in great consternation,

expecting to be stranded every moment. The pilot cursed the ship most heartily, and the hour he set foot in her. Having scraped along the ground for some minutes before, the ship at last stuck. She got clear, and stuck fast a second time ; and immediately fell into seven fathom water.

The Mate afterwards told me, it was one thousand to one but she had been lost by the Captain's folly and ignorance, in letting fly the mainsail, while we struck on the bar ; which was the surest way to fix her there ; as it must have done had we not been on the very edge of it.

Tues., August 17th. We were much surprised (the passengers, I mean) at finding, as soon as over the bar, that two of our twelve sailors were obliged to pump every half-hour.

Mon., August 23d. I rose in the night to appease a quarrel between the second Mate and the Captain, who was continually interrupting the officers in their duty ; giving out, as they informed me, such orders as would, if followed, cost them the ship and their lives. His indignation at present was occasioned by their furling some of the sails in the greatest squall we have yet met with.

Thur., August 26th. We saw a brigantine, standing to the windward of us, but quickly lost sight of her. Had she come near us, Mr. Appee and I intended to have gone on board her ; for we cannot yet believe we shall come to England in this ship.

Fri., August 27th. We came to an allowance of water, the Captain knowing nothing of what we had on board, till the officers informed him. Indeed, at his rate of drinking, we must quickly come to a shorter allowance ; for while any of his half-hogshead of rum remains, here will be nothing but punch, and drams, and drunkenness without end.

This morning Mr. Appee laid aside his mask. He began by telling me all Mr. Oglethorpe had ever said to him, particularly his inmost thoughts of my brother and me ; that he ridiculed our pretended fasting in the ship ; that he took all my abstemiousness for mere hypocrisy, and put on for fear of my brother ; for he saw how very uneasy I was under the restraint ; that he much blamed my carelessness, my closeness, my frightening the people, and

stirring them up to mutiny, &c., &c. ; that he found I apprehended being turned out of my office, and therefore pretended to be weary of it ; that to save my reputation, he had found me an errand to England, but never expected my return, any more than my brother's going to the Indians, which he well knew he never intended, but he would make his own use of him ; that he greatly admired his *finesse*, in offering to go to the Choctaws in all haste, but at the same time procuring the Germans to dissuade him. In a word, he believed him to have a little sincerity, but more vanity : me to have much vanity, but no sincerity at all.

I asked Appee whether his judgment was the same. He answered, "Yes ;" that my brother, he believed, was labouring to establish a character for sanctity ; was exceedingly subtle, keeping me in the dark, as well as all others ; yet credulous, and easy to be imposed upon himself ; that he pitied his ignorance, in taking him (Appee) to be sincere ; particularly in regard to his breaking off with Miss Bovey, which he intended, not in pursuance of his ghostly advice, but of Mr. Oglethorpe's, who had told him she was below his aspiring genius ; that after his fine talk with my brother, he never made the least alteration in his own behaviour, or thought any farther about it.

While he was giving this blessed account of himself, I could not help reflecting on the profound sagacity and spiritual discernment of my brother and myself ; particularly *his*, who was born for the benefit of knaves. *Si vult decipi, decipiatur*. For my own part, I will never imitate, I will ever beware of, men, as He who best knows them advises. I will not think all men rogues, till I find them otherwise, (according to Appee's avowed principle,) but I will insist upon a far different probation from what my brother requires, before I take any one into my confidence.

I next inquired what his thoughts were of me. He frankly replied, he took me to be partly in earnest ; but I had a much greater mind to please myself than to please God. Yet as for money, I did not much value it ; but in my eagerness for pleasure and praise, I was a man after his own heart : that as I could not hold it, he wished I would leave off my strictness ; for I should then be much better company.

As for himself, he said his only principle was an insatiable thirst of glory ; that Georgia was too narrow a sphere for him, and that therefore he should never see it more. Yet he desired my friendship, because I had learning, was sincere, and of his temper ; but he should like me much better, if I were not a Parson. I had before let him into my own affairs, and read him my letter of resignation to Mr. Oglethorpe. His remark upon that was, "It is finely calculated for the end you propose,—the engaging Mr. Oglethorpe's opinion and interest ; but he will understand you."

Sat., August 28th. After a restless, tempestuous night, I hardly rose at eight. Our happier Captain, having got his dose, could sleep a day and a night upon the stretch, and defy either pumps or squall to wake him.

Mon., August 30th. At noon we were alarmed by an outcry of the sailors, at their having continued pumping several hours, without being able to keep the water under. They desired the Captain to put into some port, before they were got out to sea too far for returning ; but he was too drunk to regard them. At five the sailors came down in a body to the great cabin, waked, and told him it was as much as their lives were worth to proceed on the voyage, unless their leaks were stopped ; that he remembered it was as much as ever they could do to keep the ship above water in their passage from Boston, being forced to pump without ceasing ; that the turpentine fell down upon, and choked up, the pumps continually : nor was it possible to get at it, or to hold out in such continual labour ; which made them so thirsty, they could not live on their allowance of water ; that they must come to shorter still, through his neglect to take in five more hogsheads of water, as his Mate advised him ; that he owned they had no candles for half the voyage : on all which accounts they begged him to consider whether their common safety did not require them to put in at some land, for more water and candles, and, above all, to stop their leaks. The Captain, having now slept out his rum, replied, "To be sure, the men talked reason," and, without consulting any of his officers, immediately gave orders to stand away for Boston.

Sat., September 4th. Appee laid a train for the Captain, and betrayed him into talking lewdly ; for which I re-

proved him too sharply, and thereby increased his beastliness. He abused me plentifully, till I ceased to take any notice of him. In the evening he set upon me again ; but I turned from him, and talked Latin to Zouberbuhler. This made him more outrageous. He blew out the candle by which I was writing. Zouberbuhler lit it ; and he blew it out again : on which we all set upon him ; I only talking Latin or Greek. He told me I was drunk, mad, an emissary, a Jesuit, a devil ; but could not get one English word from me. The gentlemen, particularly Appee, baited him to his heart's content ; and having laughed upon the stretch till near midnight, we then suffered the poor beast to return to his litter. The next day we said neither good nor bad to him ; but he was not continent of speech. His indignation was mostly vented upon me, "the arch-rebel," as he called me, for my "audacious talk." In the evening he again put out Zouberbuhler's candle ; upon which Appee pulled out his spicket of the rum, and let it run about the cabin. This was the cruellest punishment [that] could have been devised ; and farther heightened by our mirth at his inimitable resentment. Zouberbuhler lighted up the candle in his own cabin every now and then, bringing it into the great cabin ; and when the Captain (whose motions were not of the nimblest) had come out of bed to put it out, Zouberbuhler carried it back again. He called down his men ten times, ordering them to bind us in our beds, to our and their no small diversion. He offered to get at the candle in Zouberbuhler's cabin ; but the Swiss stood centinel at his cabin-door, and then he might as well have wrenched a bone from Cerberus. The Captain gave it over, as impossible, drank a hearty dram, and dropped asleep.

Wed., September 15th. This is the first time I have heard a sailor confess it was a storm. We lay under our mainsail, and let the ship drive, being by conjecture about sixty leagues from Boston, upon George's Bank ; though, as we hoped, past the shoals in it. The Captain never troubled himself about anything ; but lay snoring even in such a night as the last, though frequently called, without ever stirring, either for squalls, or soundings, or shoals.

In the afternoon the Mate came down, having sounded, and found forty, and soon after twenty, fathom ; told the

Captain he apprehended coming into shoaler water still ; and therefore it would be necessary to reef the foresail and mainsail in readiness, that in case we fell foul of the shoals, (being upon George's Bank, and in a storm,) the ship might have head-way, to get clear again. This the Captain absolutely refused ; and, though told it could do no possible harm, and might be the saving of the ship and us, persisted in his obstinacy ; so that the Mate left him to sleep, and the ship to take care of itself. But it pleased God to abate the storm, and on Thursday, about twelve, entirely to remove it.

Mon., September 2nd. At seven, Mr. Graham, the first Mate, came to ask for directions, as he constantly does, and the Captain as constantly shifting him off, and leaving the whole management of the ship to him, or chance, or any body. The conversation being somewhat remarkable, I took it down in short-hand, as they were speaking it.

MATE.—“ Captain Indivine, what would you have us do ? What course would you have us to steer to-night ? ”

CAPTAIN.—“ Even what course you will. We have a fair wind.”

M.—“ Yes, Sir ; and it drives us full upon the land, which cannot be many leagues off.”

C.—“ Then I think you had best keep forward.”

M.—“ Would you have us go on all night, and venture running upon the land ? ”

C.—“ I don't know. Go on.”

M.—“ But there are shoals and rocks before us.”

C.—“ Why, then, have a good look-out.”

M.—“ But you cannot see twice the ship's length. What would you order me to do ? ”

C.—“ These rebels and emissaries have excited you to come and ask for orders. I don't know what you mean.”

M.—“ Sir, nobody has excited me. I come, as it is my duty, to my Captain for directions.”

C.—“ Have you a mind to quarrel with me ? ”

M.—“ I have a mind to know what you will do.”

C.—“ Nay, what will you do, if it come to that ? ”

M.—“ Am I your Captain ? or you mine ? ”

C.—“ I am your Captain, and will make you know it, Mr. Man. Do what I order you ; for you must and shall.”

M.—“Why, Sir, you order me nothing.”

C.—“You would not have me come upon deck myself, sure.”

M.—“If you did, I should not think it would be much amiss. Some Captains would not have stirred off deck a moment in such a night as this. Here you lie, without so much as ever once looking out, to see how things are.”

C.—“Yes, I have been upon deck this very day.”

M.—“But you have taken no account of anything, or given yourself the least trouble about the ship, for many days past.”

C.—“It is all one for that. I know where we are exactly.”

M.—“How far do you think we may be from land?”

C.—“Why, just thirty-five leagues. I am sure of it.”

M.—“How is that possible? You have taken no observation this fortnight; nor have we got one these four days.”

C.—“No matter for that. I know we are safe.”

M.—“The most skilful sailor alive cannot know it. Be pleased only to declare what you would have done. Shall we sail on? Shall we lay by? Shall we alter our course? Shall we stand in and off?” He went on repeating such questions again and again; but as to giving an answer, the Captain chose to be excused; till the Mate, quite out of patience, having waited an hour to no purpose, left him; and the Captain concluded all with, “Jack, give me a dram!”

Tues., September 21st. The sailors, who were upon deck all night, saw three large ships coming, as they supposed, out of the bay; but in vain attempted to speak with them. At three I was waked by a cry of “Land!” The Mate said we were just upon it; for he saw the light of the watch-house; and if they did not tack about immediately, they would be upon the rocks, which lay just before them under the water. At the same time it blew a storm. The uproar was so great, that it even waked the Captain, who started up, ran to his rum, drank a hearty draught, and then looked upon deck; but not much liking things there, came down again immediately, cried, “Ay, ay; all will be well;” and dropped asleep again.

Wed., September 22d. Having sailed for some hours

without discovering land, we began to think the light which the Mate had seen was of some ship, and not the lighthouse. At two we made land ; which the men soon found to be Cape Cod, about eighteen leagues from Boston. The wind blew from shore, yet we kept our course. At midnight the storm gave place to a calm. These have constantly succeeded each other since our leaving Charlestown.

Thur., September 23d. The fineness of the weather invited even Mr. Appee upon deck, who usually disposes of twenty-three of the twenty-four hours in bed. His vanity betrayed him into farther discoveries of himself. He laboured to show me the only difference between us lay in externals, through the difference of our education. I had the same views that he had, but was forced by the restraints of a narrower education to dissemble those inclinations which he had given a loose to. The case was the same with my brother : a much better hypocrite, he said, than me ; and who would have made an excellent Jesuit. But Mr. Oglethorpe understood him, though for his own convenience he would not seem to do so.

Upon my asking him how he accounted for the great pains my brother had taken with him, he readily answered, That was all grimace. My brother could not but be mightily pleased with the reputation such a convert would gain to his sanctity, which had charms to win over so wild a young gentleman, of his parts. But how could you bear him so long, if you had no esteem for him, or regard to his advice ? “ Why, it was so new a gratification to me to be thought religious, that I found no difficulty in keeping on the mask : and I had got such a knack of going to prayers and sacrament, that I don’t know but I should have been actually caught at last.”

Fri., September 24th. Being within sight of the lighthouse, at nine in the morning, the pilot came on board us. At two I gladly obeyed his hasty summons, and went into his boat with the other passengers, bidding an hearty farewell to our wretched ship, and more wretched Captain, who for the two last days had, most happily for us, lain dead drunk on the floor, without sense or motion.

I was at leisure now to contemplate a prospect entirely new, and beautiful beyond all I had ever seen. We sailed

smoothly on, in a vast bason, as it seemed, bounded on all sides with small innumerable islands. Some of these were entire rock, in height and colour not unlike Dover cliffs : others steep, and covered with woods. Here and there lay a round hill, entirely clothed with green ; and all at such equal distances, that the passages seemed artificially made, to admit the narrow streams between.

Having passed one of these passages, we were presented with a new set of hills, and rocks, and woods, in endless variety ; till we came to the castle, three miles from Boston. From thence we had a full view of the town, stretched out a mile and a half upon the shore, in a semicircle. We landed at Long Wharf, which we walked straight up, having a row of houses on one side, and near two hundred sail of ships on the other. I lodged in a public house ; went to bed at eleven. Appee followed me, drunk, between one and two in the morning.

Sat., September 25th. I called several times at Mr. Price, the Commissary's, before I found him at home. At first he looked as not believing me to be a Clergy man (my ship-clothes not being the best credentials). But when I returned in my habit, (Dr. Cutler having met him meantime, and informed him of me,) he received me very cordially, and pressed me to live with him while I stayed in Boston.

Sun., September 26th. I preached in the morning at Dr. Cutler's church, in the afternoon at Mr. Price's, on the one thing needful.

In the evening I first fell into company with Mr. John Chicheley, a right honest zealous advocate for the Church of England, who has, on that account, been cruelly persecuted by the Presbyterians.

Thur., September 30th. In the morning I waited upon the Governor. At noon Mr. Millar, a good-natured Clergyman, visited me. The rest of this and the following day I employed in writing to my friends at Charlestown.

Fri., October 1st. I wrote to my brother concerning my return to Georgia, which I found myself inclined to refer wholly to God.

Sat., October 2d. I rode out with Mr. Price, in his chaise, to see the country, which is wonderfully delightful.

The only passage out of town is a neck of land about two hundred yards over ; all the rest being encircled with the sea. The temperate air, the clear rivulets, and the beautiful hills and dales, which we everywhere met with, seemed to present the very reverse of Georgia.

Sun., October 3d. After near two months' want of it, I again enjoyed the benefit of the sacrament, which I assisted Dr. Cutler to administer. I preached on, "There the wicked cease from troubling, and there the weary are at rest:" as I did again in the afternoon for Mr. Price, though I found my strength sensibly abated.

Mon., October 4th. I rode with Mr. and Mrs. Price, Dr. Cutler, his son, and Mr. Brig, (two Cambridge scholars,) to see Mr. Millar, at Braintree. At our return we found Mr. Davenport, who was come to see me, a worthy Clergyman, as deserving of the name as any I see in New-England.

Tues., October 5th. I dined at Mr. Plasted's, a London acquaintance of my brother's ; who from thence took occasion to find me out, and showed me all the friendship and civility he could, while I stayed in Boston. After dinner I drove Mr. Cutler to Cambridge. I had only time to observe the civility of the Fellows, the regularity of the buildings, and pleasantness of the situation.

Sat., October 9th. I was dragged out to consult Dr. Graves about my increasing flux. He prescribed a vomit, from which I received much benefit.

Sun., October 10th. I recovered a little strength in the sacrament ; but my body was extremely weakened by preaching twice.

Tues., October 12th. I supped with several of the Clergy, at Mr. Chicheley's, who entertained us very agreeably with his adventures. He seems to have excellent natural parts, much solid learning, and true primitive piety ; is acquainted with the power, and therefore holds fast the form, of godliness ; obstinate as was my father in good, and not to be borne down by evil.

Thur., October 14th. I was taken up with the Clergy, in drawing up a recommendation of him to the Bishop of London, for orders. The Bishop had been formerly frightened from ordaining him, by the outcries of the Presbyter-

ians. They were wise to keep a man out of the ministry, who had in a private capacity approved himself such a champion for the Church.

Sat., October 16th. My illness increasing, notwithstanding all the Doctors could do for me, I began seriously to consider my condition ; and at my evening hour of retirement found benefit from Pascal's prayer in sickness.

Sun., October 17th. While I was talking at Mr. Chicheley's on spiritual religion, his wife observed that I seemed to have much the same way of thinking with Mr. Law. Glad I was and surprised to hear that good man mentioned ; and confessed, all I knew of religion was through him. I found she was well acquainted with his *Serious Call* ; and has one of the two that are in New-England. I borrowed it, and passed the evening in reading it to the family (Mr. Williams's, where I have been some days). His daughter and he seemed satisfied and affected.

Mon., October 18th. Many appointed days of embarkation had come and gone, without our embarking ; but this was certainly to be the last. Accordingly Mr. Millar came very early to attend me to the ship. I took occasion to mention the book I had borrowed of his sister, Mrs. Chicheley, and read him the characters of *Cognatus* and *Uranius*. He liked them much, and promised he would carefully read the whole. Breakfast and dinner passed, but [there was] no summons to go on board.

Tuesday and Wednesday I grew worse and worse ; and on Thursday, October 21st, was forced to keep my chamber through pain. Appee came, and laboured all he could to dissuade me from the voyage, promising himself to deliver my letters and papers, and excuse me to Mr. Oglethorpe. Mr. Price, Williams, &c., joined him : but I put an end to their importunity, by assuring them, nothing less than death should hinder my embarking.

Fri., October 22d. All things being at last in readiness, the wind providentially changed, and afforded me three days more to try experiments. Within that time I vomited, purged, bled, sweated, and took laudanum, which entirely drained me of the little strength I had left. It may be of use hereafter to remember Appee's behaviour at

Boston. He gave out that his design in coming to Georgia had been to take charge of the people there : but finding Mr. Oglethorpe just such a genius as himself, he thought his own stay there was not so necessary, but he might safely quit the interest of the colony ; which, had it not been to such a hand, he could never have prevailed upon himself to do : that at present he was unresolved where to bestow himself ; only that it should be on that part of mankind which needed him the most : that he was going to England about matters of the last importance. Two or three letters of no moment, he said, I carried ; but all secret despatches, to the Duke of Newcastle, and other Ministers of state, he was charged with. From the court of Great Britain he was to be sent Envoy to Spain. His money, a few hundred pounds, he had (in some companies) sent before him to England ; in others, had turned it into silver, and freighted Indivine's ship.

Mon., October 25th. I waked surprisingly better, though not yet able to walk. This morning Dr. Graves came over from Charlestown to see me, gave me physic and advice ; which he likewise left in writing ; but would take no fee for either. The same civility I received from Dr. Gibbons, Dr. Gardener, and others. A little after Mr Chicheley came, and brought me a summons to go aboard. Mr. Price drove me to the wharf, having called by the way on some of my new friends, from whom I have received all the instances of kindness in their power to show.

When we came to the wharf, the boat was not ready ; so we were forced to wait half an hour in the open cold air. Mr. Chicheley helped me into the boat, and covered me up. In about two hours we reached the ship ; and with Mr Zouerbuhler, Mr. Appee, Mr. Cutler, and Mr. Brig, went on board. I lay down in the state-room, less fatigued with the passage than I expected.

Finding Appee wanted his state-room again, I quitted it, and accepted Mr. Cutler's offer of his cabin. I had a tolerable night, though stripped of the conveniences I so long enjoyed on shore.

Tues., October 26th. I entered upon the Doctor's regimen, and quickly found the benefit.

When five leagues onward on our voyage, the wind

changing, forced us back again. In the evening it came fair, and by the next day carried us clear of all land.

Wed., October 27th. I began public prayers in the great cabin. We had seldom any present but the passengers. I had not yet strength to read the lesson, nor attention for any harder study than Clarendon's History. In the night I was much disquieted by the colic.

Thur., October 28th. The Captain warned me of a storm approaching. In the evening, at eight, it came, and rose higher and higher, after I thought it must have come to its strength; for I did not lose a moment of it, being obliged by the return of my flux to rise continually. At last the long-wished-for morning came, but brought no abatement of the storm. There was so prodigious a sea, that it quickly washed away our sheep, and half our hogs, and drowned most of our fowl. The ship had been new caulked at Boston; how carefully, it now appeared: for being deeply laden, the sea streamed in at the sides so plentifully, that it was as much as four men could do, by continual pumping, to keep her above water. I rose and lay down by turns, but could remain in no posture long; strove vehemently to pray, but in vain; persisted in striving, yet still without effect. I prayed for power to pray, for faith in Jesus Christ, continually repeating his name, till I felt the virtue of it at last, and knew that I abode under the shadow of the Almighty.

It was now about three in the afternoon, and the storm at the height. I endeavoured to encourage poor Mr. Brig and Cutler, who were in the utmost agony of fear. I prayed with them, and for them, till four; at which time the ship made so much water, that the Captain, finding it otherwise impossible to save her from sinking, cut down the mizen mast. In this dreadful moment, I bless God, I found the comfort of hope; and such joy in finding I could hope, as the world can neither give nor take away. I had that conviction of the power of God, present with me, overruling my strongest passion, fear, and raising me above what I am by nature, as surpassed all rational evidence, and gave me a taste of the divine goodness.

At the same time I found myself constrained in spirit to bear witness to the truth, perhaps for the last time, before

my poor friend Appee. I went to him, declared the difference between one that feareth God, and one that feareth him not ; avowed my hope, not because I had attained, but because I had endeavoured it ; and testified my expectation, if God should now require my soul of me, that he would receive it to his mercy.

My poor friend was convinced, but stupid ; owned the happiness of the most imperfect Christian ; an happiness he himself was a stranger to ; and therefore, he said, all his refuge was, in time of danger, to persuade himself there was none. Mr. Cutler frequently calling upon God to have mercy upon his soul, Appee confessed he greatly envied him, as he had no manner of concern for his own. I advised him to pray. He answered, it was mocking God to begin praying in danger, when he had never done it in safety. I only added, I then hoped, if God spared him now, he would immediately set himself about working out his salvation, which depended on the one condition of exchanging this world for the next. Mr. Zouberbuhler was present at this conference, and behaved as a Christian ought to do.

I returned to Mr. Brig and Mr. Cutler, and endeavoured from their fear to show them the want of religion, which was intended for our support on such occasions ; urged them to resolve, if God saved them from this distress, that they would instantly, and entirely, give themselves up to Him.

The wind was still as high as ever, but the motion rather less violent since the cutting the mast ; and we did not ship quite so much water. I laid me down, utterly exhausted ; but my distemper was so increased, it would not suffer me to rest. Toward morning the sea heard and obeyed the divine voice, "Peace, be still !"

Sun., October 31st. My first business to-day (may it be the business of all my days !) was to offer up the sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving. Then we all joined in thanks for our deliverance. Most of the day I was on the bed, faint, and full of pain. At night I rose to prayers, but could not read them. I took a vomit, which gave me immediate ease, in which I passed the rest of the night.

Mon., November 1st. In the afternoon the wind rose, and

promised a storm. I endeavoured to prepare myself and companions for it. It did not fail our expectation ; but was not so violent as the last. The sea broke over us every ten minutes ; and the ceaseless noise of the pumps either kept off sleep, or continually interrupted it.

Tues., November 2d. Still the poor sailors could have no respite ; and as their strength abated, their murmurings increased. At night, when almost exhausted, they were relieved by a calm.

Wed., November 3d. In the evening the wind arose again, and with that the sea, which at ten broke in through one of the dark lights, and filled the great cabin. It was vain to look for rest in such a hurricane. I waited till two in the morning for its abatement ; but it continued all the following day in full majesty.

On Friday, November 5th, we met a ship bound for Boston, which had been ten weeks on her passage from Bristol, and forced in the last storm to throw most of her cargo overboard. Being short of provisions, they desired a barrel of beef, which our Captain very readily sent them, (though at the expense of much time and pains,) and a cag of rum, to encourage their sailors to pump.

The wind came fair about midnight, but soon returned to the same quarter.

Mon., November 8th. My flux returned with great violence.

Tues., November 9th. The men came down, and declared they could keep the water under no longer ; it gaining upon them every moment. Therefore they desired the Captain would be pleased to lighten the ship. He told them he knew what he had to do ; bade them return to their pumping, and ordered others to take in all the sails but the mainsail. He stayed some time, (as he since told us, that he might not discourage *us*,) and then went up ; and as we lay by stopped several leaks upon deck. This did considerable service ; though it was still the constant business of four men to keep the ship from filling.

During this time I often threw myself upon the bed, seeking rest, but finding none. I asked of God to spare me a little, that I might recover strength ; then cast my eye upon the word : " For my name's sake will I defer mine

anger ; and for my praise will I refrain for thee, that I cut thee not off." (Isai. xlviii. 9.) My soul immediately returned to its rest, and I no longer felt the continuance of the storm.

Wed., November 10th. Toward night it pleased God to abate the wind, so that I once more enjoyed the comfort of sleep.

Sat., November 13th. Never was a calm more seasonable than that which Providence this day sent us. The men were so harassed, they could work no longer ; and the leaks increased so fast, that no less than their uninterrupted labour could have kept the vessel from foundering. All hands were now employed in stopping the leaks. The Captain himself told us he had been heartily frightened yesterday, with a danger he would now acquaint us with, since it was over : the total stoppage of one of the pumps. He further informed us, that he had stopped several openings in the sides of the ship, wide enough to lay his fingers in ; so that he wondered the poor men had been able to keep her above water ; and added, that the utmost he hoped for was, that they might hold out till they could reach some of the western islands. Just as the men had finished their work, the calm gave place to a fair wind.

Tues., November 23d. I imparted to Mr. Zeuberbuhler my intention of discarding Appee as soon as we landed. He told me he wondered I had not done it before ; for he was such a man, so unprofitable, so pernicious, that he himself would not be bound to go another voyage with him for all the world ; that he was so excessively vain, he thought himself admired wherever he came ; and I was so fond of him, that, for all my talk of parting, I could not live without him. He added, he was so notorious a liar, that he had long since ceased to believe one word he said ; and so utterly irreligious, that it was impossible to make a friend of him. He talked so well on this subject, that I was convinced he is not the mere man of honour Appee had represented him ; but has some better principle than the dream of a shadow to depend upon.

At midnight I was waked by a great uproar. So prodigious a sea broke upon the ship, as filled it, and half-drowned the men upon deck ; though by a particular pro-

vidence none were washed overboard. The swell lasted something longer than the rain, and high wind ; and in the morning we had our fair wind again ; being the twelfth day since it was first commanded to attend us.

In the afternoon we had another short but fierce blast, which brought the wind still fairer for our running into the Channel, whence all agreed we could not be far distant. At night I found Mr. Zouberbuhler alone, who, anticipating what I intended to say, addressed me very cordially, desiring my friendship and correspondence ; complained of having been linked so long to Appee, that he was become dead like him, though he had had a fear of God, and some acquaintance with Him, till this fatal voyage. He was full of care and thought about his countrymen, whether he should bring them to New-England, or Georgia. In the latter, he said, he saw little encouragement for true piety, (which many of his poor Swiss were yet possessed of,) and feared if they were settled there, they would be corrupted, like the miserable Purisburgers. He told me, Appee had proffered, if his Spanish embassy failed, to attend him to Switzerland ; but he would never more trust such a man near him, or his people : such an abominable liar, scoundrel, and thief ; one who had been forced to fly his country and the pursuit of justice, for robbing his father of three hundred guineas.

A fair account of my friend Appee,—and of the twenty-four pounds I have lent him ! That a Dutchman should cheat me is nothing strange : but how did he evade the wary eye of Mr. Oglethorpe ? Happy Miss Bovey, to be delivered by death from such a man !

On Thursday night our wind failed us. When it was first sent, we had not, in three weeks' sailing, reached the banks of Newfoundland, which is a third part of our way : but this fortnight has almost brought us home. The next day I was perfectly satisfied in the wind's turning against us.

Sat., November 27th. Towards the evening it came fair as we could wish.

Ecce iterum Crispinus ! Mr. Zouberbuhler came to me, full of abhorrence. "That Appee," said he, "is a very devil, made up of falseness and lies ! He is ever railing against you, behind your back, to the Captain and passen-

gers, ridiculing the prayers, &c. He tells the Captain, (as he did everybody at Boston,) that you are so ignorant, Mr. Oglethorpe was forced to send him to take care of you. At Charlestown he declared, in all companies, he was come with full powers to put an end to the dispute between them and Georgia. Last night I overheard him giving a blessed account of you to Mr. Brig. As soon as ever I come to land I shall cast him off, and advise you to do the same : for while you suffer him near you, he will not fail to do you all the mischief he can."

Mon., November 29th. We were waked between six and seven by the Captain crying out, "Land !" It was the Lizard-Point, about a league distant. What wind there was, it was for us. I felt thankful for the divine mercies.

While I was walking upon deck, Appee came up to me, *metuens tale votum ereptum a faucibus* ; began with many professions of friendship, hoped all little misunderstandings would be forgot ; fell into familiar discourse, as formerly ; was sure I should never return to Georgia ; where Mr. Oglethorpe would allow none but his creatures, or such as were some way subservient to his glory : "which, take my word for it," said he, "is the principle of all his actions, as well as mine. Christianity he has about as much as myself. I have given him some unanswerable reasons against it." He was undetermined where to spend the next year, but resolved to spend it all in quest of pleasure and glory,—and confident I was just of his mind.

Wed., December 1st. The first thing I heard at day-break was the Captain in an outrageous passion ; for the ship, which, according to the course he had ordered, ought to have been near the coast of France, was, through the carelessness of the Mate, just upon the land at Shoreham. He told me, that had not the day broke out as it did, the ship must have run aground ; and then all the art of man could not have saved her ; for we were land-locked on three sides, and had the wind right astern : so that it was with the utmost difficulty, and not till the afternoon, that we got clear. This lost us a day ; for by the evening we should have reached the Downs.

Appee took me aside once more, to try his skill upon me ; besought me not to alter my behaviour toward him

when we should come to land ; denied, as ever he hoped for salvation, that he had ever spoke or wrote disrespectfully of me ; detested the thought of such treachery, with so many horrid imprecations, as I believed even a Dutchman would have trembled at. The burden of all was, John Bull and Nicholas Frog were too dear friends ever to think of parting. But John Bull begged to be excused. Though I stood in admiration of his parts, I did not choose they should be any longer exercised on me. In vain did he resume our lodging together. I was deaf on that ear, and shifted the discourse, which he still brought back again. " Well, my dear friend, wherever you are," said he, " I will take a lodging next door."

Thur., December 2d. By four in the afternoon we came within sight of Beachy-Head ; but the wind freshening, by nine we found ourselves almost unawares over against Dover. We fired a gun for a pilot, but none would come to us. We fell down into the Downs, over against Deal, and fired two more. The Captain gave us warning that he expected a pilot in an hour or two, at the farthest. I returned thanks to God for bringing us to the haven where we would be ; got my few things in readiness, and laid me down, without disquiet or impatience for two or three hours.

PART II.

FROM DECEMBER 3d, 1736, WHEN HE LANDED IN ENGLAND,
TO MAY 31st, 1738, WHEN HE RECEIVED THE CHRISTIAN
SALVATION.

FRIDAY, December 3d, 1736. At six the pilot came on board. It was with much difficulty we got down into his boat. The sea was so rough, that nothing less than our late series of deliverances could have supported our confidence. In half an hour we reached the shore. I knelt down, and blessed the Hand that had conducted me through such inextricable mazes ; and desired I might give up my country again to God, when He should require.

Zouberbuhler appeared full of gratitude to God, and affection to me. We all adjourned to an inn. Zouberbuhler

and I walked to bespeak a coach. I joined with the passengers in an hearty thanksgiving for our safe arrival.

Between ten and eleven we set out in the coach ; and by three reached Canterbury ; and by ten Sittingbourne. I had intended to lie with Zouerbuhler ; but upon an intimation from him, went and lay with Appee, to hinder his having a different kind of bedfellow.

Sat., December 4th. Appee was so very grievous to us, that not only I, but all the passengers, resolved this should be the last day of their acquaintance. At six in the evening we came safe to London. I immediately took coach for Charles Rivington's, leaving my friend Appee, who promised to come next day, and pay me what he owed me.

My namesake was much rejoiced to see me, and gave me great cause of rejoicing by his account of our Oxford friends.

Sun., December 5th. I received comfort with the sacrament at St. Paul's ; and from thence went to Mr. Towers, who received me with great affection ; and heartily congratulated me on my arrival, which my friends had long despaired of. He told me the agreeable news of Mr. Ogleshorpe's being expected daily.

The next I waited upon was good old Sir John Philips, who received me as one alive from the dead. Here I heard a most blessed account of our friends at Oxford ; their increase, both in zeal and number. I then hastened to Mr. Vernon, to deliver my letters. He received me very affectionately, and pressed me to live with him during my stay in London.

While we were talking, young Hutton called, having traced me thither, in order to carry me home with him. We took coach for my good old friend and host, his father. I entered with fear and trembling. My reception was such as I expected from a family that entirely loved me, but had given me over for dead, and bewailed me as their own child. A Captain had told them that fifty per cent. assurance had been refused for Indivine's ship ; and a report was spread abroad that she had been seen sink to the bottom.

The motion of the stage and hackney coaches occasioned the return of my flux, which prevents my preaching or talking to my admirers. Many such I have gained by Mr.

Ingham's magnificent Journal. My brother's Journal, too, (the last I hope will ever be sent hither,) is in every one's hands.

*Libeat modò vivere, fient,
Fient ista palàm, cupient et in acta referri.*

Mon., December 6th. I spent an hour at my uncle's, equally welcome and unexpected. They informed me my brother Hall was gone to a curacy, very melancholy, and impatient at the mention of Georgia; and that my sister Keszzy was gone to live with him.

Serpentes avibus geminetur, tigribus agnæ.

I waited upon Mr. Hutchinson, who soon fell upon the controverted points. Here also I had an invitation to make his house my home.

Tues., December 7th. I called in the morning on Charles Rivington, who gave me letters and a Journal from my brother in Georgia. After leaving my Secretary's book with Mr. Towers, I waited upon the Bishop of London. In the ante-chamber I began his Journal, and read it through without either surprise or impatience. His dropping my fatal letter, I hope will convince him of what I never could,—his own great carelessness; and the sufferings *that* brought upon him, of his inimitable blindness. His simplicity in telling what and who were meant by the two Greek words, was "outdoing his own outdoings." Surely all this will be sufficient to teach him a little of the wisdom of the serpent, of which he seems as utterly void, as his dear friend Mrs. H. is of the innocency of the dove.

In the midst of these reflections I was called in, to deliver my letters. His Lordship desired me to come next morning, having much to say to me. I drove to Colonel Bladen, who was from home: then to Mr. Pendarvis's, where we passed an agreeable hour, in mutual accounts of our friends in England and America.

I returned to Mr. Hutton, where Dr. Hales, one of our Trustees, came to see me. Much discourse we had of Georgia, particularly of Miss Bovey's death, and my brother's persecutions among that stiff-necked people. He seems a truly pious, humble Christian, full of zeal for God, and love to man.

Wed., December 8th. I waited on Colonel Bladen; and

then on the Bishop, who asked abundance of curious questions, not worth remembering.

In the evening I obeyed a summons from my Lord Egmont, and gave him, as I did all I came to the speech of, a true account of the case between Georgia and Carolina.

Thur., December 9th. I called on Mr. Towers, who desired me by all means to go home, and keep there, whoever sent for me ; promising, if he had any business, he would come to me. I took his advice, and kept my chamber some days, which, with Dr. Cockburn's electuary, almost perfectly recovered me.

Sat., December 11th. Mr. Brig and Cutler called, and informed me Captain Corney was heartily frightened by hearing on all sides Appee's real character ; that he gave over for lost the money he had lent him, as well as that for passage and provisions.

Contrary to my Doctor's advice, I ventured out, Sunday, December 12th, to the sacrament in Duke-street. Mrs. Rhodes challenged me after the service with, "I am glad to see you. I hope you go back again to Georgia."

In the evening a multitude came, and went ; most to inquire of their friends or relations in Georgia. I sent them away advocates for the colony.

Wed., December 15th. About noon I waited upon the Trustees, at the office. It put me past all patience to hear they were reading Mr. Ingham's and my brother's Journals. I was called in, and delivered my letters for the Trustees. Lord Carpenter, being in the chair, desired me to speak that all the gentlemen might hear me. Mr. Towers interposed, and told them I was so weakened by my illness, that I could not speak aloud ; and desired me to deliver my papers one by one, to be read by Mr. Virelst. At dinner they fell into discourse about the Missioners, whom as yet they mightily commend, and wish for more of them ; as that their Journals might be forthwith printed, that the world might receive the benefit of their labours.

Thur., December 16th. I was extremely sick in the night, and by morning my flux returned.

Sat., December 18th. I began my twenty-seventh year in a murmuring, discontented spirit ; reading over and over the third of Job.

Tues., December 21st. I dined at my uncle's,* who bestowed abundance of wit on my brother, and his apostolical project. He told me, the French, if they had any remarkably dull fellow among them, sent him to convert the Indians. I checked his eloquence by those lines of my brother :—

“ To distant realms the' Apostle need not roam,
Darkness, alas ! and Heathens are at home.”

He made no reply ; and I heard no more of my brother's apostleship.

Wed., December 22d. I received a letter from Mr. Whitefield, offering himself to go to Georgia.

Thur., December 23d. I had a long conference with Lord Fitzwalter concerning Georgia. In the afternoon my old Captain's owners came to desire me to testify the treatment I had received, for which reason I would not proceed [to England] with Indivine. This I promised with Zouberbuhler, if there should be occasion.

Sun., December 26th. I called upon my Doctor, and was well chid for so doing. He told me that if I had not had a constitution of iron, I could not have held out so long ; that he could do nothing for me, unless I would keep my chamber ; through want of which I had undone all he had been doing, and had all to begin anew.

Wed., December 29th. I called on Zouberbuhler, who gave me the poor Purisburgers' case to read ; an eternal monument of Carolina's infamous breach of faith. Soon after Mr. Lynn, his landlord, came in, and entertained us with some of Mr. Appee's adventures ; who, when he came from Surinam, where he had gained away a plantation his father gave him, was reduced to the last extremity, and taken in, naked and starving, by one Mr. Legg, who was quickly forced to turn him out again, for offering violence to a lady in her family.

Cedite Germani latrones, cedite Galli.

He has not studied Gil Blas for nothing (his inseparable companion throughout our voyage). As to his boasts, a specimen Mr. Lynn helped me to, may serve for all. “ I

* Mr. Matthew Wesley, who brought up Mrs. Hall.—EDIT.

wish that dear man, Mr. Oglethorpe, would return. I am impatient to see him : but he is even with me. How would he throw open his arms to embrace me ! We were always like two brothers. He could never be without me. We were constant bedfellows. Many an expedition have we made together ; though, in faith, I had work enough of it as his Secretary. What belonged to one, belonged to the other. He took a fancy to a gold watch of mine. I gave it him that instant. It cost me indeed twenty guineas ; but that is a trifle between friends."

Thur., December 30th. I waited upon the Bishop of London for some papers I had left with him, concerning the state of the colony. Some effect they seemed to have had ; for he appeared less reserved than I have ever seen him. I took the opportunity to recommend Mr. Chicheley for orders ; and he said, "He should give in his name to the Society, in the list of Missionaries."

Mon., January 3d, 1737. In the evening Mr. Zouberbuhler brought Captain Corney to see me ; from whom I received the following narration :—

"I was walking with an officer last night, when, in the Strand, I met Mr. Appee ; the gentleman I had been two days in quest of. I let him pass, to try if he would take any notice of me ; but finding he would not, I called after him. He turned, ran to me, and embraced me with,—

"APPEE.—'Dear Captain Corney, I am overjoyed to see you. It is my great misfortune that I could not do it sooner ; but I have been so extremely ill, and have such a multitude of business upon my hands, and of such consequence, as made it impossible.'

"CAPTAIN.—'I did hope indeed to have seen you in these three weeks.'

"A.—'But, dear Sir, you cannot conceive the load I have had upon me ! What endless business of this Georgia ! and all at this end of the town.'

"C.—'Well, since I have had the good fortune to meet you at last, we must take a glass of wine together.'

"A.—'That would be to me the greatest pleasure in life ; but I am going home in all haste to dress, being forced abroad by business of the last importance.'

"C.—'Nay, but you shall bestow one half-hour upon

me and my friend, since we have had the happiness of meeting you.’”

With much ado he got him into the next tavern, and after some indifferent questions mentioned his promise to freight the ship, “which is now clear,” said he, “and ready for the Georgia passengers.”

“A.—‘That is the very thing I wanted to talk with you about. I look for Mr. Oglethorpe every hour; and as soon as ever he arrives, the business shall be done. You may depend upon it; for I can do anything with him.’”

“C.—‘Sir, I am infinitely obliged to you; but in the mean while I must pay off my men, and re-fit my ship, which you know has suffered much in the passage. This will stand me in a good deal of money; and therefore I should be glad to settle that small account betwixt us.’”

“A.—‘It was the very thing I was just going to mention,—though it grieves me too,—surely I am the most unfortunate man breathing! Such disappointments and losses on all hands since my arrival!—my father’s failing! my mother’s death! my dear friend Mr. Oglethorpe’s delay!—that really I am afraid it will be some days before I pay you.’”

The Captain tried some time if he could not recover his money; but finding nothing was to be got by fair means, at last told the officer, that was the man; and bade him do his duty. Appee started up and cried, “I hope, Captain, you are not in earnest! He is not really an officer!” “Hands spake for Casca;” and the catchpole told him he was his prisoner; offering to read him his writ. Appee declined it, telling him he understood those things; and immediately fell to his entreaties; told the Captain what an esteem he had for him; how he had everywhere extolled his honour, his good nature, and generosity; conjured him by their past friendship to release him directly, “otherwise,” says he, “Mr. Wesley will hear of it, and bring his action for *his* money, which, with your debt, is all I owe in the world.”

The Captain replied, he had no intention to hurt him, but only to get his own money; (a mere trifle for Mr. Oglethorpe’s Secretary to pay!) or, to be sure, his father would lay it down for him, the moment he heard of his confinement.

"A.—'I assure you, Captain, if one shilling would set me free, I have not a relation in the world that would advance it for me.'

"C.—'Why, then, I find you have behaved yourself as scurvily toward them as you have toward me. In the ship you was an agent, a secretary, a statesman ; but on shore I perceive you are a bite, and a scoundrel ; and as such I will use you.'

"A.—'For God's sake, dear Captain, have pity upon me. I will give you all I have ; five pounds in money, my clothes, watch, buckles, sword, snuff-box, and hat.

"C.—'Sir, I scorn to take a gentleman's clothes ; for such you passed upon me : and had you sent me a single line, with, *Here are three or four guineas for you, Corney, and I will pay the rest when I am able*, I would never have given you or myself any farther trouble about it. But your design, from the beginning, was to cheat me ; and I shall therefore make an example of you. In Boston, when I would have had you lay in less wine, you told me, What signified forty pounds New-England money ? Truly not much to you, who intended me to pay it. But how could you be so base, when I had laid in your provisions, and lent you money, to rob me of the three pounds for the letters ?' His answer to the last indictment was plainly,

"A.—'Necessity has no law.'

"C.—'None but an experienced rogue could have made such an answer. You thought me a soft, silly fellow, and was therefore resolved to skin me : but now you shall answer for all.'

"A.—'Have patience with me till Mr. Oglethorpe comes ; you shall then have your freight of passengers, and money both. You may be sure of it ; for I can have of him what money I please.'

"C.—'I do not believe a word of it. Did Mr. Oglethorpe see you in a gaol, he would leave you there to condign punishment.'

"A.—'O, how can you think so, when I have so often told you how intimate we are, and on what important affairs he sent me to England ? It is not my liberty I value ; for that he will restore me to, the moment he hears of my confinement ; but I fear I shall lose his good opinion.'

"C.—'I do not believe you ever had it ; or that he sent you hither for any other reason, but to get rid of a vagrant, that would else corrupt his colony. If you can pay me my money, do ; or I must leave you to justice.'

"A.—'Take my clothes in part of payment. I will give you my note for the remainder of the debt.'

"C.—'Would you give me your note for the whole twenty-two pounds, I would sell it the first man that would give me sixpence for it.'"

The Captain continuing inexorable, Appee cried like a child : upon which he asked him how he could behave so abjectly, who had scorned on board to own himself in any danger, (as soon as it was past,) "when I myself," said he, "had little hopes of our escaping?"

"A.—'O, Sir, imprisonment, or death itself, is nothing to me ; but the loss of so dear a friend as Mr. Oglethorpe ! this is what sits so heavy at my heart. But I hope you will not be so cruel as to rob me of him.'

"C.—'I shall be so just to myself, and the world, as to expose a common cheat, who lives upon the public, and lays all honest men, that do not know him, under contribution.'"

Saturday following the Captain was prevailed upon by a friend of Appee, (now in Newgate,) to go hear if he had anything farther to propose. He began very oratorically ; could not blame the Captain for what he had done, but forgave him from his heart, and had still the utmost esteem and affection for him : always said, "Captain Corney was a good-natured man, and a gentleman ;" was sure, therefore, he would not ruin a poor young fellow, who was rising in the world, and on the very point of making his fortune. He then began casting up the worth of his snuff-box, &c. His sword he valued at seven pounds, his bureau at four.

"C.—'That bureau, Mr. Wesley told me, was a lady's in London.'

"A.—'Why, that is very true. I had really forgot it. However, a guinea I may ask her for the freight.'

"C.—'Sir, you talk like what you are. I expected when you sent for me, your father had supplied you with money to pay me.'

"A.—'I assure you, once more, was I now going to be

hanged, my father would not give a single shilling to save me from the gallows.'

"C.—'You give a fine account of yourself, and perfectly consistent with that you gave at Boston. Is it fit that such an one as you should be suffered any longer to impose upon honest people? It is well you are at the end of your rogueries.'

"A.—'I had a suspicion that you had laid a trap for me at Zouberbuhler's; but I was too wise to be caught there.'

"C.—'It is full as well that I have caught you here. You have been so ungrateful a scoundrel to me, that I was resolved to spend a little more money upon you.'

"A.—'I deserve it for a blockhead as I am, for not putting myself, as I intended, under the court of the green cloth.'

"C.—'Why, what a precious rogue you describe yourself! Can you, after this, expect any favour from me?'

"A.—'I hope you will not take it ill, if I take the benefit of the Act, through which I can come out next term.'

"C.—'O, not at all, Sir. Take the benefit of the Act, by all means. I would do so myself, was I in your place. But when you are ready to come out, I will give you your keeping there for one half-year longer.'

Here Appee's friend, Mr. Joy, told him, "You have used the Captain so villainously, that I am ashamed to have had any dealings with you. I cannot say one word against his resolution; and desire you would never send or write to me again, or to any of your friends; for we wash our hands of you, and from this hour shall think of you no more."

With this speech he left him, and, walking with the Captain, observed, what a poor unhappy young fellow he was. "That shipwreck of his, in particular, was as unfortunate an accident as one shall hear of." "What shipwreck?" says the Captain. "Why, in his passage from Carolina. Have not you heard of it?" "No," replied he, "nor anybody else." "He told me," says Joy, "that the ship ran upon the rocks, and all the men were lost, but the Boatswain, a boy, and himself; that as he clung upon the rock, a sea came, and washed him off, dashing him upon

another rock, with such violence, that it broke his skull, a tooth, and three of his ribs ; so that it cost him no less than ten guineas to the surgeon."

This account I made the Captain repeat two or three times, and took it down from him in shorthand. I asked what gave him the first suspicion of Appee's knavery. He answered, that when the searchers had opened his bureau, he saw several letters Appee had broke open, and a memorandum of nine hundred pounds currency he had taken up at Charlestown, upon (as he suspected) a forged bill of exchange.

Fri., January 7th. The news was brought of Mr. Oglethorpe's arrival. The next day I waited on him, and received a relation of his wonderful deliverance in the Bristol Channel. The people of Carolina, he told me, were quite mad, had hired men to murder the Indians,—the Spaniards,—had burned Augusta, &c. He then inquired about Appee. I gave him some little account of his misbehaviour, together with an extract of my Journal. He seemed sorry he had ever employed him ; talked admirably of resignation ; and the impossibility of dying when it is not best.

Sun., January 9th. I saw him again with Mr. Towers. He told me he had read my Journal, which was writ with a great deal of spirit. I replied, all I could answer for was, that it was writ with a great deal of truth.

Thur., January 13th. I met Mr. Gershom at Mr. Oglethorpe's. He told me of Appee's cheating D——, a poor drunken P——, of his gold watch. Mr. Oglethorpe acquainted me, that he had been sent to again by Appee, in Newgate. Upon my expressing pity for him, he added, "I can do nothing. He has tied my hands. If I released him, it would confirm all his lies. We are such dear friends, that I must even leave him where he is."

Wed., January 19th. Count Zinzendorf, just arrived from Germany, sent for me. When I came, he saluted me with all possible affection, and made me promise to call every day. From him I went to the Bishop of Oxford, where I met with an equally kind reception. He desired me to come as often as I could, without farther ceremony or invitation.

We had much talk of the state of religion, and of Count

Zinzendorf's intended visit. Their Bishops he acknowledged to have the true succession.

Thur., January 29th. I wrote and delivered my own state in a letter to the Count. He sent me to Mr. Oglethorpe, who talked much of the mischief of private journals, all which ought to be published, or never sent. A letter from my brother he read; and argued, I could not but think the writer much too free, too bold, too credulous.

Sat., January 22d. I called upon Mrs. Pendarvis, while she was reading a letter of my being dead. Happy for me, had the news been true! What a world of misery would it save me!

In the afternoon I was overjoyed to meet at M. Essen's my old friend M. G.

Sun., January 23d. I met Bishop Nitschman at the Count's, and was introduced to the Countess: a woman of great seriousness and sweetness. I was present at their public service, and thought myself in a quire of angels.

Tues., January 25th. I paid a visit to Dr. Hales, in the country.*

* Dr. Stephen Hales was one of the Trustees for the colony of Georgia. He was a Clergyman of the Church of England; but much more distinguished as a natural philosopher than a Divine; although his scientific studies were directed to humane and benevolent purposes, and were therefore strictly compatible with the sacred office which he sustained. This very ingenious man was born Sept. 7th, 1677; and was educated at the University of Cambridge, where he had, as his friend and companion, the celebrated antiquary, Dr. Stukeley. The University of Oxford conferred upon him the degree of D.D. He held the living of Portlock in Somersetshire, and that of Farringdon in Hampshire, with the perpetual curacy of Teddington, near Twickenham, in Middlesex, where he resided, and was visited by persons of rank and science, who sought his society; among whom was Frederick Prince of Wales, to whose widow, the Princess Dowager, Dr. Hales was made Clerk of the Closet. He refused a canonry of Wind-or, that he might devote himself to his parochial duties, and scientific pursuits. Having long and successfully studied and laboured for the benefit of mankind, he died at Teddington, Jan. 4th, 1761, at the advanced age of eighty-four years; and his remains were buried in the church of that village, where he had officiated. A handsome monument to his memory was erected by the Princess Dowager of Wales, in Westminster Abbey, near that of Handel. Dr. Hales's principal publication is entitled, "Vegetable Staticks," with plates, in two volumes, 8vo.; a work which was formerly much read, and passed through several editions.

Wed., January 26th. We took a walk to see Mr. Pope's house and gardens ; justly called a burlesque upon human greatness. I was sensibly affected with the plain Latin sentence upon the obelisk, in memory of his mother : *Ah, Editha ! matrum optima, mulierum amantissima, vale !* How far superior to the most laboured elegy that he, or Prior himself, could have composed !

Sun., January 30th. At St. Martin's I heard an excellent sermon by Dr. Trapp, on, "In your patience possess ye (or be ye master of) your souls ;" proving the miserable slavery of the passions.

Tues., February 1st. I was again with the Bishop of Oxford, and told him the Bishop of London had declined having anything to do with Georgia ; and said it belonged to the Archbishop only to unite the Moravians with us. He replied, it was the Bishop of London's proper office ; but bade me assure the Count, we should acknowledge the Moravians as our brethren, and one Church with our own.

Wed., February 2d. Mr. Oglethorpe told me, Appee, released from prison, desired to meet me at his house. The next morning I waited there some hours, to confront him ; but no Appee appeared.

At nine I was with the Count, who seemed resolved to carry his people from Georgia, if they might not be permitted to preach to the Indians. He much pressed me to go with him to Germany ; which I am very willing to do, if I can get clear of the Trustees.

Sun., February 6th. I had much conversation with the Count. Some of his words were, "The Christian cannot yield to sin ; cannot long fight against it ; but must conquer it, if he will." Speaking of his own case, he said, he and a lady were in love with each other ; till, finding something of nature, he resolved to renounce her ; which he did, and persuaded her to accept of his friend. "From that moment," said he, "I was freed from all self-seeking ; so that for ten years past I have not done my own will in anything, great or small. My own will is hell to me. I can just now renounce my dearest friend, without the least

It was also translated into the French, Italian, German, and Dutch languages. A curious and valuable extract from it will be found in Dr. Adam Clarke's Commentary on Gen. iii. 18.—EDIT.

reluctance, if God require it." He kissed and blessed me at parting.

Mon., February 7th. Before I set out for Oxford I called upon the Count, and desired his prayers. He commended himself to our friends there ; and promised, if any of them would write to him, or the Brethren, they would answer them.

Tues., February 8th. I came to Oxford, and took up my lodgings with Mr. Sarney. In the evening I met and encouraged our friends by the Count's and the Moravians' example. Mr. Kinchin I found changed into a courageous soldier of Christ. I read them my brother's Journal.

Wed., February 9th. I met and accompanied my friend Horne to the Convocation, where we carried the election (I came down about) for Mr. Bromley, our old member, three hundred and thirty-nine, against one hundred and twenty-six.

I visited my old friends at the castle, and found honest Thomas Waite still a prisoner there. Mrs. Topping was gone where the prisoners rest together, and hear not the voice of the oppressor. Returning, I called at the Blue Posts, and found my old pupil, Robert Kirkham. We spent the evening, as before, in mutual exhortation.

Thur., February 10th. I talked with some of my old proselytes in College : paid my respects to the Dean, and met with a sharp expostulation for voting against him (as he called it). In an hour we came to a right understanding, and parted friends.

I dined with Mr. Woods, of Abingdon : the same kind friendly man he was. In the evening I saw Mr. Carter and Banny Kirkham, and laboured to awaken one, and confirm the other. At Mr. Sarney's I found good Mr. Gambold, and Kinchin.

Fri., February 11th. I exhorted poor languid Smith, and then Carter, to resume all their rules of holy living. In the afternoon I was with the Rector of Lincoln, who received me very affectionately.

Sat., February 12th. By nine at night I got back to the Count in London ; and consulted him about my journey to Germany.

Tues., February 15th. I told Mr. Oglethorpe of my de-

sire of returning with him to Georgia, if I could be of any use there as a Clergyman ; but as to my Secretary's place, I begged him to tell me where, when, and how, I should resign it. He bade me think what I did ; and when I had well considered the matter, he would talk with me farther.

Fri., February 18th. In walking to St. Martin's, I met my dearest friend Appee, who accosted me with inimitable assurance, and asked where he might meet me. I appointed Mr. Oglethorpe's, the next morning.

Sat., February 19th. I waited on Mr. Oglethorpe, with no great expectation of Appee. He was too wary to keep his appointment.

Sun., February 20th. Being to set out the next day for Tiverton, I went to take my leave of the Count, who invited me again to Germany, bade me not despair, and dismissed me with his blessing. My last words were, *Sit pax vobiscum* : to which he replied, *Et cum spiritu tuo*.

Mon., February 21st. I came in the coach to Reading ; and the next evening to Marlborough, where I found horses my brother Hall had sent to bring me to Wootton. With him and my sisters, Patt and Kez, I stayed till

Mon., February 28th ; and then took horse for Bath ; the next day I got to Wellington ; and,

Wed., March 2d, in the morning reached Tiverton. I ran up stairs to my sister, who received me with tears of joy. I saw Phill next, and last my brother, who seemed at least as well as when he left me at London, three years before. I went to comfort my mother, indisposed in her chamber.

Tues., March 8th. I took horse, and on Thursday afternoon got back again to Wootton.

Tues., March 15th. I set out for London, in the Marlborough coach, which had been robbed morning and evening, for four days before. This fifth morning we passed unmolested. Scarce was I got to town, when they fell to robbing again.

Thur., March 17th. At Mrs. Pendarvis's I found M. G., and her brother, who pressed me to bear him company to Mickleton.

Tues., March 22d. I set out at three in the Oxford coach with Mr. Gr., and his sister, and Mr. Dews.

Wed., March 23d. I was much moved at hearing Mr. Gambold's history of my brother.

Thur., March 24th. Our company set out again for Mickleton ; which we reached by night. We passed the time agreeably enough in walking, conversing, and reading.

Wed., March 30th. I rode over to Stanton, where they were all overjoyed to see me ; especially my first of friends, Varanes.

Wed., April 6th. I had some conversation with M. G. about the fewness of those that are saved. How little is she advanced in the school of Christ, who is not convinced of this truth !

Sat., April 9th. In the evening I had the satisfaction of seeing Mr. Gr. much affected with a chapter he had been reading of Mr. Law. He desired his sister might hear it. I read it a second time, and took that opportunity of pressing upon him a daily retirement.

Thur., April 28th. I took horse with Mr. Gr. and Dews. The former left us at Compton, and we rode on towards Spilsbury.

Sat., April 30th. I got back to Mr. Sarney's, weary and faint, and in a fever, through want of sleep.

Mon., May 2d. Between one and two in the morning, I betook myself to my usual bed, the floor. Charles Gr. breakfasted with me, and owned with tears, he had never felt any true joy but in religion. I earnestly recommended Law to him.

At noon I visited Mr. Gambold, right glad to see me. I found him much cheerfuller than usual : his sister just the same. In the afternoon I talked with the prisoners ; very attentive : with the Dean ; very kind and friendly.

Tues., May 3d. At two Mr. Sarney rose to pray for me. I rose too, and set out for London, which I reached in a few hours.

Thur., May 5th. I met Virelst and Counsel at Mr. Oglethorpe's, about the hearing they are shortly to have before the Board of Trade. When they were gone, Mr. Oglethorpe said, if the Government had dropped Georgia, he would not let the poor people perish, but sell his estate, which he could do for £45,000, and support them upon the interest.

Fri., May 20th. At her desire, I waited upon Lady Betty Hastings. Her inquiries about Georgia were interrupted by the Bishop of Gloucester's coming.

Sat., May 21st. I rode out of town to meet my brother and sister from Tiverton, and attended them to Mr. Powel's.

Mon., May 30th. I carried my brother to the good Archbishop, who received us very kindly.

Wed., June 1st. I accepted an invitation from Mrs. Benson, and rode down to Cheshunt Nunnery. Miss Kitty and Mrs. Johnson were there before me. I was much delighted both with the place and company. After dinner I missed my letter-book, and rode back to town, seeking it in vain. By seven next morning I was at the Nunnery again; and returned to London in the afternoon.

Fri., June 3d. Between six and seven this evening I took horse for Cheshunt, eighteen miles from London; got there by nine; and the next morning rode eighteen miles farther, to Hatfield, to see my sister Nancy. In the afternoon I returned to the Nunnery.

Trinity Sunday, June 5th. We all went in an hired coach to Warmley; where I preached "Few saved;" and was pleased to see the family stay the unexpected sacrament. In the evening I rode back to town.

Mon., June 6th. At ten we were again before the Board of Trade. Till twelve Carolina side was heard. Then our Counsel (confused enough) was heard for Georgia.

Wed., June 8th. I made affidavit in Chancery-Lane, as to what I knew relating to Georgia. At one I called upon my uncle, and found him exceeding ill.

Thur., June 9th. At the Board, part of our Charter and Acts were read, &c. I declared upon oath, that all the traders licensed were supposed to be within Georgia. After my affidavit was read, Murray made our defence; but so little to Mr. Oglethorpe's satisfaction, that he started up, and ran out. I dined with my brother at Lord Oxford's. Lady Oxford, Lord Duplin, and the famed Lady Mary, were of the company.

Sat., June 11th. I found my uncle dying. He pressed my hand, showed much natural affection, and bade me

give his love to his sister. I spent the evening at Cheshunt, in reading Mr. Law to the family,—my usual employment there.

Sunday evening. I heard that my uncle died, a little after I left him.

Mon., June 13th. I waited on my brother and sister a little way on their road to Tiverton.

On Wednesday I breakfasted at the Nunnery.

On Thursday night I attended my uncle to his grave.

Fri., June 17th. I heard the last of my friend Appee's adventures here, from one Mr. Laba, a cutler; from whom he had just stole a watch, and run away with it to Paris.

Sat., June 18th. I was before the Board of Trade for the last time, to hear Carolina's reply to Georgia. I spent the rest of the month between Cheshunt and Hatfield.

Sat., July 2d. I was at the Nunnery; and the next day preached at Hatfield. I slept at Cheshunt.

Mon., July 4th. In the evening I set out for Oxford. I came thither the next day, where James Hutton had got before me. In the evening young Gr. came to me at Sarney's, in an excellent temper. I encouraged him to go on in the narrow way; and strongly recommended stated hours of retirement.

Thur., July 7th. I pressed the same upon poor Smith, in our walk to Mr. Gambold's, where I found my sister Kezzy. I got back to dinner with Lady Cox and her sisters. In the evening Gr. told me, that on this day he first felt the beginnings of the change; and was convinced of the reality of what he only believed before upon my brother's and my testimony. He appeared full of joy and love.

Sat., July 9th. I set out with James, for Wootton. Quite spent, I laid me down, and slept for a quarter of an hour upon the ground. By two we reached Marlborough, and by four, Wootton. My mother was lately come thither from Tiverton.

Mon., July 11th. Meeting Ch. at Bath, we could get no farther. He carried us to see the quarries; where I narrowly missed being dashed to pieces. On Wednesday, July 13th, we came safe to Tiverton.

Sat., July 23d, and Sun., 24th, at Wootton. Days never to be forgot!

Mon., July 25th. I heard at Oxford that Charles Graves had been carried away by his friends, as stark mad.

Thur., July 28th. I spied Robinson and Bateley in the long-walk, and crossed over to speak with them. They fell upon me unawares, desiring me to take some of the Cowley saints to Georgia; charged the Methodists with intrusion, schism, and bringing neglect upon the ministry. We differed *toto cælo*. I left them with, "Remember, you will be of my mind when you come to die."

Fri., July 29th. We set out for London, with Mr. Morgan and Mr. Kinchin; and on

Sat., July 30th, finished our travels at College-street, where I had the satisfaction of finding my old hearty friend, Benjamin Ingham.

Mon., August 1st. I read Mr. Oglethorpe my brother's letter to the Trustees, charging Horton with raising a scandalous report about me. He would not advise one way or the other: which I interpreted as a dissuasive, and therefore took no further notice of the matter.

Wed., August 17th. After spending some time at Hatfield, I set out with my brother Lambert, for London. At Epping he went back, full of good resolutions.

Thur., August 18th. Hearing that Mrs. Delamotte was now in town, I went to see her. We fell into discourse upon resignation; and she seemed resolved to acquiesce in the will of God, detaining her Isaac from her.

Sun., August 21st. I took horse again for Hatfield; read prayers, and preached at Wormley; called on Dr. Nichols, and rode on. My brother I left on the 24th, in excellent temper. I called and dined at Dr. Newton's.

Thur., August 25th. After giving the sacrament to a sick woman, I breakfasted with Mr. Chadwick. We had some close talk about the new birth, with which he was greatly moved. I took the opportunity of recommending regular retirement, and religious acquaintance. I preached at Ludgate, dined with M. Musgrave, and called in the afternoon at Mrs. Delamotte's. The Cambridge youth was there; but we had no very useful conversation.

Fri., August 26th. I waited upon His Majesty at Hampton Court, with the Oxford Address, by the advice of Mr. Potter. The Archbishop told me he was glad to see me

there. We kissed their Majesties' hands, and were invited to dinner. I left that, and the company, and hasted back to town. The next day we waited upon His Royal Highness, and dined all together at St. James's.

Wed., August 31st. I talked at large upon my state with Mr. Law, at Putney. The sum of his advice was, "Renounce yourself; and be not impatient."

Fri., September 9th. I consulted Mr. Law a second time, and asked him several questions: "With what comment shall I read the Scriptures?" "None." "What do you think of one who dies unrenewed, while endeavouring after it?" "It concerns neither you to ask, nor me to answer." "Shall I write once more to such a person?" "No." "But I am persuaded it will do him good." "Sir, I have told you my opinion." "Shall I write to you?" "Nothing I can either speak or write, will do you any good."

Sat., September 10th. Calling at Mr. Delamotte's, I found Miss Hetty there, and gave her her brother's letter. We soon fell into talk about the new birth. She lamented her not being acquainted with me sooner; and that she could not be in the country now I was going thither. I walked back to Charles Rivington's, and fetched her Mr. Law; and then took coach for Eltham and Blendon. My friend Benjamin had been there before me, and met with such a reception as encouraged me to follow. He had preached to them with power; and still more powerfully by his life and conversation. The eldest sister, and Cambridge scholar, were struck to the heart. The first evening passed in discourse of my namesake in America.

Sun., September 11th. I preached the one thing needful: had some serious talk with Miss Betsy, and read to Mrs. Delamotte part of my Journal, relating to their intended visitant, Appee.

Mon., September 12th. I returned to town, and spent an hour with Hetty, in discoursing on the inward change, and reading Law. She received all his sayings with the utmost readiness.

Tues., September 13th. I went again to my simple Hetty, to learn some of her humility. Her convictions were much deepened by my reading the Life of God in the

Soul of Man. I took my leave, and set out for Oxford, by way of Windsor, and Mr. Thorold's.

Thur., September 15th. I rose (at Sarney's) with earnest desires of resigning myself up entirely to God. I had the satisfaction of seeing an excellent letter from young Gr. in the country.

Fri., September 16th. I walked over with Mr. Gambold to Stanton-Harcourt. After much talk of their states, we agreed, that I should not speak at all to my sister on religion, but fully to his.

Calling accidentally in the evening at my sister Kezia's room, she fell upon my neck, and in a flood of tears begged me to pray for her. Seeing her so softened, I did not know but this might be her time, and sat down. She anticipated me, by saying she had felt here what she never felt before, and believed now there was such a thing as the new creature. She was full of earnest wishes for divine love; owned there was a depth in religion she had never fathomed; that she was not, but longed to be, converted; would give up all to obtain the love of God: renewed her request with great vehemence that I would pray for her; often repeating, "I am weak, I am exceeding weak." I prayed over her, and blessed God from my heart; then used Pascal's prayer for conversion, with which she was much affected, and begged me to write it out for her. After supper, (at which I could not eat for joy,) I read Mr. Law's account of Redemption. She was greatly moved, full of tears and sighs, and eagerness for more. Poor Mrs. Gambold was quite unaffected: her time being not yet come.

Sat., September 17th. I prayed with Kez., still in the same temper; convinced all her misery had proceeded from her not loving God.

This morning Mr. Wells, of Jesus College, came in. I took occasion to mention Mr. Law on the Redemption; read part of it, and rejoiced in his so cordially joining us.

Sun., September 18th. I preached at the Castle, and gave the sacrament to threescore communicants. In the afternoon at Stanton-Harcourt. I was continually called upon by Kez., to pray with her. We supped at Mr. Bounel's.

Wed., September 21st. I rejoiced to hear at Oxford, that Graves was returned from his friends unshaken. At night he came in, (to Sarney's,) fell upon my neck, and burst into tears. It is hard to say, whether his friends' hatred, or his love, of me exceeds.

Thur., September 22d. I breakfasted with Mr. Rock at Nuneham; and dined at Maple-Durham with Mr. Burton. Next morning I got to Mr. Thorold's, at Windsor; and in two hours to London. But my hard riding had nearly occasioned my being apprehended for an highwayman.

Sat., September 24th. At twelve I set out for Blendon. Passing Mr. Delamotte's, I was minded to call, though they were all out of town. Contrary to my expectation, I found Hetty left behind. We passed two hours in conference and prayer. Two hours afterwards I was with her again, and read Scougal on "Few saved." She was quite melted down, and, after a prayer for love, said, "God knows my heart: I do desire nothing but Him."

Sun., September 25th. I met her at the sacrament in Crooked-Lane; and endeavoured to prepare her for persecution, which all must suffer who will live godly in Christ Jesus.

Tues., September 27th. I rode to Windsor; and next day to Maple-Durham by noon. An hour after I took horse, and quickly lost myself in a wood: but by breaking fences, and leaping ditches, got at last to Dorchester. I lost myself again between that and Nuneham; but soon recovered it, and by night came to honest Mr. Sarney's.

Thur., September 29th. I found Graves and Kezzy still pressing forward. In the afternoon I met Mr. Wells alone, and had some close talk with him upon the new birth, self-renunciation, &c. He confessed reputation was his idol; rejected his own righteousness: convinced, but fearful: longing to break loose. I went with him to the chapel; and afterwards resumed the subject. He seemed on the brink of the new birth.

Sat., October 1st. I prayed by Mr. Carter, who lay a-dying: and by Mrs. Sarney, in the same condition.

Sun., October 2d. I carried Graves to Stanton-Harcourt, where I gave the sacrament, and then preached at Southleigh. In the evening we returned to Oxford.

Mon., October 3d. At six I took horse for Barkswell. A little on this side Banbury my horse threw me, with great violence, over his head, and tumbled after, but not upon me. I rose first, unhurt, except that I sprained my leg. With much wandering through excessive bad roads, by night I got to Mr. Boyse's, quite exhausted.

Tues., October 4th. I waked much refreshed. The family showed me all possible civility, especially dear Susan, for whose sake I had come.

Wed., October 5th. We parted as friends should part. I returned, before night, to Oxford.

Fri., October 7th. I received a letter from James Hutton, summoning me on board in fourteen days.

Sat., October 8th. I endeavoured to fix Kinchin, Sarney, Washington, and Hutchins, in meeting as my brother, &c., used formerly. I rode to Spilsbury, to see my old friend Horn, and returned by night to read Nicodemus at Queen's.

Sun., October 9th. I gave the sacrament, and preached at Southleigh. In the evening at dear Charles's; still growing in humility and love.

Mon., October 10th. Being determined not to leave England till I had come to a full explanation with Dicky Graves, this morning I went to his rooms; talked the whole matter over, and were both entirely satisfied. Then I spoke of my making his brother Charles mad; hoped he himself would be one of those whose life fools count madness; explained the nature of true religion; "no other than what you once laboured after, till the gentleman swallowed up the Christian." He was greatly moved; complained he could not pray. I appealed to him, whether he had not formerly felt more solid pleasure in religion, than in all the caresses of the world. He confessed it, and resolved to return. I earnestly recommended Law, and daily retirement, as my last legacy. "My heart's desire to God for you is, that you may be saved. In a little time, all I can do will be to pray for you: and I hope you will now pray for me, as for a friend, not an enemy." He answered, "That I shall do heartily. I am satisfied you are my sincere friend." We then kissed, and parted—till that day.

Tues., October 11th. I set out for London. In a mile's riding my horse fell lame. I sung the 91st Psalm, and

put myself under the divine protection. I had scarce ended, and turned the hut, on Shotover-Hill, when a man came up to me, and demanded my money, showing, but not presenting, a pistol. I gave him my purse. He asked how much there was. "About thirty shillings." "Have you no more?" "I will see;" put my hand in my pocket, and gave him some halfpence. He repeated the question, "Have you no more?" I had thirty pounds in a private pocket; bade him search himself; which he did not choose. He ordered me to dismount, which I did; but begged hard for my horse again, promising not to pursue him. He took my word, and restored him. I rode gently on, praising God. My bags, and watch, and gold, the robber was *forced* to leave me. By the evening I reached Westminster.

Fri., October 14th. I was informed at the office, that I was to go in three weeks with the Lieutenant-Colonel by way of Gibraltar.

Sun., October 16th. I rode to Blendon, and read S.S. to the two sisters, and prayed with them for conversion. I was employed again in like manner, after the opposers were gone to bed.

Tues., October 18th. Jacky Delamotte and I took horse. Mine fell into a hole; but I kept my seat. His followed, and flung him over his head. Neither was hurt.

Fri., October 28th. I found Miss Betty at Fresh Wharf, and spent an hour or two with her and Jacky. Next morning I was with her alone, and spoke largely of the danger of lukewarmness, and resting in negative goodness. I never saw her so moved before.

Sun., October 30th. I waked them at five, and attended them to Forster-Lane, where we heard Mr. Whitefield, and communicated together. I preached at St. Helen's "the one thing needful." In the afternoon I carried her and her brother to Mr. Chadwick's, (my usual lodgings,) and thence to Ironmonger's-Lane. After preaching the same sermon here, we drank tea at Mr. Chadwick's, and then took coach for College-Street. They were much delighted with the singing there, and edified, I hope, by George Whitefield's example. It was near eleven before I left them at their own house.

Wed., November 2d. I was at the office, and returned the Trustees thanks for the £50 they had lately ordered me, as a Missionary. I dined with them; and they desired me to draw up a scheme for an Orphan-house. The evening I passed at Fresh Wharf: good old Mr. Delamotte was there, and pleased me much by his seeming so heartily to relish our reading Bishop Hall.

Fri., November 4th. I heard an excellent sermon at St. Antholine's, on holiness, or likeness to God; and passed the evening with B. D.; who then told me the reason why I was not sent for to Blendon, was, Mrs. Delamotte's fear of my making Hetty run mad: and when I gave them notice of my coming, she sent her up to town, that I might not see her; which Providence made the means of my having so many hours with her alone.

Sat., November 5th. I met and turned back with Betty, to hear Mr. Whitefield preach, not with the persuasive words of man's wisdom, but with the demonstration of the Spirit and with power. The churches will not contain the multitudes that throng to hear him.

Mon., November 7th. I read over *Pietas Hallensis*; and desired our Orphan-house might be begun in the power of faith.

Thur., November 10th. In obedience to a summons from Miss Betsy this morning, I took coach for Greenwich, and walked the rest of the way to Blendon. We had some animating discourse before Mrs. Delamotte came in. Then we fell into talk of the new birth, which she did not at all relish; but continued still cold, averse, and prejudiced against the truth.

Sun., November 13th. I preached at Bexley, on the love of God. Mrs. Delamotte thanked me for my sermon with tears; owned she had loved Charles too well; and was quite altered in her behaviour towards me. We had farther conversation on the love of God. Mr. Delamotte confessed there could be no happiness in anything else.

Mon., November 14th. Little Molly burst into tears upon my telling her God loved her. The whole family now appear not far from the kingdom of God.

Sun., November 20th. At St. Helen's I preached the circumcision of heart. The next day my flux returned.

Tues., November 22d. Mr. Ogleshorpe advised me to go to Tiverton. I went to take my leave of our friends at Blendon. Mrs. Delamotte was quite open, and not afraid that her son should be called a Methodist.

Fri., November 25th. At M. Hutton's this evening, my brothers Lambert and Wright visited me. The latter has corrupted the former, after all the pains I have taken with him, and brought him back to drinking. I was full, yet could not speak; prayed for meekness, and then set before him the things he had done, in the devil's name, toward re-converting a soul to him. He left us abruptly. I encouraged poor J. Lambert to turn again unto God.

Mon., November 28th. I took coach for Tiverton. The next day I called on my mother in Salisbury. She vehemently protested against our returning to Georgia.

Wed., November 30th. I had much serious conversation with a gentlewoman in the coach, concerning the new birth. I read part of Mr. Law. She was deeply struck, melted, conquered.

Thur., December 1st. We lodged at Dorchester; when my distemper fully returned.

Fri., December 2d. I met horses at Honiton, and by four came to Tiverton; where I found my brother much better.

Sun., December 4th. I was much melted at the sacrament. In the evening I reproved my sister (which I am often forced to do) for evil-speaking.

Thur., December 22d. Quite wearied out by her incessant slanders, to-day I had a downright quarrel with her about it. My brother on these occasions is either silent, or on my side.

Tues., December 27th. I was not sorry to set out for London. I rode as far as Taunton.

Wed., December 28th. In the coach I employed myself mostly in reading Cyrus's Travels, and Leslie's Short Method with the Deists.

Thur., December 29th. We narrowly escaped overturning, through the loss of a wheel. I supped in Salisbury, at my brother Hall's.

Sat., December 31st. I set out at two in the morning, and with the night came to James Hutton's.

Thur., January 5th, 1738. I made frequent visits this month to Blendon, and rejoiced over Mrs. Delamotte, now entirely cordial and friendly. We were joined by Mr. Piers, the Minister of Bexley, who delighted in every opportunity of conversing, singing, and praying with us.

Fri., February 3d. In the afternoon news was brought me at James Hutton's, that my brother was come from America. I could not believe, till at night I saw him. He comes, not driven away, but to tell the true state of the colony; which, according to his account, is truly deplorable.

Sat., February 4th. I informed Mr. Oglethorpe of his arrival. He was very inquisitive into the cause of his coming; said he ought not to have returned without the Trustees' leave. At ten, before the Council, I heard the fresh pleadings for Carolina.

Mon., February 6th. I waited on the good Archbishop, who received me with his usual kindness.

Wed., February 8th. I was with the Trustees, who were surprised by my brother's account of Georgia, the fewness of the people, &c.

Fri., February 10th. We dined at Mr. Vernon's, who accosted me, "Well, Sir, I hope you intend returning to Georgia." I answered, "That is my desire and design." I heard more of the great discouragements the poor people labour under.

Sat., February 11th. I heard Clerk plead for Georgia, before the Council, and Mr. Oglethorpe's speech.

Thur., February 16th. Mr. Oglethorpe told me, "Your brother must have a care. There is a very strong spirit raising against him. People say he is come over to do mischief to the colony. He will be called upon for his reasons, why he left the people." I answered, "Sir, he has been twice before at the Board for that purpose, but was not asked that question, and therefore had no opportunity to answer it. He will attend them again on Wednesday morning." I waited on his Lordship of London, and informed him of my brother's return. He spoke honourably of him; expressed a great desire to see him; asked many questions about Georgia, and the Trustees; forgot his usual reserve, and dismissed me very kindly.

Fri., February 17th. I came in the Oxford coach to my old lodgings at Mr. Sarney's.

Sat., February 18th. I rode over to Stanton-Harcourt, to see John Gambold and my sister. My brother met us. We prayed and sang together. In the evening I prayed at Mr. Sarney's, with some scholars, and a Moravian.

Sun., February 19th. I received the sacrament once more at Christ-church.

Mon., February 20th. I began teaching Peter Böhler English.

Tues., February 21st. In the afternoon I lay down, half distracted with the tooth-ache.

Wed., February 22d. I waked much better. At five I had some close conversation with Peter Böhler, who pressed upon our scholars the necessity of combining, and instanced in many awakened, but fallen asleep again, for want of it. He talked much of the necessity of prayer and faith.

Fri., February 24th. At six in the evening, an hour after I had taken my electuary, the tooth-ache returned more violently than ever. I smoked tobacco; which set me vomiting, and took away my senses and pain together. At eleven I waked in extreme pain, which I thought would quickly separate soul and body. Soon after Peter Böhler came to my bedside. I asked him to pray for me. He seemed unwilling at first, but, beginning very faintly, he raised his voice by degrees, and prayed for my recovery with strange confidence. Then he took me by the hand, and calmly said, "You will not die now." I thought within myself, "I cannot hold out in this pain till morning. If it abates before, I believe I may recover." He asked me, "Do you hope to be saved?" "Yes." "For what reason do you hope it?" "Because I have used my best endeavours to serve God." He shook his head, and said no more. I thought him very uncharitable, saying in my heart, "What, are not my endeavours a sufficient ground of hope? Would he rob me of my endeavours? I have nothing else to trust to."

By the morning my pain was moderated. Ted Bentham, calling, then persuaded me to be blooded. I continued in great pain. In the evening he brought Dr. Manaton.

On Saturday morning I was blooded again ; and at night a third time.

Sun., February 26th. Mr. Wells brought my sister Kezzy. Dr. Fruin came. I dictated a letter to Dr. Cockburn, and James Hutton.

Mon., February 27th. The scale seemed to turn for life. I had prayed that my pains might not outlast this day ; and was answered.

Tues., February 28th. My dear James Hutton came post from London, and brought me Dr. Cockburn's letter and directions. As soon as I was able, I sent my brother at Tiverton the following account :—

“ Dear Brother,—I borrow another's hand, as I cannot use my own. You remember Dr. South's saying [I have been within the jaws of death, but he was not suffered to shut his mouth upon me]. I ought never to forget it. Dr. Manaton told me, he expected to have found me dead at his second visit. This several remarkable accidents concurred to hinder. I had kept in a week before the pleurisy came, and taken physic twice. At midnight it seized me so violently, that I never expected to see the morning. In the preceding afternoon I had taken Dr. Cockburn's electuary, and an hour after was visited by so outrageous a tooth-ache, that it forced me to the abominable remedy of a pipe. This quickly made me discharge my astringent, and, in all probability, saved my life ; binding medicines being poison in a pleuritic fever. I took my illness for the flux, and so never thought of sending for a physician. T. Bentham fetched him against my will, and was probably the instrument of saving my life a second time. Dr. M. called in Dr. Fruin. They bled me three times, and poured down draughts, oils, and apozems without end. For four days the balance was even. Then, as Spenser says,

‘ I over-wrestled my strong enemy.’

Ever since I have been slowly gathering strength ; and yesterday took my first journey to my sister's room, who has been with me from the beginning, and no small comfort to me.

“ One consequence of my sickness you will not be sorry for,—its stopping my sudden return to Georgia. For the

Doctor tells me, to undertake a voyage now would be certain death. Some reasons for *his* not going immediately my brother will mention to you in person.

"Before I was taken ill, my brother set out for Tiverton ; but came back instead of proceeding on his journey ; stayed a week with me ; and then went with Mr. Kinchin to Manchester.

"For some days that I continued mending, I was greatly tormented with the tooth-ache. One day I prayed that the pain might be suspended ; and it was for all that day.

"I had Dr. Fruin to my sister, taken ill. We communicated almost every day."

Tues., March 28th. I was greatly moved in reading the Life of Mr. Halyburton.

Mon., April 3d. By my brother's advice, I resolved to give up my Secretary's place ; and to-day wrote my letter of resignation.

Sat., April 8th. I got abroad to the evening prayers at Christ-church ; and received comfort from the lessons and anthem.

Wed., April 12th. I received Mr. Oglethorpe's answer to my letter of resignation ; wherein he offered, if I would keep my place, to get it supplied in my absence by a deputy.

Sat., April 15th. Drs. Fruin and Manston called, and forbid my voyage. Both as physicians and friends they advised me not to go, but stay at College, since I might, as senior Master, expect offices and preferment.

Wed., April 19th. I came up to town, to take my leave of Mr. Oglethorpe, who received me with his accustomed kindness. The next day I had the satisfaction of once more meeting that man of God, Peter Böhler.

Mon., April 24th. I took a ride to Blendon. In the afternoon we made Mr. Piers a visit ; and, returning, found Mr. Broughton and my brother at Blendon.

Tues., April 25th. Soon after five, as we were met in our little chapel, Mrs. Delamotte came to us. We sang, and fell into a dispute whether conversion was gradual or instantaneous. My brother was very positive for the latter, and very shocking ; mentioned some late instances of gross sinners believing in a moment. I was much offended at his worse than unedifying discourse. Mrs. Delamotte

left us abruptly. I stayed, and insisted, a man need not know when first he had faith. His obstinacy in favouring the contrary opinion drove me at last out of the room. Mr. Broughton was only not so much scandalized as myself. After dinner, he and my brother returned to town. I stayed behind, and read them the Life of Mr. Halyburton : one instance, but only one, of instantaneous conversion.

Wed., April 26th. I passed the day at Mr. Piers's, in singing, and reading, and mutual encouragement. In the evening we finished Halyburton. The meltingness it occasioned in me, (like those before,) soon passed away as a morning cloud. Next morning I returned to London.

Fri., April 28th. No sooner was I got to James Hutton's, having removed my things thither from his father's, than the pain in my side returned, and with that my fever. Having disappointed God in his last visitation, he has now again brought me to the bed of sickness. Towards midnight I received some relief by bleeding. In the morning Dr. Cockburn came to see me ; and a better physician, Peter Böhler, whom God had detained in England for my good. He stood by my bedside, and prayed over me, that now at least I might see the divine intention, in this and my late illness. I immediately thought it might be that I should again consider Böhler's doctrine of faith ; examine myself whether I was in the faith ; and if I was not, never cease seeking and longing after it, till I attained it.

Mon., May 1st. Mr. Piers called to see me. I exhorted him to labour after that faith which he thinks I have, and I know I have not. After receiving the sacrament, I felt a small anticipation of peace, and said, "Now I have demonstration against the Moravian doctrine that a man cannot have peace without assurance of his pardon. I now have peace, yet cannot say of a surety that my sins are forgiven." The next and several times after that I received the sacrament, I had not so much as bare attention, God no longer trusting me with comfort, which I should immediately turn against himself.

For some days following I felt a faint longing for faith ; and could pray for nothing else. My desires were quickened by a letter of Mr. Edmunds, seeking Christ as in an agony.

Sat., May 6th. God still kept up the little spark of desire, which he himself had enkindled in me ; and I seemed determined to speak of, and wish for, nothing but faith in Christ. Yet could not this preserve me from sin ; which I this day ran into with my eyes open : so that after ten years' vain struggling, I own and feel it absolutely unconquerable. By bearing witness to the truth before Miss Delamotte, Mr. Baldwyn, and others, I found my desires of apprehending Christ increased.

Thur., May 11th. I was just going to remove to old Mr. Hutton's, when God sent Mr. Bray to me, a poor ignorant mechanic, who knows nothing but Christ ; yet by knowing him, knows and discerns all things. Some time ago I had taken leave of Peter Böhler, confessed my unbelief and want of forgiveness, but declared my firm persuasion that I should receive the atonement before I died. His answer was, "Be it unto thee according to thy faith."

Mr. Bray is now to supply Böhler's place. We prayed together for faith. I was quite overpowered and melted into tears, and hereby induced to think it was God's will that I should go to his house, and not to Mr. Hutton's. He was of the same judgment. Accordingly I was carried thither in a chair.

His sister I found in earnest pursuit of Christ ; his wife well inclined to conversion. I had not been here long, when Mr. Broughton called. I hoped to find him altered like myself ; but, alas ! his time is not yet come. As to M. Turner, he gave her up ; "but for you, M. Bray," said he, "I hope you are still in your senses, and not run mad after a faith which must be felt." He went on contradicting and blaspheming. I thought it my duty to withstand him, and to confess my want of faith. "God help you, poor man," he replied : "if I could think you have not faith, I am sure it would drive me to despair." I put all my hopes of ever attaining it, or eternal salvation, upon the truth of this assertion, "*I have not now the faith of the Gospel.*"

As soon as he left us, Mr. Bray read me many comfortable scriptures, which greatly strengthened my desire ; so that I was persuaded I should not leave his house, before I believed with my heart unto righteousness.

Fri., May 12th. I waked in the same blessed temper, hungry and thirsty after God. I began Isaiah, and seemed to see that to me were the promises made, and would be fulfilled, for that Christ loved me. I found myself more desirous, more assured I should believe. This day (and indeed my whole time) I spent in discoursing on faith, either with those that had it, or those that sought it ; in reading the Scripture, and in prayer.

I was much moved at the sight of Mr. Ainsworth, a man of great learning, above seventy, who, like old Simeon, was waiting to see the Lord's salvation, that he might depart in peace. His tears, and vehemence, and childlike simplicity, showed him upon the entrance of the kingdom of heaven. In the afternoon I read Isaiah with Mr. Edmunds : saw him full of promises, and that they belonged to me. In the midst of our reading, Miss Claggetts came, and asked that they might hear us. We were all much encouraged to pursue the glorious prize held out to us by the evangelical Prophet.

When the company was gone, I joined with Mr. Bray in prayer and the Scripture, and was so greatly affected, that I almost thought Christ was coming that moment. I concluded the night with private vehement prayer.

Sat., May 13th. I waked without Christ ; yet still desirous of finding him. Soon after W. Delamotte came, and read me the 68th Psalm, strangely full of comfortable promises. Toward noon I was enabled to pray with desire and hope, and to lay claim to the promises in general. The afternoon I spent with my friends, in mutual exhortation to wait patiently for the Lord in prayer and reading. At night my brother came, exceeding heavy. I forced him (as he had often forced me) to sing an hymn to Christ, and almost thought He would come while we were singing : assured He would come quickly. *At night* I received much light and comfort from the Scriptures.

Sun., May 14th. The beginning of the day I was very heavy, weary, and unable to pray ; but the desire soon returned, and I found much comfort both in prayer and in the word, my eyes being opened more and more to discern and lay hold on the promises. I longed to find Christ, that I might show him to all mankind ; that I might praise, that I might love him.

Several persons called to-day, and were convinced of unbelief. Some of them afterwards went to Mr. Broughton, and were soon made as easy as Satan and their own hearts could wish.

Mon., May 15th. I finished Halyburton's *Life with Miss Claggetts, &c.* I found comfort in the 102d Psalm.

Tues., May 16th. I waked weary, faint, and heartless. My brother Hall coming to see me, I urged him to examine himself, whether he was in the faith. Two questions decided the matter: "Are you sure that is light?" "Yes." "Are you as sure of the things unseen; of Christ being in you of a truth?" "Yes; infinitely surer." In the afternoon I seemed deeply sensible of my misery, in being without Christ.

Wed., May 17th. I experienced the power of Christ rescuing me in temptation. To-day I first saw Luther on the Galatians, which Mr. Holland had accidentally lit upon. We began, and found him nobly full of faith. My friend, in hearing him, was so affected, as to breathe out sighs and groans unutterable. I marvelled that we were so soon and so entirely removed from him that called us into the grace of Christ, unto another Gospel. Who would believe our Church had been founded on this important article of justification by faith alone? I am astonished I should ever think this a new doctrine; especially while our Articles and Homilies stand unrepealed, and the key of knowledge is not yet taken away.

From this time I endeavoured to ground as many of our friends as came in this fundamental truth, salvation by faith alone, not an idle, dead faith, but a faith which works by love, and is necessarily productive of all good works and all holiness.

I spent some hours this evening in private with Martin Luther, who was greatly blessed to me, especially his conclusion of the 2d chapter. I laboured, waited, and prayed to feel "who loved *me*, and gave himself for *me*." When mature, near exhausted, forced me to bed, I opened the book upon, "For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness, because a short work will the Lord make upon earth." After this comfortable assurance that He would come, and would not tarry, I slept in peace.

Thur., May 18th. In the approach of a temptation, I looked up to Christ, and confessed my helplessness. The temptation was immediately beat down, and continually kept off by a power not my own. About midnight I was waked by the return of my pleurisy. I felt great pain and straitness at my heart; but found immediate relief by bleeding. I had some discourse with Mr. Bray; thought myself willing to die the next moment, if I might but believe this; but was sure I could not die, till I did believe. I earnestly desired it.

Fri., May 19th. At five this morning the pain and difficulty in breathing returned. The Surgeon was sent for; but I fell asleep before he could bleed me a second time. I was easier all day, after taking Dr. Cockburn's medicines. I had not much desire. I received the sacrament; but not Christ. At seven Mrs. Turner came, and told me, I should not rise from that bed till I believed. I believed her saying, and asked, "Has God then bestowed faith upon you?" "Yes, he has." "Why, have you peace with God?" "Yes, perfect peace." "And do you love Christ above all things?" "I do, above all things incomparably." "Then you are willing to die?" "I am; and would be glad to die this moment; for I know all my sins are blotted out; the handwriting that was against me is taken out of the way, and nailed to his cross. He has saved me by his death; he has washed me with his blood; he has hid me in his wounds. I have peace in Him, and rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory."

Her answers were so full to these and the most searching questions I could ask, that I had no doubt of her having received the atonement; and waited for it myself with a more assured hope. Feeling an anticipation of joy upon her account, and thanking Christ as I could, I looked for him all night with prayers and sighs and unceasing desires.

Sat., May 20th. I waked much disappointed, and continued all day in great dejection, which the sacrament did not in the least abate. Nevertheless God would not suffer me to doubt the truth of his promises. Mr. Bray, too, seemed troubled at my not yet believing, and complained of his uneasiness and want of patience. "But so it is with

me," says he : " when my faith begins to fail, God gives me some sign to support it." He then opened a Testament, and read the first words that presented, Matt. ix. 1 : " And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city. And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed : and Jesus, seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, be of good cheer ; thy sins be forgiven thee. And, behold, certain of the scribes and Pharisees said within themselves, This man blasphemeth. And Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts ? For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Arise and walk ? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine own house. And he arose, and departed to his house. And when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto man."

It was a long while before he could read this through, for tears of joy : and I saw herein, and firmly believed, that his faith would be available for the healing of me.

THE DAY OF PENTECOST.

Sun., May 21st, 1738. I waked in hope and expectation of His coming. At nine my brother and some friends came, and sang an hymn to the Holy Ghost. My comfort and hope were hereby increased. In about half-an-hour they went : I betook myself to prayer ; the substance as follows :— " O Jesus, thou hast said, ' I will come unto you ; ' thou hast said, ' I will send the Comforter unto you ; ' thou hast said, ' My Father and I will come unto you, and make our abode with you.' Thou art God who canst not lie ; I wholly rely upon thy most true promise : accomplish it in thy time and manner." Having said this, I was composing myself to sleep, in quietness and peace, when I heard one come in (Mrs. Musgrave, I thought, by the voice) and say, " In the name of Jesus of Nazareth, arise, and believe, and thou shalt be healed of all thy infirmities." I wondered how it should enter into her head to speak in that manner. The words struck me to the heart. I sighed, and said within myself, " O that Christ would but speak thus to

me !” I lay musing and trembling : then thought, “ But what if it should be Him ? I will send at least to see.” I rang, and, Mrs. Turner coming, I desired her to send up Mrs. Musgrave. She went down, and, returning, said, “ Mrs. Musgrave had not been here.” My heart sunk within me at the word, and I hoped it might be Christ indeed. However, I sent her down again to inquire, and felt in the meantime a strange palpitation of heart. I said, yet feared to say, “ I believe, I believe !” She came up again and said, “ It was I, a weak, sinful creature, spoke ; but the words were Christ’s : he commanded me to say them, and so constrained me that I could not forbear.”

I sent for Mr. Bray, and asked him whether I believed. He answered, I ought not to doubt of it : it was Christ spoke to me. He knew it ; and willed us to pray together : “ but first,” said he, “ I will read what I have casually opened upon : ‘ Blessed is the man whose unrighteousness is forgiven, and whose sin is covered : blessed is the man to whom the Lord imputeth no sin, and in whose spirit is no guile.’ ” Still I felt a violent opposition and reluctance to believe ; yet still the Spirit of God strove with my own and the evil spirit, till by degrees he chased away the darkness of my unbelief. I found myself convinced, I knew not how, nor when ; and immediately fell to intercession.

Mr. Bray then told me, his sister had been ordered by Christ to come and say those words to me. This she afterwards confirmed, and related to me more at large the manner of her believing. At night, and nearly the moment I was taken ill, she dreamt she heard one knock at the door : she went down, and opened it ; saw a person in white ; caught hold of and asked him who he was ; was answered, “ I am Jesus Christ,” and cried out, with great vehemence, “ Come in, come in !”

She waked in a fright. It was immediately suggested to her, “ You must not mind this : it is all a dream, an illusion.” She continued wavering and uneasy all Friday till evening prayers. No sooner were they begun than she found herself full of the power of faith, so that she could scarce contain herself, and almost doubted whether she was sober. At the same time she was enlarged in love and prayer for all mankind, and commanded to go and assure

me from Christ of my recovery, soul and body. She returned home repeating with all joy and triumph, "I believe, I believe : " yet her heart failed her, and she durst not say the words to me that night.

On Sunday morning she took Mr. Bray aside, burst into tears, and informed him of the matter ; objecting she was a poor weak sinful creature, and should she go to a Minister? She could not do it ; nor rest till she did. He asked whether she had ever found herself so before. " No, never." " Why, then," said he, " go. Remember Jonah. You declare promises, not threatenings. Go in the name of the Lord. Fear not your own weakness. Speak you the words : Christ will do the work. Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings hath he ordained strength."

They prayed together, and she then went up, but durst not come in till she had prayed again by herself. About six minutes after she had left him, he found and felt, while she was speaking the words, that Christ was with us. I never heard words uttered with like solemnity. The sound of her voice was entirely changed into that of Mrs. Musgrave. (If I can be sure of anything sensible.) I rose and looked into the Scripture. The words that first presented were, " And now, Lord, what is my hope ? truly my hope is even in thee." I then cast down my eye, and met, " He hath put a new song in my mouth, even a thanksgiving unto our God. Many shall see it, and fear, and shall put their trust in the Lord." Afterwards I opened upon Isaiah xl. 1 : " Comfort ye, comfort ye, my people, saith your God : speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned ; for she hath received of the Lord's hand double for all her sin."

I now found myself at peace with God, and rejoiced in hope of loving Christ. My temper for the rest of the day was, mistrust of my own great, but before unknown, weakness. I saw that by faith I stood ; by the continual support of faith, which kept me from falling, though of myself I am ever sinking into sin. I went to bed still sensible of my own weakness, (I humbly hope to be more and more so,) yet confident of Christ's protection.

Mon., May 22d. Under his protection I waked next

morning, and rejoiced in reading the 107th Psalm, so nobly describing what God had done for my soul. I fell asleep again, and waked out of a dream that I was fighting with two devils ; had one under my feet ; the other faced me some time, but faded, and sunk, and vanished away, upon my telling him I belonged to Christ.

To-day I saw him chiefly as my King, and found him in his power : but saw little of the love of Christ crucified, or of my sins past : though more, I humbly hope, of my own weakness and his strength. I had many evil thoughts darted into my mind, but I rejected them immediately (yet not I). At noon I rose, continually fainting, nevertheless upheld. I was greatly strengthened by Isaiah xliii., which God directed me to. " But now thus saith the Lord that created thee, O Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not : for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name ; thou art mine. When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee ; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee : when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned ; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee. For I am the Lord thy God, the Holy One of Israel, thy Saviour."

My brother coming, we joined in intercession for him. In the midst of prayer, I almost believed the Holy Ghost was coming upon him. In the evening we sang and prayed again. I found myself very weak in body, but thought I ought to pray for my friends, being the only Priest among them. I kneeled down, and was immediately strengthened, both mind and body. The enemy did not lose such an opportunity of tempting me to pride : but, God be praised, my strength did I ascribe unto Him. I was often since assisted to pray readily and earnestly, without a form. Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but to thy name be the glory !

An old friend called to see me, under great apprehensions that I was running mad. His fears were not a little increased by my telling him the prayer of faith had healed me when sick at Oxford. " He looked to see the rays of light about my head," he said, and more to that purpose. I begged him, for his own sake, not to pass sentence till he had his full evidence concerning me. This he could not

promise, but faintly prayed me to flee from London, and, in despair of me, took his leave.

It was morning before I could get to sleep. Many motions of pride arose, and were continually beaten down by Christ my King. The devil also tempted me to impatience through pain; but God turned it into an occasion of resignation.

Tues., May 23d. I waked under the protection of Christ, and gave myself up, soul and body, to him. At nine I began an hymn upon my conversion, but was persuaded to break off, for fear of pride. Mr. Bray coming, encouraged me to proceed in spite of Satan. I prayed Christ to stand by me, and finished the hymn. Upon my afterwards showing it to Mr. Bray, the devil threw in a fiery dart, suggesting, that it was wrong, and I had displeased God. My heart sunk within me; when, casting my eye upon a Prayer-book, I met with an answer for him. "Why boastest thou thyself, thou tyrant, that thou canst do mischief?" Upon this, I clearly discerned it was a device of the enemy to keep back glory from God. And it is most usual with him to preach humility, when speaking will endanger his kingdom, or do honour to Christ. Least of all would he have us tell what things God has done for our souls, so tenderly does he guard us from pride. But God has showed me, he can defend me from it, while speaking for him. In his name therefore, and through his strength, I will perform my vows unto the Lord, of not hiding his righteousness within my heart, if it should ever please him to plant it there.

Throughout this day he has kept up in me a constant sense of my own weakness. At night I was tempted to think the reason of my believing before others was, my sincerity. I rejected the thought with horror, and remained more than conqueror, through Him that loved me.

Wed., May 24th. Being to receive the sacrament to-day, I was assaulted by the fear of my old accustomed deadness; but soon recovered my confidence in Christ, that he would give me so much sense of his love now, as he saw good for me. I received without any sensible devotion, much as I used to be, only that I was afterwards perfectly calm and satisfied, without doubt, fear, or scruple. Among our com-

municants was Mrs. Pratt, who had been with me the night before, and related her receiving Christ in a dream, when under great trouble. His words to her were, "Be of good cheer, thy prayer is heard." From that time to this, being six years, she has enjoyed perfect peace. Most of Saturday night she had spent in intercession for me ; as on Sunday morning I experienced.

I was much pleased to-day at the sight of Mr. Ainsworth, a little child, full of grief, and fears, and love. At our repeating the line of the hymn, "Now descend, and shake the earth," he fell down as in an agony. I found a general delight in their singing, but little attention : yet was not disquieted.

We passed the afternoon in prayer, singing, and conference. For one half hour I was with Miss Delamotte ; now unconvinced, and full of dispute. I bore my testimony with plainness and confidence, declaring what God had done for my soul. Not hurt, but strengthened hereby.

From her I went to Miss Claggetts ; young women of a better and more childlike spirit, who calmly and confidently looked for the promises. I was farther comforted by an excellent letter from my namesake in Georgia, persecuted for Christ's sake ; on the highest step, I trust, of the legal state.

At eight I prayed by myself for love ; with some feeling, and assurance of feeling more. Towards ten, my brother was brought in triumph by a troop of our friends, and declared, "I believe." We sang the hymn with great joy, and parted with prayer. At midnight I gave myself up to Christ ; assured I was safe, sleeping or waking. Had continual experience of his power to overrule all temptation ; and confessed, with joy and surprise, that he was able to do exceeding abundantly for me, above what I can ask or think.

Thur., May 25th. I commended myself to Christ, my Prophet, Priest, and King. Miss D. came in a better mind. Before communicating, I left it to Christ, whether, or in what measure, he would please to manifest himself to me, in this breaking of bread. I had no particular attention to the prayers : but in the prayer of consecration I saw, by the eye of faith, or rather, had a glimpse of, Christ's broken,

mangled body, as taking down from the cross. Still I could not observe the prayer, but only repeat with tears, "O love, love!" At the same time, I felt great peace and joy ; and assurance of feeling more, when it is best.

Soon after I was a little cast down, by feeling some temptation, and foreseeing more ; but God lifted me up by his word. "Fear not : for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name ; thou art mine. When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee ; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee : when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned ; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee." (Isai. xliii.) This promise was fulfilled in me when under frequent motions of sin : I looked up to Christ, and found them beaten down continually.

Fri., May 26th. We joined this morning in supplication for the poor malefactors, while passing to execution ; and in the sacrament commended their souls to Christ. The great comfort we found therein made us confidently hope some of them were received as the penitent thief at the last hour. I was much refreshed soon after by Miss Delamorte, who, by the mercy of Christ, is brought back again, and more athirst after him than ever. I dined with great liberty of spirit, being amazed to find my old enemy, intemperance, so suddenly subdued, that I have almost forgot I was ever in bondage to him. In the evening I broke through my own great unwillingness, and at last preached faith in Christ to an accidental visitant.

Sat., May 27th. I felt a motion of anger, from a trifling disappointment ; but it was no sooner felt than conquered. I received the sacrament : still no sensible love ; but comfort. A gentlewoman, who has been long under the law, calling to see me, I thought, as she lived in the midst of opposers, no good could be done by speaking. Yet was I overruled to preach the Gospel. She seemed convinced and comforted. After she was gone, I was much assisted to intercede for her, and for poor Mr. Broughton, who continues the very life of all those that oppose the faith. Two or three others calling were reprov'd of sin by the holy Spirit of God. Miss Claggetts seemed on the very border of Canaan : being fully convinced of righteousness also, of

Christ's imputed righteousness ; and looking to receive it every moment as by promise theirs.

Trinity Sunday, May 28th. I rose in great heaviness, which neither private nor joint prayer could remove. At last I betook myself to intercession for my relations, and was greatly helped and enlarged herein ; particularly in prayer for a most profligate sinner. I spent the morning with James Hutton, in prayer, and singing, and rejoicing. In the afternoon my brother came, and, after a short prayer for success upon our ministry, set out for Tiverton. I then began writing my first sermon in the name of Christ my Prophet.

To-day Mrs. Bray related to me the manner of her receiving faith in public prayers, and the great conflicts she has since had with the enemy. For some days he so darkened the work of God, that though her eye of faith had been opened to see herself encompassed with the blood of Christ, yet still he suggested to her that she did not believe, because she had not the joy which others had. She was just overpowered by his devices, when in great heaviness she opened upon, " Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief." This stayed her for a time : but the tempter still pursued, and in the very words he had used to shake my brother's faith. She went to public prayers, and was fervent throughout the whole. Toward the conclusion she saw as it were Satan under her feet ; and came home in all the triumph of faith.

After dinner Miss Claggett and other friends came. I thought some would be now gathered into the fold, and was much assisted to pray. I rose, and saw the younger Miss Claggett under the work of God. I asked, urged, believed that she believed. She thought so too, but was afraid to confess it. While she stood trembling and in tears, I consulted the oracle for her, and met with Isai. xxx. 18 : " And therefore will the Lord wait, that he may be gracious unto you ; and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you : for the Lord is a God of judgment ; blessed are all they that wait for him. For the people shall dwell in Sion at Jerusalem ; thou shalt weep no more : he will be very gracious to thee, at the voice of thy cry ; when he shall hear it, he will answer thee."

She then opened the book on 2 Cor. v. 17 : "Old things are passed away ; behold, all things are become new." She read so far, and gave me the book to read on : "And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation ; to wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them ; and hath committed to us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us : we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin ; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him."

Mr. Holland then read, "Stand fast in the liberty where-with Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage." She now openly professed her faith, and increased in confidence every moment. We joined in hearty thanks to God for his unspeakable gift. Just before parting, she opened the book upon Luke viii. 39 : "Return to thine own house, and show how great things God hath done unto thee." This success was followed with inward trials ; but at the same time I experienced the superior power of Christ.

Wed., May 31st. To-day God enabled me, in spite of the devil and my own heart, to send Mr. Wells a plain simple account of what God hath done for my soul.

PART III.

FROM JUNE 1ST, 1738, WHEN HE BEGAN TO INCULCATE THE DOCTRINE OF PRESENT SALVATION BY FAITH, TO THE END OF THE YEAR.

THURSDAY, June 1st, 1738. I was troubled to-day, that I could not pray, being utterly dead at the sacrament.

Fri., June 2d. I was still unable to pray ; still dead in communicating ; full of a cowardly desire of death.

Sat., June 3d. My deadness continued, and the next day increased. I rose exceeding heavy and averse to prayer ; so that I almost resolved not to go to church ; which I had not been able to do, till within these two or three days past. When I did go, the prayers and sacrament were ex-

ceeding grievous to me ; and I could not help asking myself, "Where is the difference between what I am now, and what I was before believing?" I immediately answered, "That the darkness was not like the former darkness, because I was satisfied there was no guilt in it ; because I was assured it would be dispersed ; and because, though I could not find I loved God, or feel that he loved me, yet I did and would believe he loved me notwithstanding."

I returned home, and lay down with the same load upon me. This Mr. Ingham's coming could not alleviate. They sung, but I had no heart to join ; much less in public prayers. In the evening Mr. Brown, Holland, and others called. I was very averse to coming among them, but forced myself to it, and spent two or three hours in singing, reading, and prayer. This exercise a little revived me ; and I found myself much assisted to pray.

We asked particularly, that, if it was the will of God, some one might now receive the atonement. While I was yet speaking the words, Mr. Brown found power to believe. He rose and told me, my prayer was heard, and answered in him. At the same time Mr. Burton opened the Bible upon Col. i. 26 : "Even the mystery which has been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints : to whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles ; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory."

We were all full of joy and thanksgiving. Before we parted, I prayed with Mr. Brown, and praised God, to the great confirmation of my faith. The weight was quite taken off. I found power to pray with great earnestness, and rejoiced in my trials having continued so long, to show me that it is then the best time to labour for our neighbour, when we are most cast down, and most unable to help ourselves.

Mon., June 5th. I waked thankful, with power to pray and praise. I had peace at the sacrament, and some attention in public prayer. In the afternoon I met Mrs. Sims, with Mr. and Mrs. Burton, at Islington. He told me God had given him faith, while I was praying last night ; but he thought it would do hurt to declare it then. Upon finding his heart burn within him, he desired God would

show him some token of his faith, and immediately opened on, "Let there be light, and there was light." We rejoiced together in prayer and singing; and left the rest of the company much stirred up to wait for the same unspeakable gift.

Tues., June 6th. In the evening I read Luther, as usual, to a large company of our friends. Mr. Burton was greatly affected. My inward temptations are, in a manner, uninterrupted. I never knew the energy of sin, till now that I experience the superior strength of Christ.

Wed., June 7th. I found myself this morning under my Father's protection; and reading Matt. vii., "Ask, and ye shall receive," I asked some sense of his love in the sacrament. It was there given me to believe assuredly that God loved me, even when I could have no sense of it. Some imperfect perception of his love I had, and was strengthened to hope against hope, after communicating.

I went to Mrs. Sims, and passed the afternoon in singing and reading the promises. Miss Claggetts, Mr. Chapman, Verding, and others, dropped in, as by accident. We all went to public prayers; whence we again returned, contrary to my intention, to Mr. Sims. We joined in pleading the promises, and asking some token for good. I rose in confidence of our prayer being heard; and at the same time Mr. Verding declared, with great simplicity and astonishment, that he had seen as it were a whole army rushing by him, and bearing the broken body of Christ. He found himself quite overpowered at the sight; was all in a cold sweat. While he spoke, my heart bore witness to the work of God in his; and I felt myself affected as on Whitsunday; was assured it was Christ; said the written word would bear witness with the personal, and opened it for a sign upon Isai. xlv. 24, 25: "Surely shall one say, In the Lord have I righteousness and strength: even to him shall men come, and all that are incensed against him shall be ashamed. In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory." I then read, "Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is none else. I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, that unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue

shall swear." And then, 1 Peter i. 3, "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which, according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an inheritance incorruptible, undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation." After this he grew visibly in the faith, and we rejoiced and gave God thanks for the consolation. He appeared a very child; owned he feared nothing so much as offending his Father; was ready to die that moment. In the beginning of prayer he could hardly persuade himself to kneel down, not thinking *he* could find any benefit; so poor, so sinful a creature, what should he pray for?

Returning home in triumph, I found Dr. Byrom; and, in defiance of the tempter, simply told him the great things Jesus had done for me and many others. This drew on a full explanation of the doctrine of faith, which he received with wonderful readiness. Toward midnight I slept in peace.

Thur., June 8th. I had the satisfaction of hearing Mr. Sparks confess himself convinced now, that he is under the law, not under grace. In public prayer it pleased the Lord to melt me into humility and love.

At three I took coach for Blendon, with Mr. Bray; and had much talk with a lady about the fall, and faith in Christ. She openly maintained the merit of good works. I would all who oppose the righteousness of faith were so ingenuous: then would they no longer seek it as it were by the works of the law.

Before seven we came to Eltham. In riding thence to Blendon, I was full of delight, and seemed in new heavens and a new earth. We prayed, and sang, and shouted all the way. We found Miss Betsy and Hetty at home, and prayed that this day salvation might come to this house. In the lesson were those words, "This is the accepted time, this is the day of salvation."

Fri., June 9th. I prayed with fervour for the family. The second lesson was blind Bartimeus. In riding to Bexley, with Mr. Piers, I spake of my experience in simplicity and confidence, and found him very ready to receive the

faith. We spent the day in the same manner, Mr. Bray relating the inward workings of God upon his soul, and I the great things he had lately done for me, and our friends at London. He listened eagerly to all that was said, not making the least objection, but confessing it was what he had never experienced. We walked, and sang, and prayed in the garden. He was greatly moved, and testified his full conviction, and desire of finding Christ. "But I must first," said he, "prepare myself by long exercise of prayer and good works."

At night we joined in prayer for Hetty. Never did I pray with greater earnestness, expecting an immediate answer; and being much disappointed at not finding it, I consulted the Scripture, and met with Jehu's words to his men, "Let none escape out of your hands." Then, "I trust that I shall come shortly." Still I was in great heaviness for her, and could not sleep till morning. Waking full of desire for her conversion, those words were brought to my remembrance, "The Spirit and the bride say, Come; and let him that heareth say, Come; and let him that is athirst come: and whosoever will, let him take of the water of life freely." At this instant came a flash of lightning, then thunder, then violent rain. I accepted it as a sign that the skies would soon pour down righteousness.

Yesterday (the devil of secrecy being expelled) Miss Betsy plainly informed me, that, after her last receiving the sacrament, she had heard a voice, "Go thy way, thy sins are forgiven thee," and was filled thereby with joy unspeakable. She said within herself, "Now I do indeed feed upon Christ in my heart by faith," and continued all day in the spirit of triumph and exultation. All her life, she thought, would be too little to thank God for that day. Yet even after this it was, that the enemy got so great advantage over her, in making her oppose the truth with such fierceness. For many days she did not know that she had in herself demonstration of that she denied. But after we had prayed that God would clear up his own work, the darkness of faith dispersed, and those fears that her conversion was not real, by little and little, were all done away.

Sat., June 10th. In the morning lesson was that glorious

description of the power of faith : " Jesus answering said unto them, Have faith in God. For verily I say unto you That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea ; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass ; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them." We pleaded this promise in behalf of our seeking friends, particularly Hetty and Mr. Piers. He came with his wife. The day before our coming he had been led to read the Homily on Justification, which convinced him that in him dwelt no good thing. Now he likewise saw, that the thoughts of his heart were only evil continually, forasmuch as whatsoever is not of faith is sin.

He asked God to give him some comfort, and found it in Luke v. 23, &c. : " Whether is it easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Rise up and walk ? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he saith unto the sick of the palsy,) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go unto thine own house. And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God. And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to-day."

This was the very miracle, I told him, from which God had shown his intention to heal me ; and it was a sign of the like to be done by him. Mr. Bray moved for retiring to prayer. We prayed *after God*, again and again, and asked him, whether he believed Christ could just now manifest himself to his soul. He answered, " Yes." We read him the promise made to the prayer of faith. Mr. Bray bade me speak some promise to him authoritatively, and he should find Christ make it good. I had not faith to do it. He made me pray again, and then read Psalm lxxv. I felt every word of it for my friend, particularly, " Thou that hearest the prayer, unto thee shall all flesh come. Blessed is the man whom thou choosest and receivest unto thee : he shall dwell in thy court, and shall be satisfied with the plenteousness of thy house, even of thy

holy temple. Thou shalt show us wonderful things in thy righteousness, O God of our salvation, thou that art the hope of all the ends of the earth," &c.

Seeing the great confidence of Mr. Bray, and the deep humility of Mr. Piers, I began to think the promise would be fulfilled before we left the room. My fellow-worker with God seemed full of faith and the Holy Ghost, and told him, "If you can but touch the hem of his garment, you shall be made whole." We prayed for him a third time, the Spirit greatly helping our infirmities, and then asked if he believed. He answered, "Yes:" the Spirit witnessing with our spirits, that his heart was as our heart. Bray said, "I now know of a truth that Christ is in you." We were all filled with joy; returned thanks, and prayed for a blessing on his ministry; and then brought him down in triumph. Miss Betsy was greatly strengthened hereby, and bold to confess "she believed." All her speech now was, "I only hope that I shall never lose this comfort."

The day was spent in prayer and conference. Mrs. Piers was, with all ease, convinced of unbelief. After supper I discoursed on faith from the lesson. The poor servants received the word gladly.

Sun., June 11th. While Mr. Piers was preaching upon death, I found great joy in feeling myself willing, or rather desirous, to die. After prayers we joined in intercession for Mr. and Mrs. Delamotte; then for poor Hetty: I received much comfort in reading Luther.

We took coach for church. In singing I observed Hetty join with a mixture of fear and joy. I earnestly prayed, and expected she should meet with something to confirm her in the service. Both the Psalms and lessons were full of consolation.

We adjourned to Mr. Piers, and joined in prayer for a poor woman in despair, one Mrs. Searl, whom Satan had bound these many years. I saw her pass by in the morning, and was touched with a sense of her misery. After pleading his promise of being with us to the end of the world, we went down to her in the name of Jesus. I asked her, whether she thought God was love; and not anger, as Satan would persuade her. Then I preached the Gospel, which she received with all imaginable eagerness. When

we had for some time continued together in prayer, she rose up another creature, strongly and explicitly [declaring] her faith in the blood of Christ, and full persuasion that she was accepted in the Beloved. Hetty then declared, that she could not but believe Christ died for her, even for her. We gave thanks for both, with much exultation and triumph.

After family prayer I expounded the lesson, and, going up to my chamber, asked the maid (Mary) how she found herself. She answered, "O, Sir, what you said was very comfortable, how that Christ was made sin for me, that I might be made the righteousness of God in him; that is, he was put in my place, and I in his." "Do you then believe this, that Christ died for you?" "Yes, I do believe it; and I found myself so as I never did before, when you spoke the word." "But do you find within yourself, that your sins are forgiven?" "Yes, I do." These and the like answers, which she made with great simplicity, convinced me, that faith had come to her by hearing. We joined in giving glory to God; for we perceived and confessed it was his doing. It pleased him likewise to bless me with a deep and hitherto unknown dread of ascribing anything to myself.

Mon., June 12th. This morning Mrs. Piers told me, she had always doubted her having true faith; but now declared with tears, she was convinced her sins were forgiven, and she did believe indeed. We all went to Mrs. Searl, in strong temptation, nothing doubting but we should see the power of Christ triumphing over that of Satan. The enemy had got no advantage over her, though he had laboured all night to trouble and confound her. As often as she named the name of Jesus, he was repelled, and her soul at peace. We were much edified by her deep humility, and preached the Gospel to her and her husband, who received it readily. After prayer she rose with, "How shall I be thankful enough to my Saviour?" We parted in a triumphant hymn.

Tues., June 13th. Mr. Piers was sent for to a dying woman. She was in despair, "having done so much evil, and so little good." He declared to her the glad tidings of salvation, that as all her good, were it ten thousand times

more, could never save her, so all her evil could never hurt her,—if she could repent and believe ; if she could lay hold on Christ by a living faith, and look for salvation by grace only. This was comfort indeed. She gladly quitted her own merits for Christ's ; the Holy Ghost wrought faith in her heart, which she expressed in a calm, cheerful, triumphant expectation of death. Her fears and agonies were at an end. Being justified by faith, she had peace with God ; and only entered farther into her rest, by dying a few hours after. The spectators were melted into tears. She calmly passed into the heavenly Canaan, and has there brought up a good report of her faithful Pastor, who, under Christ, hath saved her soul from death.

These were the first-fruits of his ministry ; and I find him strengthened hereby, and more assured that the Gospel is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that believeth. In the evening Mr. Delamotte returned.

Wed., June 14th. After morning prayer in the little chapel, I kept Hannah from going, that we might first pray for her : but we quickly found there was greater cause of thanksgiving. She told me she was reading a collect last night, which gave her vast pleasure : "Almighty God, whom truly to know is eternal life, grant us perfectly to know thy Son Jesus Christ, to be the way, the truth, and the life." "To be sure, Sir," said she, "I found myself so easy immediately, that I cannot tell you." A few questions fully satisfied us, that she was a true believer. Poor Hetty was tempted to imagine she did not believe, because she had not been affected exactly in the same manner with others. We used a prayer for her, and parted.

On the road I overtook Frank, and asked what he thought of these things. He answered, "I was greatly delighted with one thing you said, how that Christ was made sin for us, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him." Upon farther examination I found him manifestly in the faith. We talked and rejoiced together, till we came to Eltham. He there left me, resolved to publish everywhere what things Jesus had done for him.

The coach was filled with young ladies. I was forced to leave off reading, that I might interrupt their scandal. At London I was informed that my brother was gone with

Mr. Ingham and Tilchig, to Hernhuth. The news surprised, but did not disquiet, me.

Thur., June 15th. I was sent for to baptize a child. It gave me occasion to speak upon faith. One of the company was full of self-righteousness. The rest were more patient of the truth, being only gross sinners.

Fri., June 16th. After dinner Jack Delamotte came for me. We took coach; and by the way he told me, that when we were last together at Blendon, in singing,

“Who for me, for me hast died,”

he found the words sink into his soul; could have sung for ever, being full of delight and joy: since then has thought himself led as it were in everything; feared nothing so much as offending God; could pray with life; and, in a word, found that he did indeed believe in the Lord Jesus.

I was in the coach with Miss Delamotte. While it stopped I got out to reprove a man for swearing. He thanked me most heartily. We took up Hetty at Blendon, and went on to Bexley.

The next day (Sat., June 17th) we saw, and prayed with, Mrs. Searl, to our mutual encouragement. Mr. Searl heard us gladly. The afternoon we passed with our friends at Blendon. Here I was stopped by the return of my pain, and forced to bed. Desires of death continually rose in me, which I laboured to check, not daring to form any wish concerning it.

Sun., June 18th. The pain abated; and the next day left me.

Wed., June 21st. I was concerned at having been here several days, and done nothing. I preached forgiveness to Mr. Piers's man, who seemed well disposed for receiving it, by a true simplicity. We prayed together, and went to public prayers. In the second lesson was the paralytic healed. I came home with the Miss Delamottes, Mrs. Searl, and the man, who declared before us all, that God had given him faith by hearing the sick of the palsy healed. We returned hearty thanks.

The Lord gave us more matter for thanksgiving at Blendon, where I read my brother's sermon on faith. When it was over, the gardener declared, faith had come to him by

hearing it, and he had no doubt of his sins being forgiven. "Nay, was I to die just now," he added, "I know I should be accepted through Christ Jesus."

Thur., June 22d. I comforted Hetty, under a strong temptation, because she was not in all points affected like other believers, especially the poor ; who have generally a much larger degree of confidence than the rich and learned. I had a proof of this to-day at Mr. Searl's, where, meeting a poor woman, and convincing her of unbelief, I used a prayer for her, that God who hath chosen the poor of this world to be rich in faith, would now impart to her his unspeakable gift. In the midst of the prayer she received it ; avowed it openly, and increased visibly therein.

In the evening we had a meeting at Mr. Piers's, and read my brother's sermon. God set his seal to the truth of it, by sending his Spirit upon Mr. Searl, and a maid-servant, purifying their hearts by faith. This occasioned our triumphing in the name of Jesus our God.

Fri., June 23d. I attended Mr. Piers to a poor old woman, whom he could never prevail upon to go to church. I expected we should be called to preach the law ; but found her ready for the Gospel, and glad to exchange her merits for Christ's. The evening we passed among our little flock, and parted full of comfort, and peace, and joy.

Sat., June 24th. Riding to Blendon in the morning, I met William Delamotte, just come from Cambridge. He had left town well-disposed to the obedience of faith ; but now I observed his countenance altered. He had been strongly prejudiced by the good folk at London. At Blendon I found Mr. Delamotte, not over-cordial, yet civil : met letters from my mother, heavily complaining of my brother's forsaking her, and requiring me to accept of the first preferment that offered, on pain of disobedience. This a little disquieted me. I was not much comforted by William Delamotte ; but extremely moved for him, and could not refrain from tears. His sisters joined us. I began preaching faith, and free grace. His objection was, that it was unjust in God to make sinners equal with us, who had laboured perhaps many years. We proposed singing an hymn. He saw the title, "Faith in Christ," and owned he could not bear it.

In our way to church, I again proclaimed to him the glad tidings of salvation. He was exceeding heavy, and, by his own confession, miserable ; yet could he not receive this saying, " We are justified freely by faith alone." The lesson comforted me concerning him. " Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me : and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in : behold, he shall come, saith the Lord." To all such as think it hard to lose the merit of their good works, the Scripture spake as follows : " Your words have been stout against me, saith the Lord : yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against thee ? Ye have said, It is vain to serve God : and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinances, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts ?"

Sun., June 25th. I stayed to preach faith to Mrs. Delamotte, whom Providence brought home yesterday, I trust, for that very purpose. I was so faint and full of pain, that I had not power to speak : but I had no sooner begun my sermon than all my weakness vanished. God gave me strength and boldness : and after an hour's speaking, I found myself perfectly well. I went and accosted Mrs. Delamotte in her pew : just as shy as I expected. Let it work : God look to the event !

After evening prayer, she just spake to me : Betsy wondered she could bring herself to it. My sermon (I heard) occasioned much disturbance to more than her. M. Searl at night was full of triumph.

Mon., June 26th. I waited upon Mrs. Delamotte, expecting what happened. She fell abruptly upon my sermon, for the false doctrine therein. I answered, " I staked my all upon the truth of it." She went on, " It is hard people must have their children seduced in their absence. If every one must have your faith, what will become of all the world ? Have you this assurance, Mr. Piers ?" " Yes, Madam, in some degree : I thank God for it." " I am sorry to hear it." One of the company cried, " I am glad to hear it, and bless God for him, and wish all mankind had it too."

She moved for reading a sermon of Archbishop Sharp's.

Piers read. We excepted continually to his unscriptural doctrine. Much dispute ensued. She accused my brother with preaching an instantaneous faith. "As to that," I replied, "we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard. I received it in that manner; as have above thirty others in my presence." She started up, said she could not bear it, and ran out of the house. William protested against her behaviour. In the beginning, I had found the old man rise; but I grew calmer and calmer, the longer we talked. Glory be to God through Christ! I offered to go, but they would not let me. Betsy went, and at last prevailed upon her to come in. Nothing more was said. At six I took my leave. Poor Hannah and Mary came to the door, and caught hold of my hand. Hannah cried, "Don't be discouraged, Sir: I hope we shall all continue steadfast." I could not refrain from tears. Hetty came in: I exhorted her to persevere. I took horse. William seemed much better disposed than his mother; promised to come and see me the next day. I joined with Mr. Piers in singing,

"Shall I, for fear of feeble man,
Thy Spirit's course in me restrain?"

and in hearty prayer for Mrs. Delamotte.

Tues., June 27th. Calling upon poor Goody Dickenson, I asked, if she had now forgiveness. "Yes," said she, "I received it in the midst of your sermon." "Do you then believe Christ died for you in particular?" "Yes, to be sure: I must believe it, if I would not deny the Scripture." She expressed strong confidence in God; appeared full of love to two beggars that called; believed she should be saved, if she died just now; would come to church, if all in rags. In short, she left me no reason to doubt, but that she was taken in at the eleventh hour, being now near fourscore.

Coming back to Mr. Piers's, I found W. Delamotte. I was full of hope for him. He told me he had wrote two sheets against the truth; but in seeking after more texts, had met one that quite spoiled all. "Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us." This convinced him; and immediately he burnt all he had wrote. I asked what it was he still stuck at.

“Nothing,” said he, “but God’s giving faith instantaneously.” I replied, that alone hindered his receiving it just now ; no more preparation being absolutely necessary thereto, than what God is pleased to give.

We were directed to many apposite scriptures, particularly Luke vii. 47 : “Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven.” John xx. 27, 28 : “Then said he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands ; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side : and be not faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.”

We went to prayers, pleaded the promises for him with great earnestness and tears : then read 2 Thess. i. 11, 12 : “Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power : that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.” I observed the workings of God strong upon him, and prayed again. Then read the scriptures that first offered :—Titus iii. 5 : “Not by works of righteousness which we have done,” &c. (The very text that stopped him in the morning.) Amos iv. 12 : “Because I will do this to thee, prepare to meet thy God.” Psalm lxxviii. 6 : “God setteth the solitary in families, he bringeth out those which are bound with chains :” and lastly, Psalm lxvi. 20 : “Blessed be God, which hath not turned away my prayer, nor his mercy from me.”

While we were praying, and singing, and reading, alternately, a poor man, one Mr. Heather, came to talk with me. He had heard and liked the sermon upon faith. I asked him whether he had faith. “No.” Whether forgiveness of sins. “No.” Whether there was or could be any good in him till he believed. “No.” “But do you think Christ cannot give you faith and forgiveness in this hour?” “Yes, to be sure he can.” “And do you believe his promise, that when two of his disciples shall agree upon earth, as touching anything they shall ask of him, he will give it them?” “I do.” “Why, then, here is your Minister, and I agree to ask faith for you.” “Then I believe I shall receive it before I go out of the room.”

We went to prayer directly ; pleaded the promise ; and rising, asked him whether he believed. His answer was, "Yes, I do believe with all my heart. I believe Christ died for my sins. I know they are all forgiven. I desire only to love him. I would suffer anything for him : could lay down my life for him this moment." I turned to my scholar, and said, "Do you now believe that God can give faith instantaneously ?" He was too full to speak ; but told me afterwards, he envied the unopposing ignorance and simplicity of the poor, and wished himself that illiterate carpenter.

Next day I returned to town, rejoicing that God had added to his living church seven more souls through my ministry. "Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but to thy name be the praise, for thy loving-mercy, and for thy truth's sake." I had hopes of seeing greater things than these, from a scripture He this day directed me to : Luke v. 9 : "For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of fishes which they had taken."

I went to Mr. Sims's, in expectation of Christ. Several of our friends were providentially brought thither. We joined in singing and prayer. The last time we prayed, I could not leave off, but was still forced to go on. I rose at last, and saw Mr. Chapman still kneeling. I opened the book, and read aloud, "And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment : for she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole. And Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort ; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour." My heart burned within me, while I was reading : at the same time I heard him cry out, with great struggling, "I do believe." We lifted him up ; for he had not power to rise of himself, being quite helpless, exhausted, and in a profuse sweat. An old believer among us owned himself affected with a wonderful sympathy. We had the satisfaction of *seeing* Mr. Chapman increase in faith ; and returned most hearty thanks to the God of his and our salvation.

Thur., June 29th. Miss Suky Claggett called, and to my

no small comfort informed me of her sister's lately receiving faith. She likewise brought me an invitation from her mother. Mrs. Turner would have sent for her, (Miss B. Claggett,) but I would not suffer it; that I might have no hand at all in the matter. I sat down to write; when Miss Betsy came for me. We joined in thanksgiving for her, and intercession for her mother; and then took coach. Mrs. Turner made the fourth.

I sought to the oracle for direction, and was much strengthened by the answer, from Acts x. 29: "Therefore came I unto you without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me?" What makes it more remarkable is, that it is St. Peter's day. We all conceived great hopes of Mrs. Claggett. I found her very courteous, well-disposed, emptied of herself. We sang, and at her desire prayed together. She freely confessed how greatly she had been prejudiced against the truth; but was thoroughly satisfied by my reading the sermon. I prayed after it, without much affection; again with more; and the third time strongly moved. I *knew* that she believed. I believed for her. The Scripture gave the strongest testimony of it. At first she said, she must not presume to say she believed; but grew more and more confirmed. I left her, in confidence God would soon clear up his own work in her soul, beyond all doubt or contradiction. Soon after, to keep me from being lifted up, the messenger of Satan was suffered to buffet me.

Fri., June 30th. Thanks be to God, the first thing I felt to-day was a fear of pride, and desire of love. Betsy Delamotte called, and gave me the following letter:—

"Dear Sir,—God hath heard your prayers. Yesterday, about twelve, He put his *fiat* to the desires of his distressed servant; and, glory be to Him, I have enjoyed the fruits of his Holy Spirit ever since. The only uneasiness I feel is, want of thankfulness and love for so unspeakable a gift. But I am confident of this also, that the same gracious Hand which hath communicated, will communicate even unto the end.

"I am your sincere friend in Christ,

"W. DELAMOTTE.

"O my friend, I am free indeed! I agonized some time

betwixt darkness and light ; but God was greater than my heart, and burst the cloud, and broke down the partition-wall, and opened to me the door of faith."

In reading this, I felt true thankfulness, and was quite melted down with God's goodness to my friend.

I followed his guidance in the afternoon to Mr. Sims's. We spent the time as usual. Mrs. Chapman called ; said she could not stay ; yet stayed prayers. I was much assisted : rose, and asked her whether she believed. "I do not know but I do ; for I never found myself so in my life ; so strangely warmed ! I seem to have a fire within me. I thought, while kneeling down, 'How could I expect to receive faith, when so many better than I were here ?' It then came into my mind, that I had left my money upon the stall ; but God, thought I, could take care of it, or give me a better thing." We concluded the day with prayer at Mr. Bray's.

Sat., July 1st. I was again at Mrs. Claggett's. The eldest daughter and Mrs. Claggett joined us. I related the cure of the lame girl at Bath. She rejoiced to hear a person might have faith, and have it long obscured by worldly cares, yet not lost : said the maid's case was hers ; professed her now believing, and owned the darkness she had long lain under, a just punishment for her not giving God the glory. We sang, and rejoiced together, and went to the house of God as friends. In the lesson He related his past kindness to her. "And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath-day. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands on her : and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God." Mrs. Claggett was deeply affected ; and told me afterwards, that her not following the woman's example of glorifying God, had occasioned all the troubles of her life : but she was now resolved, as far as in her lay, to repair her past unfaithfulness.

At Mr. Sims's I was extremely averse to prayer ; would fain have stole away without it : but Mr. Bray stopped me, saying, my deadness could not hinder God, and forced me

to pray. I had scarce begun, when I was quite melted down, and prayed more fervently than ever before. A poor man, who came in at the beginning of the prayer, now confessed his faith before us all, being full of joy and triumph. "He never found himself so before ; knew his sins were forgiven ; could gladly die that moment."

Sun., July 2d. Being to preach this morning for the first time, I received strength for the work of the ministry, in prayer and singing. The whole service at Basingshaw was wonderfully animating, especially the Gospel concerning the miraculous draught of fishes. I preached salvation by faith to a deeply attentive audience : I gave the cup. Observing a woman full of reverence, I asked her if she had forgiveness of sins. She answered, with great sweetness and humility, "Yes, I know it now that I have forgiveness."

I preached again at London-Wall, without fear or weariness. As I was going into the church, a woman caught hold of my hand, and blessed me most heartily, telling me she had received forgiveness of sins while I was preaching in the morning.

In the evening we met, a troop of us, at Mr. Sims's. There was one Mrs. Harper there, who had this day in like manner received the Spirit, by the hearing of faith ; but feared to confess it. We sung the hymn to Christ. At the words,

"Who for me, for me hath died,"

she burst out into tears and outcries, "I believe, I believe !" and sunk down. She continued, and increased in the assurance of faith ; full of peace, and joy, and love.

We sang and prayed again. I observed one of the maids run out, and, following, found her full of tears, and joy, and love. I asked what ailed her. She answered, as soon as joy would let her, that "Christ died for her !" She appeared quite overpowered with his love.

Mon., July 3d. I had some discourse with my friendly namesake, Charles Rivington. I begged him to suspend his judgment, till he heard me preach.

Tues., July 4th. I received a letter from my brother at Tiverton, full of heavy charges. At Mr. Sparks's I found Jephtha Harris. I convinced him so far, that he owned he

had been prejudiced against the truth ; and had not faith. I carried him to Mr. Bray's ; prayed over him, and pleaded the promises. All were much affected.

I corrected a sermon of Mr. Sparks's on justification. Took coach for Bexley. In the way I was enabled to pray for my brother. I heard a good account of Mrs. Delamotte, that she was almost beat out of her own righteousness.

Honest Frank made one of our congregation this evening, and gave a comfortable account of the little flock at Blendon. I received a fuller from Hetty ; informing me that her mother was convinced of unbelief, and much ashamed of her behaviour towards me.

Wed., July 5th. William Delamotte came, and rejoiced with me for all God had done. We brought a woman home from church, and laboured hard to convince her she deserved hell. Another confessed her having received forgiveness of sins in sickness.

Fri., July 7th. Mrs. Delamotte followed me from church, sent for me down, hoped she did not interrupt me. Her third sentence was, " Well, Mr. Wesley, are you still angry with me ? " " No, Madam," I answered, " nor ever was. Before I gave myself time to consider, I was myself so violent against the truth, that I know to make allowance for others." Here we came to a full explanation ; produced the scriptures which prove our justification by faith only, the witness of the Spirit, &c. By these, and an excellent sermon of Bishop Beveridge's on the subject, she seemed thoroughly convinced. All she stuck at was, the instantaneousness of faith, or, in other words, the possibility of any one's perceiving when the life of faith first began.

She carried me in her coach to Blendon, where the poor servants were overjoyed to see me once more. While we were praying for her, she sent for me up to her closet. I found her quite melted into an humble, contrite, longing frame of spirit. She showed me several prayers attesting the true faith, especially that of Bishop Taylor : " I know, O blessed Jesus, that thou didst take upon thee my nature, that thou mightest suffer for my sins ; that thou didst suffer to deliver me from them, and from thy Father's wrath. And I was delivered from his wrath, that I might serve thee, in holiness and righteousness all my days. Lord, I

am as sure thou didst the great work of redemption for me, and for all mankind, as that I am alive. This is my hope, the strength of my spirit, my joy, and my confidence. And do thou never let the spirit of unbelief enter into me, and take me from this rock. Here I will dwell ; for I have a delight therein. Here I will live, and here I desire to die."

She asked me what she could do more, being convinced of her want of faith, and not able to give it herself. I preached the freeness of the grace, and betook myself to prayer for her, labouring, sighing, looking for the witness of the Spirit, the fulness of the promises, in her behalf. I conjured her to expect continually the accomplishment of the promise, and not think her confessed unworthiness any bar. Next morning I returned to town.

Sun., July 9th. I preached my brother's sermon upon faith at —, and a second time in St. Sepulchre's vestry. In walking home with Mrs. Burton, I said, "Surely there must be something which you are not willing to give up, or God would have given you comfort before now." She answered only by her tears. After praying for her at Mr. Bray's, I lay down ; rose ; stopped her going home, and carried her with James and Mrs. Turner from the company to pray. After prayer, in which I was much assisted, I found her under a great concern, trembling, and cold ; longing, yet dreading, to say "she believed." We prayed again. She then said, with much struggling, "Lord, I believe ; help thou my unbelief." She repeated it several times, and gained strength by each repetition.

Mon., July 10th. At Mr. Sparks's request, I went with him, Mr. Bray, and Mr. Burnham, to Newgate ; and preached to the ten malefactors, under sentence of death ; but with a heavy heart. My old prejudices against the possibility of a death-bed repentance still hung upon me ; and I could hardly hope there was mercy for those whose time was so short. But in the midst of my languid discourse, a sudden spirit of faith came upon me, and I promised them all pardon, in the name of Jesus Christ, if they would then, as at the last hour, repent, and believe the Gospel. Nay, I did believe they would accept of the proffered mercy, and could not help telling them, "I had no doubt but God would give me every soul of them."

In going to Mr. Chapman's I met Margaret Beutiman, and bade her follow, for we were several of us to join in prayer there. James Hutton, Mr. Holland, Mr. and Mrs. Sims got thither soon after us. We sang, and pleaded the promises. In the midst of prayer, Margaret received the atonement, and professed her faith without wavering; her love to Christ, and willingness to die that moment. We returned thanks for her, and I then offered to go. They pressed me to stay a little longer: I did so, and heard Mrs. Storer, a sister of Mr. Bray's, complain of the hardness of her heart. She owned she had been under the utmost uneasiness, since our last meeting at her brother's, unable to pray, or find any rest to her soul. While we were singing the hymn to the Father, she did find the rest she sighed after; was quite pierced, as she said, her heart ready to burst, and her whole nature overpowered. We went to prayers, and then opened the scripture, "I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes." She then was strengthened to profess her faith, and increased in peace and joy. As we walked, she said she could not have conceived how these things could be; what the change was which we spoke of. Her faith was farther confirmed by public prayer; and she continued all the evening full of comfort, and peace that passeth all understanding.

Tues., July 11th. I preached with earnestness to the prisoners from the second lesson. One or two of them were deeply affected. At Bray's I found a letter from W. Delamotte, and read, with joy and thankfulness, as follows:—

"I cannot keep pace: the mercies of God come in so abundantly on our unworthy family, that I am not able to declare them. Yet, as they are his blessings through your ministry, I must inform you of them, as they will strengthen your hands, and prove helpers of your joy.

"Great, then, I believe, was the struggle between nature and grace in the soul of my mother; but God, who knoweth the very heart and reins, hath searched her out. Her spirit, like Naaman's flesh, is returned as that of a little child. She is converted, and Christ hath spoken peace to

her soul. This work was begun in her the morning you left us, though she concealed it from you.

“When she waked, the following scripture was strongly suggested to her : ‘ Either what woman, having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it.’ She rose immediately, took up Bishop Taylor, and opened upon a place which so strongly asserted this living faith, that she was fully convinced. But the enemy preached humility to her ; that she could not deserve so great a gift. However, God still pursued, and she could not long forbear communicating the emotion of her soul to me. We prayed, read, and conversed for an hour ; the Lord made use of a mean instrument to convince her of her ignorance in the word. Throughout that day her mind was more and more enlightened, till at length she broke out, ‘ Where have I been ? I know nothing ; I see nothing. My mind is all darkness. How have I opposed the Scripture !’ The tempter, thus enraged, excited all his powers to persuade her she was labouring after something that was not to be attained ; but Christ suffered her not to fall. She flew to him in prayer and singing ; and though Satan damped her much, yet could he not conquer her, because that which was conceived in her was of the Holy Ghost.

“She continued agonizing all the evening. But how can I utter the sequel ? The first object of her thoughts the next morning was Christ. She saw him approaching ; and seeing, loved, believed, adored. Her prayers drew him still nearer ; and everything she saw concurred to hasten the embrace of her Beloved. Thus she continued in the Spirit till four ; when, reading in her closet, she received the kiss of reconciliation. Her own soul could not contain the joys attending it. She could not forbear imparting to her friends and neighbours, that she had found the piece which she had lost. Satan in vain attempted to shake her ; for she felt in herself,

‘ Faith’s assurance, hope’s increase,
All the confidence of love.’ ”

Mr. Sparks this morning asked me whether I would preach for him at St. Helen’s. I agreed to supply Mr. Broughton’s place, who is now at Oxford, arming our friends

against the faith. The pain in my side was very violent ; but I looked up to Christ, and owned his healing power. At the same time, that came into my mind, " Out of weakness were made strong." No sooner did I enter the coach than the pain left me, and I preached faith in Christ to a vast congregation, with great boldness, adding much extempore.

After sermon, Mrs. Hind, with whom Mr. Broughton lodges, sent for me ; owned her agreement to the doctrine, and pressed me to come and talk with Mr. Broughton, who, she could not but believe, must himself agree to it.

From her I went to Mr. Sims, and found that God had set his seal to my ministry ; Mr. Dandy and Miss Branford declaring, faith had come to them by hearing me. We rejoiced, and gave thanks from the ground of the heart.

Wed., July 12th. I preached at Newgate to the condemned felons, and visited one of them in his cell, sick of a fever ; a poor black that had robbed his master. I told him of one who came down from heaven to save lost sinners, and him in particular ; described the sufferings of the Son of God, his sorrows, agony, and death. He listened with all the signs of eager astonishment ; the tears trickled down his cheeks while he cried, " What ! was it for me ? Did God suffer all this for so poor a creature as me ?" I left him waiting for the salvation of God.

In the evening Mr. Washington of Queen's came to dispute with me. I simply testified my want of faith three months ago, and my having it now ; asked whether he could lay down his life for the truth of his being in the faith ; whether he allowed Christ to be as really present in the believing soul, as in the third heavens ; told him he was yet in his sins, and knew nothing, and begged him to pray for direction.

Thur., July 13th. I read prayers and preached at Newgate, and administered the sacrament to our friends, with five of the felons. I was much affected and assisted in prayer for them ; and exhorted them with great comfort and confidence.

Fri., July 14th. I received the sacrament from the Ordinary ; spake strongly to the poor malefactors ; and to the sick Negro in the condemned hole, moved by his sorrow and earnest desire of Christ Jesus.

Sat., July 15th. I preached there again with an enlarged heart ; and rejoiced with my poor happy Black ; who now *believes* the Son of God loved him, and gave himself for him.

Sun., July 16th. Metcalf and Savage came : the latter received faith on Friday night, in prayer, and is now filled with comfort, peace, and joy. I took coach with Metcalf ; preached the threefold state with boldness ; gave the sacrament. I went thence to Mrs. Claggett's ; sang, rejoiced, and gave thanks, in behalf of both the maids, now added to the church by true divine faith. Mr. Claggett coming in by mistake, we laid hold on and carried him with us to Black-Friars. Very weak and faint, yet was I strengthened to preach for above an hour. I was carried to bed full of pain, expecting my fever ; yet believing it could not return, unless it were best.

Mon., July 17th. I rose free from pain. At Newgate I preached on death (which they must suffer the day after to-morrow). Mr. Sparks assisted in giving the sacrament. Another Clergyman was there. Newington asked me to go in the coach with him. At one I was with the Black in his cell ; James Hutton assisting. Two more of the malefactors came. I had great help and power in prayer. One rose, and said, he felt his heart all on fire, so as he never found himself before ; he was all in a sweat ; believed Christ died for him. I found myself overwhelmed with the love of Christ to sinners. The Black was quite happy. The other criminal was in an excellent temper ; believing, or on the point of it. I talked with another, concerning faith in Christ : he was greatly moved. The Lord, I trust, will help *his* unbelief also.

I joined at Bray's with Hutton, Holland, Burton, in fervent prayer and thanksgiving. At six I carried Bray and Fish to Newgate again, and talked chiefly with Hudson and Newington. N. declared he had felt, some time ago in prayer, inexpressible joy and love ; but was much troubled at its being so soon withdrawn. The Lord gave power to pray. They were deeply affected. We have great hopes of both.

Tues., July 18th. The Ordinary read prayers and preached. I administered the sacrament to the Black, and eight

more ; having first instructed them in the nature of it. I spake comfortably to them afterwards.

In the cells, one told me, that whenever he offered to pray, or had a serious thought, something came and hindered him ; was with him almost continually ; and once appeared. After we had prayed for him *in faith*, he rose amazingly comforted, full of joy and love ; so that we could not doubt his having received the atonement.

At night I was locked in with Bray in one of the cells. We wrestled in mighty prayer. All the criminals were present ; and all delightfully cheerful. The soldier, in particular, found his comfort and joy increase every moment. Another, from the time he communicated, has been in perfect peace. Joy was visible in all their faces. We sang,

“ Behold the Saviour of mankind,
Nail'd to the shameful tree !
How vast the love that him inclined
To bleed and die for thee,” &c.

It was one of the most triumphant hours I have ever known. Yet on

Wed., July 19th, I rose very heavy, and backward to visit them for the last time. At six I prayed and sang with them all together. The Ordinary would read prayers, and preached most miserably. Mr. Sparks and Mr. Broughton were present. I felt my heart full of tender love to the latter. He administered. All the ten received. Then he prayed ; and I after him.

At half-hour past nine their irons were knocked off, and their hands tied. I went in a coach with Sparks, Washington, and a friend of Newington's (N. himself not being permitted). By half-hour past ten we came to Tyburn, waited till eleven : then were brought the children appointed to die. I got upon the cart with Sparks and Broughton : the Ordinary endeavoured to follow, when the poor prisoners begged he might not come ; and the mob kept him down.

I prayed first, then Sparks and Broughton. We had prayed before that our Lord would show there was a power superior to the fear of death. Newington had quite forgot his pain. They were all cheerful ; full of comfort, peace, and triumph ; assuredly persuaded Christ had died for them,

and waited to receive them into paradise. Greenaway was impatient to be with Christ.

The Black had spied me coming out of the coach, and saluted me with his looks. As often as his eyes met mine, he smiled with the most composed, delightful countenance I ever saw. Read caught hold of my hand in a transport of joy. Newington seemed perfectly pleased. Hudson declared he was never better, or more at ease, in mind and body. None showed any natural terror of death : no fear, or crying, or tears. All expressed their desire of our following them to paradise. I never saw such calm triumph, such incredible indifference to dying. We sang several hymns ; particularly,

“ Behold the Saviour of mankind,
Nail'd to the shameful tree ;”

and the hymn entitled, “ Faith in Christ,” which concludes,

“ A guilty, weak, and helpless worm,
Into thy hands I fall :
Be thou my life, my righteousness,
My Jesus, and my all.”

We prayed Him, in earnest faith, to receive their spirits. I could do nothing but rejoice : kissed Newington and Hudson ; took leave of each in particular. Mr. Broughton bade them not be surprised when the cart should draw away. They cheerfully replied, they should not ; expressed some concern how we should get back to our coach. We left them going to meet their Lord, ready for the Bridegroom. When the cart drew off, not one stirred, or struggled for life, but meekly gave up their spirits. Exactly at twelve they were turned off. I spoke a few suitable words to the crowd ; and returned, full of peace and confidence in our friends' happiness. That hour under the gallows was the most blessed hour of my life.

At Mr. Bray's we renewed our triumph. I found my brother and sister Lambert there, and preached to them the Gospel of forgiveness, which they received without opposition.

Thur., July 20th. At morning prayers in Islington. I had some serious conversation with Mr. Stonehouse, the Vicar. I brought him home with me from evening prayers.

Fri., July 21st. Mr. Robson came ; and received the

strange doctrine of faith with surprising readiness. At night many joined us in prayer and praise. Brother Edmunds bore his testimony : so did two others, who had received the blessing of pardon, in hearing my sermon upon, "The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord." Another stood up, (lately a notorious sinner,) and declared the same. We continued till eleven, praying, and praising God.

Sat., July 22d. Mr. Robson confessed he did believe there was such a faith, but it was impossible for him to obtain it ; and it must necessarily bring on a persecution. We continued pleading the promises for him : he was greatly moved, and grew stronger and stronger in hope. I was full of expectation, as well as Mr. Bray. In singing the hymn to the Father, our poor friend was quite overpowered, and even compelled to believe : till at last he was filled with strength and confidence.

At five Mr. Chapman came from Mr. Broughton, and appeared entirely estranged. He insisted that there is no need of our being persecuted now. I told him, I was of a different judgment ; and believed every doctrine of God must have these two marks : 1. Meeting all the opposition of men and devils. 2. Triumphant over all. I expressed my readiness to part with him, and all my friends and relations, for the truth's sake ; avowed my liberty and happiness since Whitsunday ; made a bridge for a flying enemy, and we parted tolerable friends.

Mon., July 24th. I preached faith at Mr. Stonehouse's. Still he stuck upon fitness. We prayed most earnestly. Miss Claggetts dined with us. I prayed again, with great comfort and hope for him. He continued insensible. We bade him open the Bible. He did, on these apposite words : 1 Thess. i. 5 : "For our Gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance." I stayed with him after evening prayer, to keep him from Mr. Chapman. I agreed to take charge of his parish, under him, as his Curate. At night Mrs. Turner told me at Mrs. Claggett's, that she had been greatly strengthened to pray in faith for Mr. Stonehouse.

Tues., July 25th. William Delamotte came, and carried me to Bexley.

Wed., July 26th. At Blendon. Mrs. Delamotte called upon me to rejoice with her, in the experience of the divine goodness. In the evening I met several sincere seekers, at Mr. Piers's ; with some who knew in whom they have believed. We had great power in prayer, and joy in thanksgiving. W. Delamotte often shouted for joy. Before nine we got back to Blendon. Mrs. Delamotte then confessed that all her desire had been to affront, or make me angry ; that she had long watched every word I said ; had persecuted the truth, and all who professed it, &c.

Thur., July 27th. In the coach to London I preached faith in Christ. A lady was extremely offended ; avowed her own merits in plain terms ; asked if I was not a Methodist ; threatened to beat me. I declared, I deserved nothing but hell ; so did she ; and must confess it, before she could have a title to heaven. This was most intolerable to her. The others were less offended ; began to listen ; asked where I preached : a maid-servant devoured every word.

Fri., July 28th. Mr. Exell received faith, in immediate answer to our prayers. At Mr. Stonehouse's I met Charles Rivington, and his wife : but could come to no agreement ; I insisting on a particular manifestation of Christ to every soul, and he denying it.

Sun., July 30th. At six I received the sacrament ; preached faith at ten ; and again in the afternoon at All-hallows, Thames-street. My strength increased with my labour. At Mr. Sims's, I began expounding the Epistle to the Romans.

Mon., July 31st. I began writing a sermon upon Gal. iii. 22 : " But the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe."

I met Mr. Lynn, who had often asked me to his house. I went ; and found him again convinced of unbelief, and more uneasy than ever.

Tues., August 1st. I read prayers at Islington, (as I do most days,) and slept at Mr. Stonehouse's.

Thur., August 3d. I met Lord Egmont, and declared my intention of returning to Georgia, if my health permitted ; with which he was much pleased.

I corrected Mr. Whitefield's Journal for the press ; my advice to suppress it being overruled.

Sun., August 6th. I preached at Islington, and gave the cup. In the afternoon I read prayers in a church in London, and preached again. I was faint, and full of pain, when I began ; but my work quite cured me.

Thur., August 10th. I walked to Mrs. Hind's. Mr. Broughton and Washington were there. They denied explicitly that we are saved by Christ's imputed righteousness ; and affirmed that works do justify ; have a share in making us righteous before God. I appealed to the Homilies, which they had never read, for justification by faith only. When they were gone, I had much lively conversation with Mrs. Hind, and her son, well-disposed to receive faith, if they have it not already.

Sat., August 12th. We were warmed by reading George Whitefield's Journal. I walked with Metcalf, &c., in great joy, wishing for a place to sing in, when a blacksmith stopped us. We turned into his house, sang an hymn, and went on our way rejoicing.

Sun., August 13th. I preached at Islington ; gave the sacrament to a sick woman, who was therein assured of her reconciliation to God, through Christ Jesus.

Tues., August 15th. I communicated again with the sick woman. Mrs. Claggett and her daughters made the greater part of the congregation. We were all comforted. I seldom fail seeing them and Islington once a day.

Wed., August 16th. I was dragged out by Mr. Bray, to Jeph. Harris's religious Society ; when, after much disputing, I confuted, rather than convinced, them, by reading the Homily on Justification.

Thur., August 17th. I preached faith to a dying woman, and administered the sacrament. She was satisfied God had sent us : told me, I was the instrument of saving her soul. I asked, "Had you then no faith before we came?" She answered, "No : how should I ? it is the gift of God ; and he never gave it me till now." "Do you now think you shall be saved?" "Yes," she replied, smiling ; "I have no doubt of it." "You need not then fear the devil's hurting you." "I know that ; he is chained : I have nothing to do with him, or he with me." She pro-

mised to bring up a good report of us, to those she was going to.

I read prayers at Islington ; met Mrs. Brockmar ; one who in despair had been directed to Christ, and in a fortnight found peace to her soul, steadfastly believing her sin had been imputed to Christ, and his righteousness to her. She asked me to go and see the sick woman again. I preached faith to a large company I found there. The woman bore a noble testimony. I asked her before them all, "Have you received forgiveness?" Her answer was, "Yes, I am assured of it by Christ himself." To them she said, they must not *think* they believe, but *feel* it, and have a full confidence thereof. They all thanked me much.

Fri., August 18th. I prayed and rejoiced with her again, yet more ascertained of her salvation. Mrs. Brockmar, the Claggetts, &c., were of the company. We got upon the leads and sang ; full of zeal, and life, and comfort. I read prayers ; and, with Mr. Brockmar and others, returned to singing at Mr. Stonehouse's. He read us an Homily. At seven we all walked out ; were driven by the hard rain to a shed, where we sang and preached to those about us. I came, wet through, to Mr. Bray's : joined our friends there, in singing, reading, and prayer. A young man received faith in that hour.

Sat., August 19th. At Mr. Stonehouse's I read prayers with some life. I gave the sacrament to the woman : asked, "Do you still believe you shall be saved?" "Yes ; I am humbly confident of it, and care not how soon I depart. I desire to be dissolved, and to be with Christ." We sang on the leads, as before.

At three I found my friend Stonehouse exceeding heavy, and sorely distressed through fear of marrying. I prayed earnestly that neither he nor I might ever be left to follow our own heart's desires. After reading prayers, I buried a corpse : and went back to Bray's, weighed down with my poor George's burden.

Sun., August 20th. I preached at Islington in the morning, at Clerkenwell in the afternoon, on, "The Scripture hath concluded all under sin," &c. God gave me great boldness ; and the word, I trust, did not return empty.

Mon., August 21st. Mr. Stonehouse's maid, Thomasin,

told me, she had found great peace, and comfort, and joy, in prayer last Saturday, so that her very inside (as she expressed it) was changed. I visited Mrs. Hall, a dying. She made signs of her confident faith. Then Mrs. Hankinson; who told me, she had been very uneasy ever since I said, a person must be sure of their forgiveness. I preached faith, as the only instrument of justification. She was quite melted down. We prayed: she rose, and said, her heart was set at liberty, her burden taken away, and her spirit joyful in Christ her Saviour.

Thurs., August 24th. At Mrs. Musgrave's I met one Mrs. Nichols; who readily owned she was not free, had not faith; but believed Christ could just then give it her. We prayed for her in faith. She received the immediate answer; expressed her confidence, delight, and love of Jesus; and, at the same time, her utter defiance of Satan, sin, and death.

Sat., August 26th. I was with Mr. Stonehouse: possessed with a strange fancy, that a man must be wholly sanctified, before he can know that he is justified.

Sun., August 27th. I preached at St. John's the three-fold state, and helped to administer the sacrament to a very large congregation.

Mon., August 28th. I came in the coach to Oxford; rejoiced at Mr. Fox's, with Mr. Kinchin, Hutchins, and other Christian friends.

Tues., August 29th. I preached to the poor prisoners in the Castle. Many, with Mr. Watson, were present at the Society. All of one mind; earnestly seeking Christ. I read the Homilies, and continued instant in prayer. A woman cried out, "Where have I been so long? I have been in darkness: I never shall be delivered out of it,"—and burst into tears. Mrs. Cleminger, too, appeared in the pangs of the new birth.

Wed., August 30th. I left Mr. Watson, convinced of unbelief, and rode to Stanton-Harcourt. I spoke with great reluctance, yet fully and plainly, to my sister; and then to Mr. Gambold and Kinchin, who surprised me by receiving my hard saying, that they had not faith. I was ashamed to see the great thankfulness, and childlike, loving spirit of Mr. Kinchin, even before justification.

Thur., August 31st. I waited upon the Dean ; but we could not quite agree in our notions of faith. He wondered we had not hit upon the Homilies sooner : treated me with great candour and friendliness.

At the Society I read my sermon, "The Scripture hath concluded all under sin," and urged upon each my usual question, "Do you deserve to be damned?" Mrs. Platt, with the utmost vehemence, cried out, "Yes ; I do, I do !" I prayed, that if God saw there any contrite soul, he would fulfil his promise, of coming and making his abode with it. "If thou hast sent thy Spirit to reprove any sinner of sin, in the name of Jesus Christ, I claim salvation for that sinner !" Again she broke out into strong cries, but of joy, not sorrow, being quite overpowered with the love of Christ. I asked her, if she believed in Jesus. She answered in full assurance of faith. We sang and rejoiced over her, (she still continued kneeling,) joined in thanksgiving ; but her voice was heard above ours.

Mr. Kinchin asked, "Have you forgiveness of sins?" "I am perfectly assured I have." "Have you the earnest of the Spirit in your heart?" "I have ; I know I have : I feel it now within." Her answers to these and the like questions were expressive of the strongest confidence, to the great encouragement of all present.

I related this at Hutchins's, before Mr. Wells, who seems fully convinced of the truth.

Fri., September 1st. I took coach for London. Between five and six reached Mrs. Claggett's. They heartily joined me in praise and prayer. Mr. Claggett was very friendly. James Hutton supped with us. I found several at Bray's. After prayer he told me, God plainly forbids my return to America, by my success here.

Sun., September 3d. I preached salvation by faith at Westminster Abbey ; gave the cup. In the afternoon I preached at St. Botolph's ; and expounded Rom. ii., at Sims's, to above two hundred people.

Mon., September 4th. Charles Kinchin, now my inseparable companion, accompanied me to Bexley and Blendon. I prayed, and was comforted with the poor people.

Tues., September 5th. Mr. Piers agreed to board my

sister Kezzy. I read my sermon ; prayed and rejoiced with Mrs. Delamotte, and the rest at Blendon. Charles was all thankfulness and love. I returned to town very ill of a sore throat.

Sun., September 10th. I preached faith in the morning at Sir George Wheeler's chapel, and assisted at the sacrament. In the afternoon at St. Botolph's. In the evening at Sims's I was much strengthened to pray and expound to above three hundred attentive souls. Another lost sheep was now brought home.

Fri., September 15th. Meeting Charles Metcalf's mother, I laboured to convince her of unbelief (our first point with all). She yielded at last ; and we joined in earnest prayer for her.

Sat., September 16th. James Hutton came, and carried me perforce to Newgate ; where we preached Christ to four condemned prisoners. At night my brother returned from Hernhuth. We took sweet counsel together, comparing our experiences.

Sun., September 17th. At the early sacrament, my brother read prayers ; I preached "all under sin" in Grace-church-street ; the morning : at Queen's-street chapel in the afternoon. In the evening I preached faith, from Rom. iii., at the Savoy Society. My brother entertained us at night with the Moravian experiences.

Fri., September 22d. At Bray's I expounded Eph. i. A dispute arising about absolute predestination, I entered my protest against that doctrine.

Sun., September 24th. I comforted Mrs. Claggett, much threatened by her husband ; and then Mrs. Hankinson, who has lost several boarders, yet is in nothing terrified by her adversaries. I read prayers in Islington church, and preached with great boldness. There was a vast audience, and better disposed than usual. None went out, as they had threatened, and frequently done heretofore ; especially the well-dressed hearers, "whene'er I mentioned hell to ears polite," and urged that rude question, "Do you deserve to be damned?"

We sang, rejoiced, and gave thanks at Mr. Stonehouse's ; and again at Mrs. Hankinson's. I talked with one of her misses, to whom faith had come by hearing.

Wed., September 27th. In our way to Oxford, I talked closely with my fellow-traveller, Mr. Combes. He expressed his desire of faith : I was moved to sing, "Salvation by faith," then "Faith in Christ." I told him, if the Spirit had convinced him of unbelief, he could of righteousness also, even before we reached Oxford. I stopped and prayed that he might believe. Immediately he told me, he was in such a blessed temper, as he never before experienced. We halted, and went to prayers. He testified the great delight he felt, saying, it was heaven, if it would but continue. While we were discoursing, the fire within him, he said, diffused itself through every part ; he was brim full of joy, (yet not knowing he believed,) and eager to praise God. He called upon me to join. "Was I now in heaven, I could not think of my sins ; I should only think of praising God." We sang and shouted all the way to Oxford.

I met our friends with Mr. Hutchins at Fox's. Mrs. Platt was full of life and love. We read the experiences of the Moravians.

Thur., September 28th. I called on my friend that *was*, John Sarney, now entirely estranged by the offence of the cross. I rode to my *constant* friend, John Gambold. Mr. Combes communicated with us : his warmth, he told me, had returned through his *professing* his faith. I left Mrs. Gambold in confident hope of soon receiving it. I preached boldly at Oxford ; prayed after God, with Mr. Wells.

Sat., September 30th. I returned to town, having in some measure confirmed our friends at Oxford. My brother informed me of one, who was yesterday an open sinner, and to-day received into Christ's church, or the company of faithful people. Mrs. Claggett said, that this morning, in utter despair, she had heard a distinct whisper, "I am the Lord thy God, mighty to save."

Sun., October 1st. I read prayers and gave the sacrament at the quest-room. In the afternoon I read prayers, and preached at St. Margaret's, Westminster.

Mon., October 2d. I dined at Mr. Brockmar's ; and we admonished one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs. I went, with the three Miss Claggetts, to our poor sick woman. My brother and James followed ; then Mrs.

Metcalf and three of the Delamottes. We found her full of triumph, and vehement desires to be dissolved, and to be with Christ. We did this in remembrance of Him.

Thur., October 5th. I went with Sparks to Newgate ; shamefully unwilling : yet preached on repentance with earnest zeal.

Sun., October 8th. I preached at Bexley "all under sin ;" finished my sermon in the afternoon. The people very outrageous. Mrs. Delamotte carried me home. I exhorted my friends in the kitchen. A sermon was read in the parlour. I preached faith in Christ. Mr. Delamotte made no objection, but seemed much pleased.

Mon., October 9th. I walked with Will. to Bexley, where my sermon has occasioned a great uproar.

Wed., October 11th. I got back to my friends in London. I spoke plainly to Mr. Claggett, who has been very violent toward his wife since I left them.

Thur., October 12th. I was at West's with Bray and Sparks, and prayed, pleading the promises in much bodily pain. I asked in faith that it might leave me : it did, while I was walking to James's.

Fri., October 13th. At seven I read prayers and preached at St. Antholin's.

Sun., October 15th. I heard Hutchins at St. Lawrence's : had much comfort and meltings in prayer after the sacrament. I preached the one thing needful at Islington, and added much extempore ; sang at Mr. Stonehouse's : Sims's was excessively crowded in the evening ; spake with much boldness and warmth. At Bray's I found the bands meeting. Mr. Stonehouse was there, in a most childlike spirit. I was moved to pray for him earnestly, and according to God. I asked particularly that some one might *then* receive the atonement. While they were going, E—— came ; complained of the pain and burden of sin, that bruised him. I took him aside with Hutchins. He received faith in immediate answer to our prayer ; professed it ; full of peace, and joy, and love. I expressed a strong desire to pray for Mr. Stonehouse. I prayed again with vehemence and tears. Bray was greatly affected ; so were James and all the rest : yet no answer. Mr. Stonehouse said, the blessing was withheld from him to increase our importunity.

Fri., October 20th. Seeing so few present at St. Antholin's, I thought of preaching extempore : afraid ; yet ventured on the promise, "Lo, I am with you always ;" and spake on justification from Rom. iii., for three quarters of an hour, without hesitation. Glory be to God, who keepeth his promise for ever.

Sat., October 21st. I waited with my brother on the Bishop of London, to answer the complaints he had heard against us, that we preached an absolute assurance of salvation. Some of his words were, "If by 'assurance' you mean an inward persuasion, whereby a man is conscious in himself, after examining his life by the law of God, and weighing his own sincerity, that he is in a state of salvation, and acceptable to God ; I don't see how any good Christian can be without such an assurance." "This," we answered, "is what we contend for : but we have been charged as Antinomians, for preaching justification by faith only." "Can any one preach otherwise, who agrees to our Church and the Scriptures?" "Indeed, by preaching it strongly, and not inculcating good works, many have been made Antinomians in theory, though not in practice : especially in King Charles's time." "But there is a heavy charge against us Bishops, by your bringing the Archbishop's authority for re-baptizing an adult." My brother answered, "That he had expressly declared the contrary : yet," added he, "if a person dissatisfied with lay-baptism should desire episcopal, I should think it my duty to administer it, after having acquainted the Bishop according to the canon." "Well ; I am against it myself, where any one has had the Dissenters' baptism."

Next my brother inquired, whether his reading in a Religious Society made it a conventicle. His Lordship warily referred us to the laws : but upon our urging the question, "Are the Religious Societies conventicles?" he answered, "No ; I think not : however, you can read the acts and laws as well as I : I determine nothing." We hoped his Lordship would not henceforward receive an accusation against a Presbyter, but at the mouth of two or three witnesses. He said, "No ; by no means. And you may have free access to me at all times." We thanked him, and took our leave.

Sun., October 22d. I preached one thing needful at St. Clement's, to a very large audience, (many of whom stayed the communion,) and again at Sir G. Wheeler's chapel.

Tues., October 24th. I told Mr. Claggett, in one of his persecuting fits, that I should be glad to see him when on a sick-bed ; that I had the satisfaction of having him my friend, when he was most so to himself, and to God. He went out to fetch Bishop Taylor to confute me ; but opened upon a place, strongly asserting this living, justifying faith. He owned himself fully convinced ; admired the hand of Providence ; confessed he had loathed the sight of me, and hated me from his heart ; but now loved me entirely, and all mankind ; could hug me in his bosom ; never knew such comfort in his life, as at this moment ; could not be beat out of it by all the world. Alas ! that this morning-cloud should ever pass away !

Thur., October 26th. At M. Hind's I was charged by Mr. Capell, with particularly pleading the promises. I confessed, and justified it. James came to second me. We were both zealous, not angry.

Fri., October 27th. I was at Mr. Sparks's, who is fully persuaded his sins are forgiven.

Sun., October 29th. I preached with strength at St. George's ; then at Ironmongers' Almshouses ; and at night expounded Rom v. to a large audience in the Minorities.

Thur., November 2d. I was much affected in praying for Mr. Stonehouse.

Fri., November 3d. I sang with him ; envied his exquisite tenderness of conscience. I walked with Metcalf and Betty Claggett to visit a woman dying in the faith ; thence to Miss Reeves, who is now assured of her acceptance with God.

Sat., November 4th. I preached at St. Antholin's, reconciling those who never differed, St. Paul and St. James.

Sun., November 5th. I preached the three-fold state at St. Alban's, Wood-street : then expounded at Sims's.

Tues., November 7th. At Newgate I was melted down under the word I spake.

Wed., November 8th. At Bexley. Mr. Piers, through fear of the world's threatenings, had left off the meeting on Wednesday night. My sister would not give up her pre-

tensions to faith ; told me, half angry, " Well, you will know in the next world, whether I have faith or no." I asked her, " Will you then discharge me, in the sight of God, from speaking to you again ? If you will, I promise never more to open my mouth till we meet in eternity." She burst into tears, fell on my neck, and melted me into fervent prayer for her.

Sat., November 11th. Charles Graves came, and rejoiced my heart with the account of his having received the atonement.

Sun., November 12th. Mr. Piers refused me his pulpit, through fear of man ; pretending tenderness to his flock. I plainly told him, if he so rejected my testimony, I would come to see him no more. I walked back to town in the strength of the Lord ; and expounded at Sims's. All were dissolved in tears.

Mon., November 13th. Charles brought Mr. W. Seward ; a zealous soul, knowing only the baptism of John.

Tues., November 14th. I had another conference with his Lordship of London. " I have used your Lordship's permission to wait upon you. A woman desires me to baptize her ; not being satisfied with her baptism by a Dissenter : she says sure and unsure is not the same." He immediately took fire, and interrupted me : " I wholly disapprove of it : it is irregular." " My Lord, I did not expect your approbation. I only came, in obedience, to give you notice of my intention." " It is irregular. I never receive any such information, but from the Minister." " My Lord, the Rubric does not so much as require the Minister to give you notice, but any discreet person. I have the Minister's leave." " Who gave you authority to baptize ?" " Your Lordship : and I shall exercise it in any part of the known world." " Are you a licensed Curate ?" " I have the leave of the proper Minister." " But don't you know, no man can exercise parochial duty in London, without my leave ? It is only *sub silentio*." " But you know many do take that permission for authority ; and you yourself allow it." " It is one thing to connive, and another to approve. I have power to inhibit you." " Does your Lordship exert that power ? Do you now inhibit me ?" " O, why will you push things to an

extreme? I do not inhibit you." "Why then, my Lord, according to your own concession, you permit or authorize me." "I have a power to punish, and to forbear punishing." "That seems to imply, that I have done something worthy of punishment. I should be glad to know, that I may answer. Does your Lordship charge me with any crime?" "No, no: I charge you with no crime." "Do you then dispense with my giving you notice of any baptisms for the future?" "I neither dispense, nor not dispense."

He railed at Lawrence on lay-baptism; blamed my brother's sermon, as inclining to Antinomianism. I charged Archbishop Tillotson with denying the faith. He allowed it, and owned they ran into one extreme, to avoid another. He concluded the conference with, "Well, Sir, you knew my judgment before, and you know it now. Good morrow to you."

I read prayers at Islington, and baptized an adult; Mr. Stonehouse, M. Sims, and M. Burton, being the witnesses.

Wed., November 15th. I dined at old Mr. Hutton's. They could scarcely be civil. Surely for Christ's sake have we lost this friendly family.

Thur., November 16th. After morning prayers, I baptized Mrs. Bell with hypothetical baptism. I sang and prayed with assistance, at Mr. Stonehouse's. Then Mrs. Wren confessed, she had been in bondage ten years, but received the atonement on Tuesday night, while we were praying: was now perfectly free: full of peace, and joy in believing. Another professed her faith lately received. I dined at my friend Stonehouse's, who very kindly offers to keep my brother and me.

M. Hankinson carried me to a poor woman, broken, bruised, and bound by sin. After prayer she arose, loosed from her bond, and glorified God.

Sat., November 18th. I had a joyful meeting with my dear Charles Delamotte, just returned from Georgia. I found, in conversation, that he had received forgiveness five months ago; and continued in peace and liberty.

Sun., November 19th. At Dr. Crow's desire, I preached in his church at Bishopsgate; and dined at Mr. Brockmar's, where Mr. Seward testified faith.

I visited a poor woman of eighty-four; who told me

she was reserved for some work of God : was soon beat out of her own works ; and in the midst of prayer set at liberty. She rose, caught hold of me, declared her enlargement ; that she was now at ease, ready to go into eternity this moment. She prayed for and blessed me with great earnestness.

Mon., November 20th. I had a most comfortable sacrament at Bray's ; Mr. Sparks, the three Miss Claggetts, &c., partaking. I passed the evening at Blendon, in prayer and thanksgiving.

Tues., November 21st. I communicated again at Bray's. I triumphed with some who are persecuted for righteousness' sake.

Wed., November 22d. I set out in the coach for Oxford.

Fri., November 24th. I met Charles Kinchin there. I received the blessed sacrament at Mrs. Townsend's, with much comfort.

Sat., November 25th. I felt a pining desire to die ; foreseeing the infinite dangers and troubles of life. At Mr. Wells's I preached *the* faith of the Gospel to him and Mr. Hoare. Charles carried me to the Castle. I read prayers, and was afterwards constrained to speak freely and fully. I was much cheered by it myself. I rode with Mr. Wells and Kinchin to Cogg's, where we spent the evening in prayer and the Scriptures.

Sun., November 26th. I preached the three-fold state at Cogg's : then rode on to my brother Gambold's.

Tues., November 28th. I dined in Christ-Church Hall, as one not belonging to them.

Wed., November 29th. After morning prayers, I called on Mr. Whitefield, who pressed me to accept of a College living. I read prayers, and preached at the Castle.

Thur., November 30th. I paid Mr. Gambold another visit, and parted with the sacrament.

Tues., December 5th. I was at Convocation ; where honest John Chicheley was presented with his degree ; having before got orders, for which he came to England.

Thur., December 7th. I read prayers again to the poor prisoners in Bocardo.

Sat., December 9th. I was with the Dean ; who complained of my brother's obscurity in his sermon on salva-

tion; and expressly denied the assurance of faith, and earnest of the Spirit.

Sun., December 10th. I preached at the Castle, "All under sin," and helped to administer the sacrament. I read prayers, and preached there again in the afternoon.

Mon., December 11th. I came in the coach to Wycombe. I lodged at Mr. Hollis's, who entertained me with his French Prophets, equal, in his account, if not superior, to the Old-Testament ones. While we were undressing, he fell into violent agitations, and gobbled like a turkey-cock. I was frightened, and began exorcising him with, "Thou deaf and dumb devil," &c. He soon recovered out of his fit of inspiration. I prayed, and went to bed, not half liking my bedfellow. I did not sleep very sound with Satan so near me. I got to London by one the next day. George Whitefield came to J. Bray's soon after me. I was full of vehement desire in prayer. I heard him preach to a vast throng at St. Helen's.

Thur., December 14th. I heard a glorious account of the success of the Gospel at Islington. Some of the fiercest opposers are converted.

Fri., December 15th. At Mr. Stonehouse's I met Mrs. Vaughan, full of joy in the Holy Ghost, but not without a mixture of nature.

Sat., December 16th. Hester Hobson and her sister called, being sick of love to Christ crucified. My soul, in and after prayer with them, was all desire and expectation.

Sun., December 17th. I met Mr. Broughton at M. Hind's. The last time we had parted good friends, and he thanked me for my friendly offices with Miss Reeves. He now desired me to get from her a discharge.

Mon., December 18th. She told me she fully released him from his promises, but durst not give him a written discharge, lest her brother should cast her off.

Tues., December 19th. I asked my friend Stonehouse, "Dost thou believe in the Son of God?" And he could confidently answer, "Yes, I do, and now know that I believe." We sang (M. Hankinson joining us) in the spirit of faith, and triumphed in the name of the Lord our God.

Thur., December 21st. At St. Antholin's the Clerk asked me my name, and said, "Dr. Venn has forbidden any

Methodist to preach. Do you call yourself a Methodist?" "I do not: the world may call me what they please." "Well, Sir," said he, "it is pity the people should go away without preaching. You may preach." I did so, on good works.

Sat., December 23d. I was deeply affected in singing at Blendon: retired, and poured out my soul in prayer for love.

Christmas day. I preached at Islington in the morning, and gave the cup: George Stonehouse in the afternoon.

Tues., December 26th. George Whitefield preached. We had the sacrament this and the four following days. On Thursday my brother preached; on Friday, George Whitefield; and on Saturday, Mr. Robson. The whole week was a festival indeed; a joyful season, holy unto the Lord.

PART IV.

FROM JANUARY 2D, 1739, TO NOVEMBER 6TH, 1739.

TUESDAY, January 2d, 1739. I was at Mr. Stonehouse's, with M. Vaughan and others. I urged him to throw away his mystics; but he adhered to them with the greater obstinacy. I saw myself in him.

Wed., January 3d. To-day our sister Butcher died (the first that has) triumphant in the faith. At five she said, "I trust only to the blood of Christ. I cast myself at his feet; and if I perish, I perish." Soon after, "Now I am sure of heaven." Her last breath was spent in exhorting her husband and the rest to confide in Jesus Christ.

Fri., January 5th. My brother, Mr. Seward, Hall, Whitefield, Ingham, Kinchin, Hutchins, all set upon me; but I could not agree to settle at Oxford, without farther direction from God.

Sat., January 6th. Mr. Sparks and I were at Mr. Howard's; who denied any real communion we can have with God.

Sun., January 7th. I was offended much at some orders which Bray, &c., were imposing on the society.

Wed., January 10th. I met Mr. Broughton, who la-

boured hard to persuade me to make affidavit of what Miss Reeves had said. I positively refused it, as treachery to her, both in him and me.

Mr. Thorold expounded at the Society. We had some discourse about agitations: no sign of grace, in my humble opinion.

Thur., January 11th. I met a Moravian and his wife. She related her genuine conversion: had received forgiveness *before* the abiding witness of the Spirit.

Sat., January 13th. Pierced with the prayers of Hester Hobson, I expected a fresh manifestation of Christ continually: which I found the next day at the sacrament.

Mon., January 15th. I was at Mr. Stonehouse's when Mr. Silvester came. Mr. Stonehouse insisted upon choosing a Lecturer himself. I attended him to Mr. Lloyd, the Reader. We had close talk of faith. Both he and Mrs. Lloyd are convinced.

Tues., January 16th. I prayed in faith for her. Immediately she was filled with comfort. I called on Mr. Wilde, who tells me, he lately received forgiveness under my sermon.

Wed., January 17th. George Whitefield gave us so promising account of Oxford, that I found myself strongly inclined to go.

Sun., January 21st. I was much affected under Mr. Stonehouse's sermon. I preached myself in the afternoon, to a crowded church, on justification by faith.

Mon., January 22d. Lady Crisp sent for me. I went, and found Mr. Stonehouse there. She behaved with great courtesy. I transcribed an hymn for Miss. After supper, her Ladyship spoke largely in praise of marriage. I saw, and pitied, my poor friend, sorely beset. We sang. It was late before we parted.

Tues., January 23d. M. Vaughan seemed deeply humbled, under a sense of her late vain, confident delusions.

Wed., January 24th. I expounded, (for the benefit of two Clergymen present,) "Know ye not, that your bodies are the temples of the Holy Ghost?" and proved the promise of the Spirit to all, both from Scripture and our own Church.

Thur., January 25th. I expounded at Brockmar's. The Lord was present. A woman stopped me departing; con-

fessed herself under the full power of the devil ; fell at my feet. We prayed in confidence. On my mentioning in prayer the absolved adulteress, she cried out, "I have received the comfort !" I rose full of love, and joy, and triumph : whereof we were all partakers.

I was sent for to Bray : the three Miss Newtons were there. I expounded again with power.

Fri., January 26th. At Dr. Newton's I sang and prayed with them : much affected now ; well pleased last night.

Sat., January 27th. I carried Bray to Mrs. Whitcomb's ; the Claggetts, Metcalf, and his mother, and Hester Hobson were there. We communicated, prayed, and sang with great life and comfort. I slept at Blendon.

Sun., January 28th. I preached on "the three states" at Bexley. Some went out of church : and more in the afternoon, while I expounded, "Woe is unto me, if I preach not the Gospel." I was quite spent ; yet renewed my strength for the poor people at night.

Wed., January 31st. I told Mr. Delamotte he was not converted, had not the Spirit, or faith, and begged him to pray God to show him wherein he was wanting. He could not receive my saying, yet was not angry. Mrs. Delamotte was quite transported with joy and love. In the stage-coach with my sister Kez, I found three women, and was very loath to speak ; yet broke through, and laboured to convince them of sin and of righteousness. They all assented to the truth, and were, I hope, in some measure awakened to pursue the one thing needful. I left Kez at my aunt's, in Islington. I assisted to expound at the Society, and slept at J. Bray's in peace.

Fri., February 2d. With Charles Metcalf I visited that worthy man, Zouberbuhler, in the Marshalsea for debt ; much moved at his afflictions.

Sun., February 4th. At night walked over the fields from Islington, several of us, with the voice of joy and thanksgiving.

Thur., February 8th. I carried Zouberbuhler the news of his goods being redeemed by Mr. Seward. I visited him again on Saturday, and was drawn in compassion towards him, and faith for him. At Islington I rejoiced over a dying believer.

Sat., February 10th. I expounded to many hundreds at a Society in Beech-lane.

Sun., February 11th. We prayed for utterance this day. My brother preached. I was comforted in the sacrament. I prayed again at Mr. Stonehouse's for a blessing upon my ministry. (Lady Crisp with my brother.) I read prayers, and preached without notes on blind Bartimeus; the Lord being greatly my helper. Let Him have all the glory. I returned to pray at Mr. Stonehouse's. Miss Crisp asked to be admitted. We had close searching talk, before I expounded to the Society.

Mon., February 12th. Mrs. Wheeler tells me, she received Christ last Saturday, being weighed down with the fear of death, and delivered in a moment; melted into love; able to apply Christ and all the promises to herself. Mr. Stonehouse informed me of a woman who had rejected him last week; but now sent for him; received the sacrament; was reconciled to God and him; and died in peace.

Tues., February 13th. I read a letter from Sarah Hurst, pressing me to Oxford, and Cowley (which is now vacant). Quite resigned, I offered myself; opened the book upon those words, "With stammering lips, and with another tongue will he speak to this people." I thought it a prohibition, yet continued without a will. I was with Captain Flatman at the Marshalsea; read prayers, and preached from Luke vii. 36, the woman washing Christ's feet. The word was with power: all were attentive and thankful. I visited Zouberbuhler, removed to the Fleet.

Wed., February 14th. I read prayers at Newgate, and preached the law first, and then the Gospel. We sang, "Invitation to sinners." All were affected.

Thur., February 15th. I preached again at the Marshalsea. I was sent for by an harlot, (supposed to be dying,) and preached Christ, the friend of sinners, I trust to her heart. I read prayers at Islington. Miss Crisp asked me home. My Lady was there. We had pertinent discourse. The younger went with me to M. Hankinson's; extremely desirous of faith. I prayed for her with great earnestness. At the Society I expounded the woman of Samaria. When I had done, she ran to me, and cried, "I do, I do believe!

Those words which you spoke came with power, ‘Him that cometh unto me, I will in no wise cast out.’ An unknown peace flowed with them into my soul.” We sang, rejoiced, and gave thanks to the pardoning God in her behalf.

Sun., February 18th. I preached at Islington, on the woman that *was* a sinner; at the Marshalsea, from Rom. iii. I prayed by the sick woman: expounded at Sims’s to two several companies.

Mon., February 19th. I prayed in the prison with Anne Dodd, well-disposed, weary of sin, longing to break loose. I preached powerfully on the last day. I prayed after God for the poor harlots. Our sisters carried away one in triumph. I followed to M. Hanson’s, who took charge of the returning prodigal. Our hearts were overflowed with pity for her. She seemed confounded, silent, testifying her joy and love by her tears only. We sang and prayed over her in great confidence.

At three I met Miss Crisp at M. Claggetts, who helped me to rejoice for the lost sheep which I have found. In the evening I expounded at Mr. Hind’s. A lady was deeply wounded.

Tues., February 20th. I waked full of concern for the poor harlot; and began an hymn for her. At five I called on Miss Crisp; then on Mr. Stonehouse, where I expounded the woman taken in adultery.

Wed., February 21st. I heard that Cowley living was disposed of; and rejoiced. With my brother I waited on the Archbishop. He showed us great affection; spoke mildly of Mr. Whitefield; cautioned us to give no more umbrage than was necessary for our own defence; to forbear exceptionable phrases; to keep to the doctrines of the Church. We told him we expected persecution; would abide by the Church till her Articles and Homilies were repealed. He assured us he knew of no design in the governors of the Church to innovate; and neither should there be any innovation while he lived: avowed justification by faith only; and his joy to see us as often as we pleased.

From him we went to the Bishop of London; who denied his having condemned or even heard much of us. G. Whitefield’s Journal, he said, was tainted with enthusiasm, though

he was himself a pious, well-meaning youth. He warned us against Antinomianism, and dismissed us kindly.

I went in quest of a lost sheep, and found her coming with Bray from public prayers. She had been in deep distress ; pierced with every word at the two last expoundings ; almost fainted away this morning, weary and heavy-laden. She told Bray, God could not forgive her, her sins were so great. She could not bear our triumph. We wrestled in prayer for her ; and she declared her burden taken off, and her soul at peace. The more we prayed, the clearer still she was ; till at last she testified that she did believe in Jesus with her whole heart. We continued in mighty prayer for all gross sinners ; and I offered myself willingly to be employed peculiarly in their service.

Sun., February 25th. I preached justification by faith at Bexley. In the beginning of my discourse about twenty went out of church. They were better pleased with (or at least more patient of) me in the afternoon, while I preached on the woman at our Saviour's feet. Faint and spent at Blendon, I revived by exhorting above two hundred of the poor.

Mon., February 26th. In our chapel I read Beveridge's sermon on the ministry, too much wanted by Betsy, and others, who are running into wild notions. The people came at night, and we were all comforted together by the word.

Wed., February 28th. I met the bands at J. Bray's, and cautioned them against schism. I was violently opposed by one who should have seconded me. They urged me to go to Oxford : but I understood them, and begged to be excused.

Sat., March 3d. I expounded to upward of three hundred hearers at Beech-lane.

Sun., March 4th. I read prayers, and preached, and administered the sacrament at St. Catherine's ; at Islington from John iii. ; then expounded with much life at Mr. Sims's ; and lastly at Mr. Bell's. I concluded the labour of the day with prayer among the bands.

Thur., March 8th. In the midst of earnest prayer at J. Bray's, a woman received power to become a child of God.

Sat., March 10th. I went to Newgate with my usual

reluctance ; preached with freedom ; and in prayer had great power, as all present seemed to confess. I expounded at Beach-lane : in prayer I asked some token, if our Gospel really is a ministration of the Spirit ; and I inquired if any had received an answer. One, and another, and another testified their sense of the divine presence. We rejoiced as men that divide the spoil.

Sun., March 11th. I preached justification at St. Catherine's. I baptized two women at Islington, (five adults I baptized some time before,) and preached with great liberty from the woman of Samaria. My friend Stonehouse was very peevish with me for a trifle, and very warm. I kept my temper, but was hindered in my expounding by his disputes. I encouraged Miss Crisp, now persecuted by her relations. I envied the dead at M. Vaughan's. I had serious talk with Stonehouse, in defence of Miss Crisp. Both were humbled.

Mon., March 12th. I was at Newgate with Bray. I prayed, sang, exhorted with great life and vehemence. I talked in the cells to two Papists, who renounced all merit but that of Jesus Christ. I expounded at Bray's on the day of judgment. The power of the Lord was present to wound. A woman cried out as in an agony. Another sank down overpowered. All were moved and melted, as wax before the fire. At eight I expounded on Dowgate-hill. Two were then taken into the fold.

Wed., March 14th. I found one of the Papists full of peace and joy in believing, immediately after we prayed.

Tues., March 20th. A double power and blessing accompanied my word at Fetter-lane.

Thur., March 22d. I was at the Marshalsea with Mr. Oakley. I prayed with the sick ; read prayers, and expounded the lesson.

Sun., March 25th. Betty Hopson came, and prayed that to-day we might have a feast of fat things. Mr. Stonehouse was full of love, and preached an excellent sermon on faith. After the sacrament we continued our triumph. I preached with power, "Lazarus raised." Then sang and prayed at the room. Great was our rejoicing in the Lord. I buried a corpse, and exhorted the congregation. I expounded at Mr. Stonehouse's with great enlargement. An opposer

was troublesome, till we prayed him down. I visited Mr. Lloyd, and then M. Vaughan, both as full of love and joy as they could contain. By midnight I rested with Oakley at J. Bray's.

Tues., March 27th. At Mr. Crouch's I expounded on persecution. A man cried out, "That's a lie." We betook ourselves to prayer and singing. The shout of a King was in the midst of us. The man came up quite affable. Another asked what that comfort and joy meant : I calmly invited him to experience it.

Wed., March 28th. We dissuaded my brother from going to Bristol, from an unaccountable fear that it would prove fatal to him. A great power was among us. He offered himself willingly to whatsoever the Lord should appoint. The next day he set out, commended by us to the grace of God. He left a blessing behind. I desired to die with him.

Sun., April 1st. I preached at St. Catherine's, where I met my old friend Mrs. Paine, of East-Grinstead. I administered the sacrament. I dined at Chrissy Anderson's ; went in a coach with her and Esther to Islington ; comforted in the way while singing. I expounded the good Samaritan, with divine assistance. I prayed at Fetterlane, that the Lord might be in the midst of us ; received a remarkable answer. B. Nowers, in strong pangs, groaned, screamed, roared out. I was not offended by it,—nor edified. We sang and praised God with all our might. I could not get home till eleven.

Wed., April 4th. At Mr. West's I rejoiced over an happy soul, who received faith under my last expounding.

Fri., April 6th. I convinced a woman of sin ; found another convinced of righteousness. A man, who had rejected me, was now overpowered. Mrs. Daniel and Winstone were apprehended by Christ.

Sun., April 15th. At Islington in the vestry, the Churchwardens demanded my licence. I wrote down my name ; preached with increase of power, on the woman taken in adultery. None went out. I gave the cup. At night I waited upon Count Zinzendorf with Bray and Hutton. He received us very cordially ; told us of six hundred Moors converted, two hundred Greenlanders, three hundred

Hottentots. *Saluta meo nomine fratres et sorores. Christi Spiritum illis apprecor.*

We found his prayers answered at the Society. Two received forgiveness; many were filled with unutterable groanings; all received some spiritual gift. We could not part; but continued our triumph till the morning.

Mon., April 16th. The Count visited us in Fetter-lane, and answered the several questions we proposed to him. To-day I first saw Miss Raymond, and Mr. Rogers, at the expounding.

Tues., April 17th. I tried in vain to check Mr. Shaw in his wild rambling talk against the Christian priesthood. At last I told him, I would oppose him to the utmost; and either he or I must quit the Society.

I assisted Mr. Stonehouse again (as every day this great and holy week) in administering the sacrament. The presence of the Lord was much with us; and again at night, in the word expounded.

Wed., April 18th. I met Shaw at James's. He insisted that there is no priesthood; but he himself could baptize and administer the other sacrament as well as any man. At Mrs. Claggett's I met Mr. Rogers and Miss Raymond; and prayed earnestly for her.

In my expounding, I warned them strongly against schism; into which Shaw's notions must necessarily lead. The Society were all for my brother's immediate return.

Thur., April 19th. I found Mr. Stonehouse exactly right: warned Mrs. Vaughan (Hunter, half-perverted) and Brockmars against Shaw's pestilent errors, and spoke strongly at the Savoy Society, in behalf of the Church of England.

Good-Friday, April 20th. Mrs. Acourt was this day justified, in answer to our prayer. I felt life under Mr. Stonehouse's sermon. From church I went to the house to pray. J. Bray gave me the Gospel for the day to expound. I besought them, in strong words, not to rend the seamless coat by their divisions. J. Bray himself, that pillar of our Church, begins to shake. At night I preached to the Society in Wapping.

Sat., April 21st. I was with James at the Count's, who spoke much against the intended separation of our brethren. I met Metcalf, wholly perverted, a rank Quaker!

Easter-day, April 22d. I talked with the Count, about motions, visions, dreams, and was confirmed in my dislike to them.

Wed., April 25th. I began Potter on Church Government : a seasonable antidote against the growing spirit of delusion. I heard G. Whitefield, very powerful, at Fetter-lane. I was with him and Howel Harris, a man after my own heart. George related the dismal effects of Shaw's doctrine at Oxford. Both Howel and he insisted on Shaw's expulsion from the Society. Poor Metcalf had little to say for his friend and master.

Fri., April 27th. I heard G. Whitefield in Islington church-yard. The numerous congregation could not have been more affected within the walls. I exhorted them at Fetter-lane to continue steadfast in the means of grace.

Sat., April 28th. Mr. Stonehouse was much concerned that we should so misunderstand, as if he had forbid G. Whitefield's preaching in his church. To-day he preached out again. After him, Bowers got up to speak : I conjured him not ; but he beat me down, and *followed his impulse*. I carried many away with me. In the evening I expounded at Exall's. A woman received the atonement.

Sun., April 29th. At Islington vestry the Churchwardens forbid my preaching : demanded my local licence. I said nothing but that "I heard them." Scions was very abusive ; bidding me shake off the dust of my feet, &c. ; and said, "You have all the spirit of the devil," mentioning Mr. Whitefield, Stonehouse, and me by name.

After prayers Mr. Stonehouse made way for me to the pulpit : I offered to go up, when one Cotteril, and a Beadle, forcibly kept me back. I thought of, "The servant of the Lord must not strive ;" and yielded. Mr. Streat preached. I assisted at the sacrament. I preached afterwards at our house, and prayed fervently for the opposers. I waited on Justice Elliot. He had gone with Sir John Gunson into the vestry, and severely chid the Churchwardens ; who had made the Clerk read the canon, call a vestry, &c. Mr. Streat advised to ask Mr. Stonehouse to discharge me from ever preaching again.

In the afternoon Scions abused Streat himself at the vestry ; abused us ; owned he said, "the devil was in us

all." I read prayers; Mr. Scott preached. At night I was greatly strengthened to expound, and pray for our persecutors. All were mild and peaceable among the bands. I heard that George had had above ten thousand hearers.

Mon., April 30th. I preached at the Marshalsea. Mr. Stonehouse told us, he had been with the Bishop, but left him close, shut up, sour, refusing to answer but to the written case. At James's I rejoiced to find Charles Metcalf coming back.

Tues., May 1st. During the time of prayers, the Churchwardens still kept guard on the pulpit-stairs. I was not inclined to fight my way through them. Mr. Stonehouse preached a thundering sermon (unless their consciences are seared). I took notes of it. I took water with James for Hastings. A poor harlot was struck down by the word. She, and all, were melted into tears, and prayers, and strong cries for her. I have a good hope this brand will also be plucked out of the fire.

Wed., May 2d. She was at Fetter-lane, where I expounded the prodigal.

Thur., May 10th. I expounded at Blendon; many fine folk from Eltham attending.

Fri., May 11th. I prayed at Welling, with a dying man, full of humility, and faith, and love.

Sun., May 13th. I was enabled to discourse from the prodigal, at Bexley.

Mon., May 14th. At West's my mouth was opened to expound Rom. viii. Miss Raymond was among my hearers.

Tues., May 15th. She was brought so strongly to my mind, that I was even constrained to pray for her with tears.

Wed., May 16th. I preached with power and freedom in the Marshalsea. I prayed by Mrs. Cameron; who owned herself convinced. She had been a Deist, because it is so incredible the Almighty God should condescend to die for his creatures.

I attended G. Whitefield to Blackheath. He preached in the rain to many listening sinners. At Fetter-lane a dispute arose about lay-preaching. Many, particularly Bray and Fish, were very zealous for it. Mr. Whitefield and I declared against it.

Sat., May 19th. At the Common, George preached from,

"The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee." In the evening I found my brother at Mr. Hodges's.

Sun., May 20th. I received the sacrament at St. Paul's, with best part of our Society.

Mon., May 21st. At Mrs. Claggett's I found Miss Raymond, Rogers, J. Cennick, Harris, Whitefield, Piriam, Mason, the Delamottes. Mr. Claggett was very friendly, and invited me to Broadoaks.

Tues., May 22d. Miss Raymond carried me in her coach to Islington. My friend Stonehouse was delighted to see me. We sang together and prayed, as in the months that are past.

Thur., May 24th. J. Bray took upon him to reprove me for checking the course of the Spirit. I made him no answer ; but I believe not every spirit ; nor any till I have tried it by the fruits and the written word.

I met Miss Raymond, (as almost every day,) and joined with her and our friends in prayer and singing. Mr. Claggett pressed me now, with the utmost importunity, to go with him to-morrow.

Fri., May 25th. At noon I set out on horseback ; our sisters in the chaise. By two the next day, we surprised Miss Betty at Broadoaks. I was full of prayer, that the Lord would gather a church in this place.

Sun., May 27th. Still Mr. Claggett opposed my preaching. I went to church, where I preached the new birth. We returned singing. Mr. Claggett still more violent. I told him, he was doing the devil's work. Between jest and earnest, he struck me ; raged exceedingly to see the people come flocking to the word. God gave me utterance to make known the mystery of the Gospel to four or five hundred listening souls.

Tues., May 29th. Franklyn, a farmer, invited me to preach in his field. I did so, to about five hundred, on, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." I returned to the house rejoicing.

Wed., May 30th. I convinced a sick man of unbelief. Another on his death-bed received forgiveness, and witnessed a good confession. I invited near a thousand sinners (with whom the whole house was filled at night) to come weary and heavy-laden to Christ for rest.

Thur., May 31st. A Quaker sent me a pressing invitation to preach at Thackstead. I scrupled preaching in another's parish, till I had been refused the church. Many Quakers, and near seven hundred others, attended, while I declared in the highways, "The Scripture hath concluded all under sin."

Fri., June 1st. My subject, to above one thousand attentive sinners, was, "He shall save his people from their sins." Many showed their emotion by their tears.

Sat., June 2d. At six I set out for London, with a quiet mind, leaving my beloved friends in the hands of God. The first thing I heard in town was, that my poor friend Stonehouse was actually married. It is a satisfaction to me, that I had no hand in it.

Sun., June 3d. G. Whitefield advised me (I thank him for his love) to follow Mr. Stonehouse's example. He preached in the morning in Moorfields, and in the evening at Kennington-Common, to an innumerable multitude.

Mon., June 4th. I walked with a young Quaker to Islington church. Satan hindered me; so Mr. Scott baptized him. He told me afterwards, "When the words were speaking, I sensibly found the Holy Ghost descend into my soul; the joy rose higher and higher, till at last I could neither speak nor move; but seemed rapt into the third heaven."

I had some conversation with Mrs. Stonehouse; surely a gracious, lovely soul; then with him. We joined in prayer; and I was better reconciled to their sudden marriage. I met Shaw, the self-ordained Priest. He was brim full of proud wrath and fierceness. His spirit suited to his principles. I could do him no good; but was kept calm and benevolent towards him; therefore he could do me no harm. I stood by G. Whitefield, while he preached on the mount in Blackheath. The cries of the wounded were heard on every side. What has Satan gained by turning him out of the churches?

Tues., June 5th. I was with him at Blendon. Bowers and Bray followed us thither, drunk with the spirit of delusion. George honestly said, "They were two grand enthusiasts."

Wed., June 6th. Above sixty of the poor people had

passed the night in Mr. Delamotte's barn, singing and rejoicing. I sang and prayed with them before the door. George's exhortation left them all in tears.

At the Society in the evening, Shaw pleaded for his spirit of prophecy ; charged me with love of pre-eminence ; with making my proselytes twofold more children of the devil than before. Fish said, he looked upon me as delivered over to Satan, &c. They declared themselves no longer members of the Church of England. We were kept tolerably meek ; and parted at eleven. Now am I clear of them. By renouncing the Church, they have discharged me.

Thur., June 7th. Many of our friends have been pestered by the French Prophets, and such-like *pretenders* to inspiration. J. Bray is the foremost to listen to them, and often carried away with their delusions. To-day I had the happiness to find at his house the famous Prophetess Lavington. She was sitting by Bowers ; and Mrs. Sellers on the other side. The Prophet Wise asked, "Can a man attain perfection here?" I answered, "No." The Prophetess began groaning. I turned, and said, "If you have anything to speak, speak it." She lifted up her voice, like the lady on the tripod, and cried out vehemently, "Look for perfection ; I say absolute perfection !" I was minded to rebuke her ; but God gave me uncommon recollection, and command of spirit, so that I sat quiet, and replied not. I offered at last to sing, which she allowed, but did not join. Bray pressed me to stay, and hear her pray. They knelt ; I stood. She prayed most pompously, addressing to Bray with particular encomiums. I durst not say, Amen. She concluded with an horrible hellish laugh ; and endeavoured to turn it off. She showed violent displeasure against our baptized Quaker, saying, "God had showed her, he would destroy all outward things."

Fri. and Sat., June 8th and 9th. I took the deposition of Anne Graham, M. Biddle, and M. Rigby, concerning her lewd life and conversation ; and warned our friends everywhere against her. I joined at West's with Hutchins and Miss Kinchin, in earnest prayer for the promise of the Father.

Whitsunday, June 10th, 1739. I read the Society my account of the Prophetess. All were shocked but poor J.

Bray. He now *appeared*, and strongly withstood me, and vindicated that Jezebel. I gave no place to him, no, not for a moment. My natural temper was kept down, and changed into a passionate concern for him, which I expressed in prayers and tears. All besides him were melted down. I kissed him, and testified my love; but could make no impression.

Mon., June 11th. I expounded with great liberty of spirit; and found the blessing of opposition.

Tues., June 12th. I heard more of my Prophetess, who told a brother, that she can command Christ to come to her in what shape she pleases; as a dove, an eagle, &c. The devil owed her a shame by bringing her again to Bray's. Wise, her gallant, came first; whom I urged with a plain question, whether he had or had not cohabited with her. He was *forced* to confess he had. J. Bray was vehement in her defence; when she came in; flew upon us like a tigress; tried to outface me; insisted that she was immediately inspired. I prayed. She cried, "The devil was in me. I was a fool, a blockhead, a blind leader of the blind; put out the people's eyes," &c. She roared outrageously; said it was the lion in her. (True; but not the Lion of Judah.) She *would* come to the Society in spite of me: if not, they would all go down.

I asked, "Who is on God's side? Who for the old Prophets rather than the new? Let them follow me." They followed me into the preaching-room. I prayed, and expounded the lesson with extraordinary power. The women, several of them, gave an account of their conversion through my ministry. Our dear brother Bowers confessed himself convinced of his error. We rejoiced and triumphed in the name of the Lord our God.

Wed., June 13th. My brother returned. We had over the Prophetess's affair before the Society. Bray and Bowers were much humbled. All agreed to disown the Prophetess. Brother Hall proposed expelling Shaw and Wolf. We consented, *nem. con.*, that their names should be erased out of the Society-book, because they disowned themselves members of the Church of England.

Thur., June 14th. I heard my brother preach on Blackheath, "Christ our wisdom, righteousness, sanctification,

and redemption." We continued at the Green Man's, singing and rejoicing. George Whitefield gave a lively exhortation to about thirty of us. I slept with Seward and my brother.

Fri., June 15th. The last time I had met Mr. Stonehouse and our opposers in the vestry, he astonished by telling me, "He had consented that I should preach no more." I thought in myself, "What is man? or what is friendship?" and said nothing. To-day, in company with my brother and him, I mentioned, without intending it, my exclusion through his consent. He pleaded, that the Bishop of London had justified his Churchwardens in their forcible expulsion of me: but at last was quite melted down; would do anything to repair his fault; resolved no other should be excluded by him, as I had been.

Sun., June 17th. My brother preached to above ten thousand people (as was supposed) in Moorfields, and to a still larger congregation on Kennington-Common. I preached twice in the prison.

Mon., June 18th. I sang and prayed at Mrs. Euster's, a lively, gracious soul; but too apt to depend on her inward feelings.

Tues., June 19th. I was at Lambeth with Mr. Piers. His Grace expressly forbid him to let any of us preach in his church: charged us with breach of the canon. I mentioned the Bishop of London's authorizing my forcible exclusion. He would not hear me; said he did not dispute. He asked me what call I had. I answered, "A dispensation of the Gospel is committed to me." "That is, to St. Paul; but I do not dispute: and will not proceed to excommunication yet." "Your Grace has taught me in your book on Church Government, that a man unjustly excommunicated is not thereby cut off from communion with Christ." "Of that I am the judge." I asked him, if Mr. Whitefield's success was not a spiritual sign, and sufficient proof of his call: recommended Gamaliel's advice. He dismissed us; Piers, with kind professions; me, with all the marks of his displeasure.

I felt nothing in my heart but peace. I prayed and sang at Bray's: but some hours after, at West's, sank down in great heaviness and discouragement. I found a little

relief from the scripture that first offered : Acts xvii. 3 : "Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead ; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ."

Fri., June 22d. The sower of tares is beginning to trouble us with disputes about predestination. My brother was wonderfully owned at Wapping last week, while asserting the contrary truth. To-night I asked in prayer, that if God would have all men to be saved, he would show some token for good upon us. Three were justified in immediate answer to that prayer. We prayed again ; several fell down under the power of God, present to witness his universal love.

Sat., June 23d. Some of the persons set at liberty came, and called on me to return him thanks in their behalf. Twelve received forgiveness, it seems, last night ; another in this hour. I dined at Mr. Stonehouse's. My inward conflict continued. I perceived it was the fear of man ; and that, by preaching in the field next Sunday, as George Whitefield urges me, I shall break down the bridge, and become desperate. I retired, and prayed for particular direction ; offering up my friends, my liberty, my life, for Christ's sake and the Gospel's. I was somewhat less burdened ; yet could not be quite easy, till I gave up all.

Sun., June 24th. St. John Baptist's day. The first scripture I cast my eye upon, was, "Then came the servant unto him, and said, Master, what shall we do?" I prayed with West, and went forth in the name of Jesus Christ. I found near ten thousand helpless sinners waiting for the word, in Moorfields. I invited them in my Master's words, as well as name : "Come unto me, all ye that travail, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." The Lord was with me, even me, his meanest messenger, according to his promise. At St. Paul's, the Psalms, Lessons, &c., for the day, put fresh life into me. So did the sacrament. My load was gone, and all my doubts and scruples. God shone upon my path ; and I knew this was his will concerning me. At Newington, the Rector, Mr. Motte, desired me to preach. My text was, "All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God ; being justified freely," &c. I walked on to the Common, and cried to multitudes upon

multitudes, "Repent ye, and believe the Gospel." The Lord was my strength, and my mouth, and my wisdom. O that all would therefore praise the Lord for his goodness!

I was refreshed with the Society, at a primitive lovefeast.

Fri., June 29th. At Wycombe I heard of much disturbance and sin, occasioned by Bowers's preaching in the streets. I reached Oxford the next day.

Sat., June 30th. I waited upon the Dean, who spoke with unusual severity against field-preaching and Mr. Whitefield : explained away all inward religion, and union with God.

That the world, and their God, abhor our manner of acting, I have too sensible proof. This whole week has the messenger of Satan been buffeting me with uninterrupted temptation.

Sun., July 1st. I preached my sermon on justification before the University, with great boldness. All were very attentive. One could not help weeping. At night I received power to expound ; several Gownsmen were present ; some mocked.

Mon., July 2d. Mr. Gambold came. He had been with the Vice-Chancellor, and well received. I visited the Vice-Chancellor, at his own desire : gave him a full account of the Methodists ; which he approved : but objected the irregularity of our doing good in other men's parishes ; charged Mr. Whitefield with insincerity, and breach of promise ; appealed to the Dean, and appointed a second meeting there. All were against my sermon, as liable to be misunderstood.

Tues., July 3d. Poor wild Bowers had been laid hold on for preaching in Oxford. To-day the Beadle brought him to me. I spoke to him very home. He had nothing to reply ; but promised to do so no more ; and thereby obtained his liberty.

At night I had another conference with the Dean ; who cited Mr. Whitefield to judgment. I said, "Mr. Dean, he shall be ready to answer your citation." He used his utmost address to bring me off from preaching abroad, from expounding in houses, from singing psalms : denied justification by faith only, and all vital religion : promised me, however, to read Law and Pascal.

Wed., July 4th. I returned to London.

Sun., July 8th. Near ten thousand, by computation, gave diligent heed to the word preached in Moorfields : "Thou shalt call his name Jesus ; for he shall save his people from their sins." Numbers seemed greatly affected. Walking over an open field to Kennington-Common, I was met by a man, who threatened me for a trespass. I preached "Christ our wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption," to double my morning congregation : and the Lord Almighty bowed their hearts before him.

Mon., July 9th. I corrected Mr. Cennick's hymns for the press.

Tues., July 10th. I stopped Oakley, just going to Germany ; and brought him quite off his design. Mrs. H., a brand plucked out of the burning through my brother's ministry, told me her wonderful history, which filled my heart with pity and love.

Sat., July 14th. Many were pierced through this evening with the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

Sun., July 15th. My subject in Moorfields was, "God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself : " on the Common, "Blessed are the poor in spirit."

Sun., July 22d. I never knew till now the strength of temptation, and energy of sin. Who, that conferred with flesh and blood, would covet great success? I live in a continual storm. My soul is alway in my hand. The enemy thrusts sore at me, that I may fall ; and a worse enemy than the devil is my own heart. *Mirror aliquem prædicatorem salvare !* I received, I humbly hope, a fresh pardon in the sacrament at St. Paul's. I would have preached at the Fleet ; but the Warden forbad. I preached at the Marshalsea.

Mon., July 23d. I talked in Newgate with five condemned malefactors.

Wed., July 25th. I was served with a writ by Mr. Goter, for walking over his field to Kennington. I sent Oakley to the Lawyer, who confessed he did not so much as know what his client sued me for.

I saw Dr. Doddridge at Mr. Burnham's ; but did not see much of him.

Thur., July 26th. The Lord applied his word at Bray's, so that one received forgiveness under it.

Sat., August 4th. I dined with my friend George Whitefield at Mrs. Sparrow's, in Lewisham. In the evening at Mrs. Euster's; whom I visit most days for my own sake.

Sun., August 5th. In the fields, I discoursed on the promise, "I will pray the Father, and he shall send you another Comforter." My subject was the same at Kennington. In the bands, one witnessed her having received her pardon. We gave thanks with her, whom the Lord hath redeemed.

Tues., August 7th. I preached repentance and faith at Plaistow: and at night expounded, in a private house, Lazarus dead and raised. The next day I called with Hodges on Thomas Keen, a mild and candid Quaker: preached at Marybone. Too well pleased with my success, which brought upon me the buffetings of Satan. I preached on Kennington-Common, "Repent ye, and believe the Gospel."

Fri., August 10th. I gave George Whitefield some account both of my labours and my conflicts.

"Dear George,—I forgot to mention the most material occurrence at Plaistow; namely, that a Clergyman was there convinced of sin. He stood under me, and appeared, throughout my discourse, under the strongest perturbation of mind. In our return we were much delighted with an old spiritual Quaker, who is clear in justification by faith only. At Marybone a footman was convinced of more than sin; and now waits with confidence for all the power of faith. Friend Keen seems to have experience, and is right in the foundation.

"I cannot preach out on the week-days for the expense of coach, nor accept of dear Mr. Seward's offer; to which I should be less backward, would he take my advice. But while he is so lavish of his Lord's goods, I cannot consent that this ruin should in any degree *seem* to be under my hand.

"I am continually tempted to leave off preaching, and hide myself like J. Hutchins. I should then be freer from temptation, and at leisure to attend my own improvement.

God continues to work *by* me, but not *in* me, that I can perceive. Do not reckon upon me, my brother, in the work God is doing : for I cannot expect he should long employ one who is ever longing and murmuring to be discharged. I rejoice in your success, and pray for its increase a thousand fold."

To-day I carried J. Bray to Mr. Law, who resolved all his feelings and experiences into fits or natural affections, and advised him to take no notice of his comforts, which he had better be without than with. He blamed Mr. Whitefield's Journals, and way of proceeding ; said, he had had great hopes, that the Methodists would have been dispersed by little and little into livings, and have leavened the whole lump. I told him my experience. "Then am I," said he, "far below you, (if you are right,) not worthy to bear your shoes." He agreed to our notion of faith, but would have it, that all men held it : was fully against the laymen's expounding, as the very worst thing, both for themselves and others. I told him, he was my schoolmaster to bring me to Christ ; but the reason why I did not come sooner to Him, was, my seeking to be sanctified before I was justified. I disclaimed all expectation of becoming some great one.

Among other things, he said, "Was I so talked of as Mr. Whitefield is, I should run away, and hide myself entirely." "You might," I answered ; "but God would bring you back like Jonah." Joy in the Holy Ghost, he told us, was the most dangerous thing God could give. I replied, "But cannot God guard his own gifts?" He often disclaimed advising, "seeing we had the Spirit of God ;" but mended upon our hands, and at last came almost quite over.

Sun., August 12th. I received power, great power, to explain the good Samaritan. I communicated at St. Paul's, as every Sunday. I convinced multitudes at the Common from, "Such were some of you ; but ye are washed," &c. ; and before the day was past, felt my own sinfulness so great, that I wished I had never been born.

Mon., August 13th. I wrote, in a letter to Seward, "I preached yesterday to more than ten thousand hearers : am so buffeted, both before and after, that, was I not forcibly

detained, I should fly from every human face. If God does make a way for me to escape, I shall not easily be brought back again. I cannot like advertising. It looks like sounding a trumpet.

"I hope our brother Hutchins will come forth at last, and throw away, which he seems to have taken up, my mantle of reserve. But then he will no longer make Mr. Broughton his counsellor."

Tues., August 14th. I carried Cossart, a Moravian, to Mr. Law, and left them together. The whole congregation at Kennington seemed moved by my discourse on those words, "He shall reprove the world of sin, of righteousness, and of judgment." I could hardly get from them. We hear every day of more and more convinced or pardoned.

Wed., August 15th. I wrote to George Whitefield, "Let not Cossart's opinion of your letter to the Bishop weaken your hands. *Abundans cautela nocet*. It is the Moravian infirmity. To-morrow I set out for Bristol. I pray you all a good voyage, and that many poor souls may be added to the church by your ministry, before we meet again. Meet again, I am confident we shall; perhaps both here and in America. The will of the Lord be done with us, and by us, in time and in eternity."

I called on our brother Bell, just as his wife received "like precious faith." We were all partakers of her joy.

Thur., August 16th. I rode to Wycombe; and, being refused the church, would have preached in an house; but Bowers's preaching here has shut the door against me, by confirming their natural aversion to the Gospel. The next day we came to Oxford, and the day after that to Evesham.

I sent my brother and friends accounts of our going on from time to time: the following to my brother:—

"Bengeworth and Evesham, August 20th, 1739.

"Dear Brother,—We left the brethren at Oxford much edified, and two gownsmen, besides C. Graves, thoroughly awakened. On Saturday afternoon God brought us hither. Mr. Seward being from home, there was no admittance for us, his wife being an opposer, and having refused to see G. Whitefield before me. At seven Mr. Seward found us at our inn, and carried us home. I expounded at eight in the school-room, which contains two hundred; and held

out the promises from John xvi. : 'I will send the Comforter,' &c.

"On Sunday morning I preached from George Whitefield's pulpit, the wall, 'Repent ye, and believe the Gospel.' The notice being short, we had only a few hundreds, but such as those described in the morning lesson, 'These were more noble than those of Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind.' In the evening I showed to near two thousand their Saviour in the good Samaritan. Many, I am persuaded, found themselves stripped, and wounded, and half-dead : and are therefore ready for the oil and wine. Once more God strengthened me at nine to open the new covenant at the school-house, which was crowded with deeply attentive sinners."

Mon., August 20th. I spoke from Acts ii. 37 to two or three hundred market-people and soldiers ; all as orderly and decent as could be desired. I now heard that the Mayor had come down on Sunday to take a view of us ; and soon after an officer struck a countryman in the face, without any provocation. A serious woman besought the poor man not to resist evil, as the other only wanted to make a riot. He took patiently several repeated blows, telling the man he might beat him as long as he pleased.

I took a walk with Mr. Seward, whose eyes it has pleased God to open, to see he would have all men to be saved. His wife, who refuses to see me, is miserably bigoted to the particular scheme.

We had the satisfaction of meeting with Mr. Seward's cousin Molly, whom I had endeavoured to convince of sin at Islington. The Spirit has now convinced her of righteousness also. To-day she told us, a young lady here upon a visit had been deeply struck on Sunday night, under the word, seeing and feeling her need of a physician ; and earnestly desired me to pray for her. We immediately joined in thanksgiving and intercession. After dinner I spoke with her. She burst into tears ; told us she had come hither thoughtless and dead in pleasures and sin, but fully resolved against ever being a Methodist ; that she was first alarmed at seeing us so happy and full of love ; had gone to the Society, but never found herself out, till the word came with power to her soul ; that all the following

night she had been as in an agony ; could not pray ; could not bear our singing, nor have any rest in her spirit. We betook ourselves to prayer ; and God hearkened. She received forgiveness in that instant, and triumphed in the name of the Lord *her* God. We were all of us upon the mount the rest of the day.

At six I explained the nature of faith from, “Not I, but Christ liveth in me,—who loved *me*, and gave himself for *me*.” Afterwards I showed them, in the school-house, their own case in dead Lazarus. Some of those that were dead, I trust, begin to come forth. Several serious people from the neighbouring towns came home with us. We continued our rejoicings till midnight.

Tues., August 21st. I besought my hearers to be reconciled unto God. I found Miss P. had been greatly strengthened by last night’s expounding, and could scarce forbear crying out, “She was that Lazarus ; and if they would come to Christ, he would raise them, as he had *her*.” All night she continued singing in her heart ; and discovers more and more of that genuine mark of his disciples, love.

I was prevailed upon to stay over this day. God soon showed us *his* design in it. Our singing in the garden drew two sincere women to us, who sought Christ sorrowing. After reading the promises in Isaiah, we prayed, and they received them accomplished in themselves. We were upon a mount, which reminded us of Tabor, through the joy wherewith our Master filled us. How shall I be thankful enough for his bringing me hither ! While we were singing, a poor drunken servant of Mr. Seward’s was struck. His master had last night given him warning ; but now he seems effectually called. We spent the afternoon most delightfully in Isaiah. At seven the Society met. I could hardly speak through my cold ; but it was suspended, while I showed the natural man his picture in blind Bartimeus. Many were ready to cry after Jesus for mercy. The three that had lately received their sight were much strengthened. Miss P. declared her cure before two hundred witnesses ; many of them gay young gentlewomen. They received her testimony, flocked round about her, and pressed her on all sides to come to see them. By this open confession, she purchased to herself great boldness in the faith.

Wed., August 22d. This morning the work upon poor Robin appeared to be God's work. The words that made the first impression were,

"'Tis mercy all, immense and free,
For, O my God, it found out me !"

He now seems full of sorrow, and joy, and astonishment, and love. The world, too, set to their seal that he belongs to Christ.

Here I cannot but observe the narrow spirit of those that hold particular redemption. I have had no disputes with them, yet they have me in abomination. Mrs. Seward is irreconcilably angry with me ; "for he offers Christ to all." Her maids are of the same spirit ; and their Baptist teacher insists, that I ought to have my gown stripped over my ears.

When Mr. Seward, in my hearing, exhorted one of the maids to a concern for her salvation, she answered, "It was to no purpose ; she could do nothing." The same answer he received from his daughter, of seven years old. See the genuine fruits of this blessed doctrine !

"Gloucester, August 23d.

"By ten last night the Lord brought us hither through many dangers and difficulties. In mounting, I fell over my horse, and sprained my hand. Riding in the dark, I bruised my foot. We lost our way as often as we *could*. Two horses we had between three ; for Robin bore us company. Here we were turned back from a friend's house, by his wife's sickness. Last night my voice and strength wholly failed me. To-day they are in some measure restored. At night I with difficulty got in to the crowded Society ; preached the law and the Gospel from Rom. iii. They received it with all readiness. Three Clergymen were present. Some without attempted to make a disturbance by setting on the dogs, but in vain : the *dumb* dogs rebuked the rioters."

"Gloucester, August 25th.

"Before I went forth into the streets and high ways, I sent, after my custom, to borrow the church. The Minister (one of the better disposed) sent back a civil message, that he would be glad to drink a glass of wine with me, but durst not lend me his pulpit for fifty guineas.

“Mr. Whitefield durst lend me his field, which did just as well. For near an hour and a half God gave me voice and strength to exhort about two thousand sinners to repent and believe the Gospel. My voice and strength failed together; neither do I want them when my work is done. Being invited to Painswick, I waited upon the Lord, and renewed my strength. We found near one thousand gathered in the street. I have but one subject, on which I discoursed from 2 Cor. v. 19: ‘God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself.’ I besought them earnestly to be reconciled, and the rebels seemed inclinable to lay down their arms. A young Presbyterian teacher clave to us. I received fresh strength to expound the good Samaritan, at a public-house, which was full above stairs and below.”

Sat., August 25th. I showed them in the street, that to them and to their children was the promise made. Some are, I trust, on the point of receiving it. Three Clergymen attended. I prayed by a young woman, afraid of death, because it had not lost its sting. I showed her, the promise was to those that are afar off, even *before* they actually receive it; if they can but trust that they *shall* receive it. This revived her much; and we left her patiently waiting for the salvation of God.

At nine I exhorted and prayed with an house full of sincere souls; and took my leave, recommended by their affectionate prayers to the grace of God.

At Gloucester I received an invitation from F. Drummond. I dined with her and several of the friends, particularly Josiah Martin, a spiritual man, as far as I can discern. My heart was enlarged, and knit to them in love. I went to the field at five. An old intimate acquaintance (Mrs. Kirkham) stood in my way, and challenged me, “What, Mr. Wesley, is it you I see? Is it possible that you who can preach at Christ-church, St. Mary’s, &c., should come hither after a mob?” I cut her short with, “The work which my Master giveth me, must I not do it?” and went to my mob, or (to put it in the Pharisees’ phrase) this people which is accursed. Thousands heard me gladly, while I told them their privilege of the Holy Ghost, the Comforter, and exhorted them to come for him

to Christ as poor lost sinners. I continued my discourse till night.

“Runwick, August 26th.

“The Minister here lent me his pulpit. I stood at the window, (which was taken down,) and turned to the larger congregation of above two thousand, in the church-yard. They appeared greedy to hear, while I testified, ‘God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son,’ &c. These are, I think, more noble than those at Evesham.

“After sermon, a woman came to me, who had received faith in hearing Mr. Whitefield. She was terrified at having lost her comfort. I explained to her that wilderness-state into which the believer is *generally* led by the Spirit to be tempted, as soon as he is baptized by the Holy Ghost. This confirmed her in a patient looking for His return whom her soul loveth.

“We dined at Mr. Ellis’s of Ebly. I met our brother Ellis, who has the blessing of believing parents ; two sisters awakened ; one only brother continues an abandoned prodigal. In the afternoon I preached again to a Kennington congregation. The church was full as it could crowd. Thousands stood in the church-yard. It was the most beautiful sight I ever beheld. The people filled the gradually-rising area, which was shut up on three sides by a vast perpendicular hill. On the top and bottom of this hill was a circular row of trees. In this amphitheatre they stood, deeply attentive, while I called upon them in Christ’s words, ‘Come unto me, all that are weary.’ The tears of many testified that they were ready to enter into that rest. God enabled me to lift up my voice like a trumpet ; so that all distinctly heard me. I concluded with singing an invitation to sinners.

“It was with difficulty we made our way through this most loving people, and returned amidst their prayers and blessings to Ebly. Here I expounded the second lesson for two hours, and received strength and faith to plead the promise of the Father. A good old Baptist pressed me to preach at Stanley, in my way to Bristol.” Accordingly,

Mon., August 27th, I set out at seven. The sky was overcast, and the Prince of the power of the air wetted us to the skin. This, I thought, portended good. We could

not stay to dry ourselves, there being, contrary to our expectation, a company of near one thousand waiting. I preached from a table, (having been first denied the pulpit,) upon, "Repent, and believe the Gospel." The hearers seemed so much affected, that I appointed them to meet me again in the evening. The Minister was of my audience.

I rode back to Ebly, and was informed by brother Oakley, that he had fastened upon the poor prodigal, and spoke to his heart. His convictions were heightened by the sermon. We prayed and sang alternately, till faith came. God blew with his wind, and the waters flowed. He struck the hard rock, and the waters gushed out, and the poor sinner, with joy and astonishment, believed the Son of God loved him, and gave himself for him. Sing, ye heavens, for the Lord hath done it ; shout, ye lower parts of the earth !

In the morning I had told his mother the story of St. Austin's conversion. Now I carried her the joyful news, "This thy son was dead, and is alive again." I expounded at a gentlewoman's house, in my way to Stanley, but could hardly speak through my cold. I went forth in faith, and preached under a large elm-tree, on the prodigal son, and returned to Ebly rejoicing ; where I expounded the woman of Samaria.

Tues., August 28th. In the evening I accompanied my brother to the preaching-room, in the Horsefair, Bristol. A drunken Quaker (Benjamin Rutter) made a great disturbance by bawling out for his wife. Some of the brethren hardly saved him from the mob.

Wed., August 29th. At six o'clock we had prayers, with a large company of our brethren and sisters, who have learned of Christ to come to the temple, early in the morning. None of them as yet think it part of their Christian liberty, to forsake the means of grace. I spent the day with my brother in visiting several of the Society.

Thur., August 30th. My brother expounded, and took leave of them. His short absence cost them many tears.

Fri., August 31st. I entered upon my ministry at Weaver's-hall, and began expounding Isaiah, with much freedom and power. They were melted into tears all around. So again at one, when the bands met to keep the church-fast. We were all of one heart and of one mind. I was

much carried out in pleading the promises ; forgot the contradiction wherewith they grieved my spirit at London ; fell all at once into the strictest intimacy with these delightful souls ; and could not forbear saying, " It is good for me to be here."

I spoke to the poor colliers on, " The blind receive their sight, the lame walk," &c. Then began the Gospel at Gloucester-lane, and preached with power on, " Thou shalt call his name Jesus ; for," &c. I went home to Mr. Grevil's, stronger in body than when I rose.

Sat., September 1st. At five I preached for the first time at the Bowling-green, in the heart of the city, and called all the weary and heavy-laden to Christ. None offered to go away, though it rained hard. The power of the Lord was in the midst ; which forced one woman to cry out vehemently. I began the Romans at Weaver's-hall. The hearers appeared deeply affected.

Sun., September 2d. There was supposed to be above four thousand at the Bowling-green. My subject was, " To you and to your children is the promise made." Many experienced the great power of truth. I received the sacrament at St. Nicholas ; dined at M. N.'s, full of faith and love. I prayed by Mr. Coulston, desirous to be with Christ.

I preached at Rose-green, to near five thousand souls, upon, " God so loved the world." They heard me patiently ; and some gladly. I was quite spent by the time I got to Weaver's-hall. The scoffers gave me new life. For two hours I preached the law ; and then was fresh for the love-feast. We could not part before eleven.

Mon., September 3d. I had some discourse with a gentleman, who had been offended at the cryings out. My sermon upon the Holy Ghost had been blessed to his conviction, and stripped him of his outside Christianity. I found Weaver's-hall as full as it could hold ; and proceeded in Isaiah. I dined with the gentleman above mentioned, and spoke fully and strongly of the things of the kingdom. Then read him my own case. He laid down his arms, confessed he knew nothing yet as he ought to know ; and is now looking for that faith which is the gift of God.

I preached at the brick-yard, to upwards of five thousand,

from 1 Cor. vi. 9. I marvelled at their taking it so patiently, when I showed them they were all adulterers, thieves, idolaters, &c. Then expounded John i. in Gloucester-lane, with demonstration of the Spirit. I spent a delightful hour in prayer with a band ; and were all melted into a sense of our deep poverty.

Tues., September 4th. I talked with poor despairing Lucretia. Never did I find greater faith in pleading the promises for any one ; yet there was no answer ; which convinces me that it is good for the choicest of God's children to receive (and that for a long time) the sentence of death in themselves. I have not found such depth of distress, no, not in Hetty Delamotte.

At four I preached over against the school in Kingswood, to some thousands, (colliers chiefly,) and held out the promises, from Isaiah xxxv. : "The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them ; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose." I triumphed in God's mercy to these poor outcasts, (for he hath called them a people who were not a people,) and in the accomplishment of that scripture, "Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped ; then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing ; for in the wilderness shall water break out, and streams in the desert." O how gladly do the poor receive the Gospel ! We hardly knew how to part.

Just as I began in Weaver's-hall, the devil set up his throat in Benjamin Rutter. I took that occasion to convince the hearers of sin ; of the very sin of that poor reprobate. The chapter expounded was Rom. ii. To God be all the glory that I spoke convincingly.

Wed., September 5th. I was much discouraged by a farther discovery of the disorderly walking of some, who have given the adversary occasion to blaspheme, by their rioting and drunkenness. I am a poor creature on such occasions, being soon cast down, as in the case of Shaw and the Prophetess. Yet I went and talked with them. God filled me with such love to their souls, as I have not known before. They could not stand before it. I joined with Oakley and Cennick in prayer for them. M. trembled exceedingly. The others gave us great cause to hope for their

recovery. The same power continued with me, at the women's society, whom I reproved, in love and simplicity, for their lightness, dress, self-indulgence. I then exhorted the men to self-denial, and a constant use of the means *as* means. God greatly enlarged our hearts in prayer.

Thur., September 6th. I had my gentleman (now a little child) to breakfast, and surprised him much by Isaiah's promises. I dined at M. Ayres's, "sick of" desire, if not of "love." I rode with Deshamps, to Publow, where I preached from, "God so loved the world." I spake with great boldness at night on my favourite subject, justification by faith only; and triumphed in the irresistible force of that everlasting truth.

Fri., September 7th. At Weaver's-hall I expounded Isaiah iii., where the Prophet alike condemns notorious profligates, worldly-minded men, and well-dressed ladies. God was with us in our meeting to keep the fast. I went to see one in her last agony, but thoroughly sensible of her dreadful condition: preached Christ to her, and prayed in faith. She showed all imaginable signs of eager desire; and died within an hour. How comfortable is it that I can now hope for her, so often as I have disputed the possibility of a death-bed repentance!

The house and yards of S. England were crowded as usual. The scripture from which I discoursed was John i. God was with my mouth. I preached and prayed believing. I was led to ask a sign of God's universal love. He always answers that prayer. A poor ignorant man stood up, as God's witness, that in Christ he had redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins; that he knew and felt it by such a love to every human soul, as he was hardly able to bear. He spoke with a simplicity which was irresistible. We all confessed that God was with him of a truth. Our prayers were answered on M. Ayres likewise; which she testified before us all.

Sat., September 8th. Two women came to me, who had received the atonement last night, while the man was speaking, and were filled with unknown love to all mankind. We observed the thanksgiving-day at M. England's, and found the benefit of joint prayers and praises. At the bowling-green, I prayed God to direct me what to preach

upon, and opened on Ezekiel's vision of the dry bones : " So I prophesied as I was commanded : and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and, behold, a shaking ! " The breath of God attended his word. A man sunk down under it. A woman screamed for mercy, so as to drown my voice. Never did I see the like power among us. Coming home, I met M. Skinner, who told me she had found Christ at the expounding last Monday, and went home full of melting joy and love.

At the room I preached from Rom. iv. God set to his seal. A woman testified she had then received the witnessing Spirit ; was sure her sins were forgiven ; full of love and joy in the Holy Ghost ; knew Christ was hers, and could even, as she said, fly away to heaven. Another declared she had never been able to apply the promises till last night, but then received the power ; knew Christ died for her ; said, she had laboured many years to justify herself, and warned us earnestly not to do as she had done ; not to mingle our own works with the blood of Christ.

Sun., September 9th. At the bowling-green I preached on, " When he is come, he shall convince the world of sin, and of righteousness," &c. The green was quite full. I never spoke more searchingly. I would have passed on to the second office of the Spirit, convincing of righteousness, but was again and again brought back, and constrained to dwell upon the law. As often as I returned, some Pharisees quitted the field ; feeling the sharpness of the two-edged sword.

Two thousand at Rose-green stood patient in the rain, while I explained how the Spirit convinces of righteousness and of judgment. After sermon, a poor collier afforded me matter of rejoicing (his wife received the atonement some days before). He had been with me before ; owned he was the wickedest fellow alive a month ago ; but now finds no rest in his flesh by reason of his sin. Observing him much dejected yesterday at the thanksgiving, I asked him if he was sick. " No, no," he answered ; " my sickness is of my soul." Here he informed me he had come home with such a weight upon him, that he was ready to sink. It continued all night ; but joy and deliverance came in the morning. He was lightened of his load, and now declared

that he believed in Jesus. The room was excessively crowded. I spoke to their hearts from Rom. v. Two who had been scoffing, desired our prayers for them. For between two and three hours God strengthened me for his work.

Mon., September 10th. At the Hall, while I was expounding Isai. iv., a man perceived his filth purged away by the Spirit of judgment and burning. Sarah Norton, a Presbyterian, followed me home under strong convictions. We prayed and trembled before the face of God. She is not far from the kingdom of heaven. Two simple souls, Mary Fry and Jane Clausy, now informed me, that God filled them on Friday evening with love and joy unspeakable. They expressed so much of it, and have been so tempted since, that I could not doubt of their being accepted. I conversed and prayed with M. Hooper. I have a good hope that the Sun of righteousness is risen upon her, with healing in his wings.

I preached in the brick-yard, where I think there could not be less than four thousand. It rained hard, yet none stirred. I spoke with great freedom and power. A woman cried out, and dropped down. I spoke to her at M. Norman's, and found she had sunk under the weight of sin.

At Gloucester-lane I discoursed two hours on John iii. A notorious drunkard gave glory to God, declaring he had found mercy last night, through faith in Jesus Christ. This stirred the Pharisee in a woman's soul, and she cried out against him most vehemently. I took and turned her inside out, and showed her her spirit in those who murmured at Christ for receiving sinners. A woman of a broken spirit testified she had found redemption through his blood, when I preached last at Baptist-Mills. We daily discover more and more who are begotten again by the word of God's power, or awakened to a sense of sin, or edified in the faith.

Tues., September 11th. I took horse with Deshamp and Wigginton. The wind and rain almost confounded us. We got to Bradford by noon. Many were gone away, despairing of my coming. However, I found upward of a thousand, whom I called upon to repent, and believe the

Gospel. I was forced to exert my voice to the utmost. They appeared much affected ; especially a young woman, and a very old man, who wept all the time like children.

We dined at Freshford. In our return, I could scarce sit my horse, the wind and rain were so troublesome. I got, almost senseless, to Bristol ; and to the room, but could not stand ; yet spoke, I know not how, for an hour, and hastened to bed, utterly exhausted.

The Pharisee, who protested last night against Christ's receiving sinners, sent to-night to desire our prayers, being in an agony of conviction. Some have since informed me, that they observed her turn pale while I spoke. Her soul and body sympathize now. The Lord show himself the Physician of both !

The woman, I have just heard, whose soul and spirit were pierced and divided asunder last Sunday, was a stranger, wholly unawakened till that moment ; an opposer, say some, and little better than an atheist. When they rebuked her that she should hold her peace, her answer was, " I am not mad, or out of my senses ; but I must cry, and I will cry, to Christ for mercy, while I have any breath in me."

Wed., September 12th. I rose half dead with the headache. I breakfasted at Mr. Page's, but could neither lift up my head nor speak. I went to a friend's, where I met poor Mr. W——n ; a sweet youth. I was much concerned for him. I cannot doubt his sincerity, or despair of his return. He was ready to hear, childlike and teachable, convinced of his fall. He thanked, and I believe loves, me. The world have taken the alarm, that he designs to desert them a second time.

This conference abated my headache. Expounding at the Hall gave me more strength. After talking two hours with the poor people that came to me, and preaching at Baptist-Mills, I was perfectly well.

Thur., September 13th. I breakfasted at M. Davis's, a genuine child of God, and stayed till noon, transcribing Isaiah. Providence threw me on Mr. W——n, just as he was leaving Bristol. He cannot long hold out, without an alteration ; is himself sensible of it, and that the promises

are not fulfilled in him ; but trusts they shall before he goes hence. I have great love and faith for him.

Many were convinced at the room this evening, by my exposition of Rom. vii.

Fri., September 14th. I talked with two more women, who lately received peace through my ministry. In the evening, while I was expounding the woman of Samaria, Christ called forth two of his witnesses, who declared they now believed, because they had heard him of his own mouth.

Sat., September 15th. Having been provoked to speak unadvisedly with my lips, I preached on the bowling-green in great weakness, on, "Lazarus, come forth !" I was surprised that any good should be done ; but God quickens others by those who are dead themselves. A man came to me, and declared he had now received the Spirit of life. So did a woman at the same time ; which she openly confessed at Weaver's-hall. We had great power among us, while I displayed the believer's privileges, from Rom. viii. Another woman then stood forth, and testified, "I have the witness of God's Spirit with my spirit, that I am a child of God." It was a most triumphant night indeed.

Sun., September 16th. I took coach at six with Mr. and Mrs. Wigginton, Lucr. Smith, and M. Grevil, for Hanham-Mount. I expounded the good Samaritan to between three and four thousand, with power. While I was repeating that in Jeremiah, "Is not my word like a fire, saith the Lord, and like an hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces ?" a woman fell down under the stroke of it. I found afterwards, that the Good Samaritan had poured in his oil, and made her whole. Another declared He had then bound up her wounds also. I heard on all sides the sighing of them that were in captivity, and trust more than I know of were set at liberty ; for the Lord was among us of a truth.

I met between thirty and forty colliers with their wives at Mr. Willis's, and administered the sacrament to them ; but found no comfort myself, in that or any ordinance. I always find strength for the work of the ministry ; but when my work is over, my strength, both bodily and spiritual, leaves me. I can pray for others, not for myself. God by me strengthens the weak hands, and confirms the

feeble knees ; yet am I myself as a man in whom is no strength. I am weary and faint in my mind, longing continually to be discharged.

To-day I found power to pray for myself ; confessed it good for me to be in desertion, and asked God to give me (if it was not tempting him) a sign from his word. The answer was from Isaiah liv. 7 : "For a small moment have I forsaken thee ; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment ; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer."

At two I preached in the bowling-green, to (by computation) six thousand people. Before I began, and after, the enemy raged exceedingly. A troop of his children, soldiers and polite gentlemen, had taken possession of a corner of the green, and roared like their brethren the two Gergesenes, before the devils were sent into the civiler swine. They provoked the spirit of jealousy to lift up a standard against them. I never felt such a power before, and promised the people that they should feel it too ; for I saw God had a great work to do among us by Satan's opposition. I lifted up my voice like a trumpet, and in a few minutes drove him out of the field. For above an hour I preached the Gospel with extraordinary power, from blind Bartimeus, and am confident it could not fall to the ground.

Mon., September 17th. This morning a woman received pardon through the word. The rain ceased as I began, and began again as I left off.

I expounded the prodigal son near the brick-yard. Many, I hope, saw themselves. They come to me daily, who have found Christ, or rather are found by him, so that I lose count of them.

This afternoon I conferred with Thomas Tucker and Eliz. Shirdock, both clearly justified. Matthew Davis, a notorious drunkard, &c., till last Saturday was se'nnight, came then to the green, and was justified in a moment. John Lewis was filled with joy last night. Prudence Nichols knows that her Redeemer liveth. Several who had lost their peace, are daily brought out of darkness ; as was a woman this evening at Gloucester-lane. Another, while I was discoursing from John v., received forgiveness,

and testified it before us all. I did expect great things ; for I was utterly exhausted before I began. "When I am weak, then I am strong,"—for others, not myself. After preaching, the messenger of Satan came. He seldom fails me after success ; but God, I know, will avenge me of mine adversary.

Tues., September 18th. I gave the sacrament to a dying woman, who triumphed over death, disarmed of his sting. I preached to above two thousand over against the school-house, and pressed them to come to Christ weary and heavy-laden. I finished Rom. viii. at Weaver's-hall, which is always crowded within and without. Mr. Rutter attempted to raise a disturbance ; but none regarded him. Mrs. Labu followed me to M. Grevil's, with a young gentlewoman, to whom the word had come with power. Upon Mr. Oakley's speaking to her the first serious word she had ever heard, she asked if the gentleman was not crazy. But now in the same hour God slew and revived her. She felt and made confession of her faith, being full of astonishment and love.

Wed., September 19th. I breakfasted at M. Labu's. The roaring lion had tried to tear her to pieces, setting before her her sin (harmlessness) in all its aggravations, and persuading her she was lost, were it only for her telling me her sins were forgiven. She raised the family, not daring to be alone, and continued all night offering up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, to Him that was able to save. Toward morning she was heard in that she feared ; fell into a slumber, and waked in perfect peace. I spent an hour with her. She could do nothing but cry, and wonder, and rejoice.

At the Hall a poor man bore a noble testimony, that God had shed abroad his love in his heart last night, so that "I waked," said he, "this morning full of heaven." Another in the afternoon, formerly a Papist, declared himself set at liberty, after he had been hearing me expound. Ann Bladworth likewise informs me, that she has clear and strong evidence of her acceptance, ever since Sunday night.

I preached at Baptist-Mills, on, "The Son of man hath power to forgive sins upon earth." I found Him with my mouth, and knew he would set to his seal : had great power

in preaching, and greater in prayer. A woman sunk down with groaning that could not be uttered. I had not time to stay with her, but hastened to pray by Sally Murray, who lay a-dying and triumphing over death. I *felt* her spirit, and longed to be in her place.

Weak, spiritless, dead, among the men-bands, I wanted to get away without speaking or praying, because they were all as dead, it seemed, as I. I was overruled to stay and pray, and had the spirit of prayer as never before. We were all in a flame ; I prayed again and again, not knowing how to part.

Thur., September 20th. I was glad to be interrupted by Anne Clayton, who tells me, that on Tuesday night after expounding, she had had Jesus Christ evidently set forth before her eyes (of faith), as crucified. This lasted from ten to twelve. At the same time, she saw herself inconceivably vile, and was filled with love and confidence in *her* Saviour. In that evening it was, that a man declared he had been seeking righteousness fourteen years, as it were by the works of the law, but never attained to it ; and was now in despair of ever attaining it, unless by faith. One of the bands testified, "I feel the Spirit of Christ in me, continually springing up into everlasting life."

At the Hall I explained Rom. ix. Through mercy, we could none of us see aught of the "horrible decree" there ; but only his justice in rejecting them who had first rejected Him. Christ the Saviour of all men was in the midst of us. Two of his witnesses set to their seal, having received forgiveness yesterday at the Mills.

Fri., September 21st. I appointed any who had been reconciled through my ministry, to call upon me after expounding. Among others, there came Daniel Morris, a gross sinner, till God awakened him by George Whitefield. On Saturday in the bowling-green, faith came by hearing. "I was filled with joy," said he, "above what tongue can express ; went home leaping and rejoicing. I know my sins are forgiven. I hate them worse than death. I love every man, and particularly those who make a scoff at me."

Anne Cole declares, that, Monday was seven-night, at Mrs. England's, she was filled at once with inexpressible peace and comfort ; "so that now I know I am forgiven ; all my

doubts and fears are vanished ; and I could rejoice to die this moment."

John Quick was set at liberty from sin, after many years of Egyptian bondage.

Eliz. Parsons, while I was preaching at Baptist-Mills that forgiveness is a present grace, experienced it such. "You said we must have our sins forgiven here, or not at all ; upon which, I thought I have not forgiveness now, but believe God can, and will, give it me. Immediately I was as sure God had pardoned me, as if he himself had spoken it to me ; and have, ever since, been full of a comfort and peace which I never knew before."

Virtuous Whetman, long dead in sin, has now, she tells me, a full confidence that Christ died for her ; and finds her whole dependence is on Him.

J. T. in a flood of tears informed me, Christ showed himself *her* Saviour at that word, "The *harlots* and publicans go into the kingdom of heaven before you." Such was she till last night : but she is washed, but she is justified ! and loves much, because much is forgiven her.

Richard Bourn, while I was speaking last Friday of the brazen serpent, looked up to the Antitype, and was healed. The devil raged exceedingly, and tore him with temptations ; till Jesus about midnight got himself the victory, and filled his soul with love. All he desires now is, to be with Christ.

Fri., September 21st. We had much of God with us in our general intercession. From Gloucester-lane I went to M. Labu, and met with J. Wildair's sermon. While we were reading the blind man's protestation against colours, that is, the natural man's against any sensible operations of the Holy Ghost, Miss Godly, a girl of fifteen, helped us to a most convincing answer. She burst into tears, fell back in her chair, and discovered the strongest emotions of soul ; but such as might well proceed from the God of order. I thought it was the accuser of the brethren troubled her ; inquired, but could get no answer. We were greatly assisted in prayer for her. She took no notice till about half an hour after ; when she waked as out of a pleasant dream, and asked, "Where am I ? where have I been ?" I returned her question, "Where have you been ?" and she

answered with loving simplicity, "In heaven, I think." Her every word, and sigh, and tear, evidenced the truth of what she told me, that it was grievous to her, after such communion with God, to find she must continue longer in the body.

Sat., September 22d. M. Esther Brook called, and told me, she had been awakened (as others who now believe) by George Whitefield's ministry ; convinced of sin by Mr. Bray's ; set at liberty under mine. That she believed, in general, while I repeated those words, "The promise is to all that are afar off ;" and had them strongly applied, while hearing me at Baptist-Mills. In a moment she was assured that all her sins were forgiven ; and filled with such joy, that she could scarce live under it. It quite overpowered her body for two days. "But now, methinks," said she, "all the Scripture was written for me." I asked, whether she was afraid to die. A visible joy in her face gave me the answer, which her tongue confirmed. Was I in her state, I should desire nothing so much as death.

In the afternoon I spoke a word of caution to one who seems strong in the faith, and begins to be lifted up ; the sure effect of her growing acquaintance with some of Calvin's followers.

In the bowling-green I showed the nature and life of faith from Gal. ii. 20 ; and then justification by faith alone, at the Hall. Two Clergymen were present. I proved from Scripture and our own Church, that all were Papists, Pharisees, Antichrists, and accursed, who brought any other doctrine. Some of my hearers were forced to turn their backs.

Sun., September 23d. I took coach for Hanham. A genteel Quaker was one of the company. Going and coming I laboured to convince her of sin ; and spoke more closely than ever I did in my life ; yet without convincing. Such power belongeth unto God.

I discoursed from 2 Cor. v. to four thousand sinners ; then gave the sacrament at Mr. Willis's. Among the communicants was Susanna Milsom, who has been oppressed by the devil. I prayed with a dying man, beyond Hanham. He was overjoyed to see me ; had been awakened by field-preaching, but not yet found mercy. I left him patiently expecting it.

I missed hearing a railing sermon at St. James's. Notwithstanding all opposition, we ride on because of the word of truth. So I found it at the bowling-green, where I preached from Isai. lxi. : "The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me, because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek," &c. Near six thousand heard me, quietly at least. I spoke with uncommon power, especially to the unawakened.

Romans xi. led me unawares to speak of final perseverance, whereby some, I would hope, were cut off from their vain-confidence.

Mon., September 24th. I was carried out at Weaver's-hall to speak of the blind guides, from Isai. xxix. Several followed me home ; particularly Charles Nichols and Betty Brown, who were fully satisfied, at the Hall on Thursday night, of their pardon. So was Joseph Mountstevens, at the bowling-green yesterday : confident, had he died before, he must have gone to hell ; but that he should be saved, was he to die now.

Margaret Evans, in heaviness, next to despair, found *the* comfort at eleven on Friday. The word applied was, "O Lord, our God, other lords besides thee have had dominion over us ; but by thee only will we make mention of thy name." The burden, she said, went off in a moment, and she has been full of joy ever since.

Sarah Rutter now informs me, that she first found power to believe while I was explaining Rom. v. I prayed, in my way to the brick-yard, with a poor dying drunkard, who was glad to say, "Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord." Whether I did not come too late, God only knows. I cried from Isai. lv., "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters !" Between two and three thousand attended. I found great freedom in speaking to them, who *are* altogether such as I *was*. I had a weary walk to Nicholas-street Society ; and thence to Mrs. England's, where I discoursed for two hours on John vii.

Here Susanna Milsom made open confession of the faith, which had come to her by hearing yesterday. Her soul is delivered out of the snare of the fowler. God hath avenged her of her adversary ; and she now treads upon serpents and scorpions.

Tues., September 25th. I preached at Bradford to about two thousand. For an hour and a half I described their state by nature and grace, in the man that fell among thieves, &c. I did not spare them that were whole, and had no need of a physician. They bore it surprisingly. I received invitations to several neighbouring towns. May I never run before God's call, or stay one moment after it!

I dined at a carnal Quaker's, who pleaded for a *moderate* pursuit of riches, &c. I was grieved to find no more of the spirit of religion among those who ought to have the most of it. But the desire of other things disproves their pretensions to the Spirit. "He that drinketh of this water shall thirst no more."

We baited at a good Dissenter's, near Bath, who seems to have the root of the matter in him. It was near eight before I reached the Hall. The chapter in course was Rom. xii. ; but I could not press particular duties, till they had the foundation ; and therefore exhorted them to get forgiveness before they could perform the least part of the law. The brethren I besought to present their bodies a living sacrifice ; and pointed out the particular acts of this devotion.

Wed., September 26th. I received much light and strength to expound Isai. xxx. A woman sank down in deep distress. Several who wait for faith were affected greatly. From one to three, more came than I was able to talk with ; all seeking what many have found. In particular, Anne Sparrin was filled with joy in believing, while we were at prayers last Monday. So was Mrs. Williams, in going home from church. Susanna Trapman likewise sees *her* interest in the blood of Jesus. Elizabeth Parsons, whom the evil spirit has often torn, is sensible now, that he is cast out. It is observable of the two last, that they have never been baptized. I now require no farther proof that one may be an *inward* Christian without baptism. They are both desirous of it ; and who can forbid water?

Abraham Staples informs me, that on Saturday was three weeks, while I was preaching, "Lazarus, come forth," he was called out of his natural state, and raised to the life of faith. "I felt," said he, "that my sins were forgiven, by

a peace and warmth within me, which have continued ever since." "Then you know," said I, "that the Spirit of God is a Spirit of burning?" "Yes," he answered, "and a Spirit of shaking too; for he turns me upside down. I am full of joy and life, and could be always a-praying; should be glad to die this moment. What knowledge I have, I have given me of God; for I am no scholar; I can neither write nor read."

Sarah Pearce declares, she received the first comfort in hearing Rom. v. explained. She was then justified; but did not draw nigh in full assurance of faith, till last night. Every word I spoke came with power. She had the witness of her own spirit or conscience, that all the marks I mentioned were in her; and the Spirit of God came in with his testimony, and put it beyond the possibility of a doubt. Some of her words were, "I was once extremely bigoted against my brethren the Dissenters; but am now enlarged toward them, and all mankind, in an inexpressible manner. I do not depend upon a start of comfort; but find it increase ever since it began. I perceive a great change in myself; and expect a greater. I feel a divine attraction in my soul. I was once so afraid of death, that I durst not sleep; but now I do not fear it at all. I desire nothing upon earth. I dread nothing but sin. God suffers me to be strongly tempted; but I know, when he gives faith, he will try it."

See here the true assurance of faith! How consistent an humble, not doubting, a filial, not servile, fear of offending! I desire not *such* an assurance as blots out those scriptures, "Be not high-minded, but fear;" "Work out your salvation with fear and trembling," &c. God keep me in continual fear, lest, by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a cast-away.

At the Mills I preached upon, "As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so," &c. I spoke plainly to the women-bands of their unadvisableness, want of love, and bearing one another's burdens. We found an immediate effect in the enlargement of our hearts. Some were convinced that they had thought too highly of themselves; and that their first love, like their first joy, was only a fore-taste of that temper which continually rules in a new heart.

Thur., September 27th. Returning from early prayers, I met Sarah Puttam, the person that had been so wounded yesterday at the Hall. She informed me, that Christ did then break off her yoke, and she felt herself at liberty from sin and sorrow. Soon after news was brought me, that the man I had prayed by beyond Hanham, was now in the full triumph of faith. On Sunday he desired longer life ; but now he only longs, with an holy impatience, to depart and be with the Lord, which is far better.

I gave offence at the Hall, by pressing the doctrine of non-resistance, from Rom. xii. What will they say to me to-morrow, when I come to the xiiiith ?

Fri., September 28th. Christianity flourishes under the cross. None who follow after Christ want that badge of discipleship. Wives and children are beaten, and turned out of doors ; and the persecutors are the complainers. It is always the lamb that troubles the water. Every Sunday damnation is denounced against all that hear us Papists, us Jesuits, us seducers, us bringers in of the Pretender. The Clergy murmur aloud at the number of communicants, and threaten to repel them ; yet will not the world bear that we should talk of persecution. No ; for the world is Christian now, and the offence of the cross ceased. Alas ! what would they farther ? Some lose their bread, some their habitations ; one suffers stripes, another confinement ; and yet we must not call this persecution. Doubtless they will find some other name for it, when they do God service by killing us.

To-day Mary Hanney was with me. While she continued a drunkard, a swearer, and company-keeper, it was very well ; she and her father agreed entirely. But from the time of her turning to God, he has used her most inhumanly. Yesterday he beat her, and drove her out of doors, following her with imprecations and threatenings to murder her, if ever she returned. When she was cast out, Jesus found her, and said unto her by his Spirit, " Be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee." She continued all the night in joy unspeakable, and can now with confidence call God her Father.

I preached at the Fish-ponds, on, " To as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God."

Sat., September 29th. I breakfasted with six or eight awakened sinners, who are hourly waiting for the consolation of Israel. I prayed by a dying woman, and cut off her confidence in the flesh. As sure as I ask the question, "Why do you hope to be saved?" I receive that woful answer, "Because I have done no harm," or, "Because I have used my endeavours." This comes of our telling the people, "God, upon your sincere endeavours, will accept you." There were several present, whom I stripped of their filthy rags, and sent naked to Christ.

At noon Jane Clancy gave me an account of her faith. It came as I was asking at Baptist-mills, "If Christ was now present, and said to you, 'Believest thou that I am able to do this, to forgive sins upon earth?' would you say, 'Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief?'" The word was applied in that moment. "I went home," said she, "justified; in such peace, and joy, and love, as cannot be described; and I am still sure that the Son of God loved me, and gave himself for me."

At the bowling-green I explained the first words that presented: "Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen." Afterwards I enforced obedience to the powers that be, from Rom. xiii.; and showed the scandalous inconsistency of your high-Churchmen, who disclaim resistance, and yet practise it; continually speaking evil of dignities, nay, of the ruler of the people, as well as of those who are put in authority under him. Fewer than I expected were offended at me.

Sun., September 30th. I found my usual congregation at Hanham; and showed them their Saviour, from Isai. liii. Many tears of love or desire were shed. At the Hall I expounded "the woman taken in adultery." Some, convicted by their own conscience, went out.

Mon., October 1st. I expounded Isai. xxxv. with great freedom and power. In the hours of conference, the following persons declared to me their faith in Him who justifies the ungodly:—

Mary Brown, took with strong trembling last night at the Hall, was there set at liberty, both from fear and guilt. "I love all mankind," she said, (the best proof of faith,) "and could die for my worst enemy."

Sarah Gough found the power of God present to heal her, while I repeated, last Sunday night, "He hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted."

Sarah Norton was strongly tempted not to tell me, that, on Wednesday in the Hall, she received forgiveness. I was bidding them "wait for the promise of the Father." She replied within herself, "Well, I will wait;" and was immediately struck to the heart, and filled with joy unspeakable. This was greatly increased at the sacrament.

The same good work was wrought in W. Spenser, on Saturday night, after hearing the word. He is now sure that his sins are blotted out; for the times of refreshment are come.

Eleanor Kitchinor, weak in faith before, received the full assurance last night.

Judith Williams (of whose being justified I heard last week) sends me word that her faith increases daily. Returning from the Hall in deep distress, God had opened her eye of faith to discern her Saviour.

Many find power to believe, either in or soon after hearing. So it was with Joseph Black. On Friday night in bed, he was suddenly taken ill; lost all strength; lay speechless. Soon after he found the power of God overshadow him, and a warmth and life spreading through soul and body. He revived in both, and was endued with power to apply Christ to himself in particular.

Satan strove hard to hinder Francis Hud from coming to inform me, that he had been my constant hearer, and had always applied what I said of sinners to himself. "I saw," said he, "that I was in a damnable state, till I had forgiveness of sins, but was sure I should have it. The devil was very busy with me, especially in prayer. I told him, 'Satan, I am thy slave now; but thou canst not hold me long. Christ will soon come and deliver me.' He did come in my sleep. I was sure it was Christ himself. I waked in great triumph, knowing the devil's power was at an end. Since then I have been happy indeed."

In the afternoon I went out into the lanes and streets of the city, to call men in to the "great supper." (Luke xiv.) The power of the Lord accompanied me. So again at Gloucester-lane, while I discoursed on "the man born blind." (John ix.) Three Pharisees lay concealed at an

house adjoining ; and they could not have come at a more convenient season. God was with my mouth. They could not stand it, but made their escape in the middle of my discourse. The sincere were strengthened and comforted, as several testified at that time.

Tues., October 2d. I dined at George the collier's, an happy soul ; as full of joy and love as he can contain. I hope one day to be like him. I exhorted the colliers, by the example of the Syro-Phenician woman, to pray always, till their requests are granted.

Wed., October 3d. Sarah Townsend informed me, that, on Sunday evening, while we were singing, "Come to judgment, come away," she found and felt in herself that she *durst* come ; the Spirit in that instant sealing her pardon upon her heart. She was filled all night with joy unspeakable.

Another testified that, at Kingswood yesterday, she caught hold of that word, "Be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee ;" and knows she has apprehended Him, of whom she was first apprehended.

Sarah Stevens, aged seventy-three, confesses that a fortnight ago, she was first convinced of sin by my ministry, having been till then, as she and the world thought, a very good Christian. I have hardly known a soul under stronger convictions. Her expressions are full of self-abbhorrence. She truly renounces her own, and hungers and thirsts after Christ's, righteousness. We prayed, and she received great comfort ; whether THE comfort, God will soon discover.

I look upon this instance as a peculiar blessing to me ; for I had scarce any faith for old people ; they are so strong in self-righteousness, so intrenched in their own works, so hardened by *the abuse of means*. Surely the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God, if they can pull down such strong-holds.

I preached again from "the woman of Canaan" with double power. I prayed by a dying man ; found him leaning on the broken reed of his own endeavours. I showed him that they could not bear his weight, but he must fall with violence into hell, unless he found a better support. I left him desirous to stay his soul on the Rock of Ages.

Fri., October 5th. I had been often hindered from seeing Mrs. Granil, the woman that cried out so vehemently in the bowling-green. He that letteth to-day was taken out of the way, and she came to me. She has had no rest for these three weeks ; can neither eat nor drink as usual ; believes Christ is able to deliver her. We betook ourselves to prayer ; and she screamed out as before. I broke off, and let her pray ; for I never heard any pray like her. We laid open the promises, sang, and prayed for her till the Comforter came. She now knows that her Redeemer liveth. She came afterwards to return me thanks for her deliverance through my ministry. Lord, not unto me !

The quickening Spirit was with us at Gloucester-lane, while I was discoursing on Lazarus raised. Two women experienced Christ to be the resurrection and the life. There was a great shaking among the dry bones, and they that had life before, now had it more abundantly.

Sat., October 6th. Averel Spenser, one that received faith last night, came to-day, and declared it. While she was seeking Christ, she had several assurances in prayer, that she should shortly find him. Last night she was pierced through with the sword of the Spirit, and ascertained of her pardon, beyond the possibility of a doubt. Peace, joy, and love flowed in upon her soul. She is of that simple, unopposing temper, which yields the freest passage to the grace of God.

My subject at the bowling-green was, "Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake." Great need there is to prepare them for the gathering storm. Already it is come to that, that except a man forsake all that he hath, (life only excepted,) he cannot be Christ's disciple.

Sun., October 7th. I declared the covenant of grace at Hanham. I never fail of finding power among the colliers. I received the sacrament at St. Philip's. I first earnestly asked that God would not send me empty away. I returned to my pew, and was immediately overpowered, in a manner inexpressible, not with *the very thing*, but with the strongest assurance that I should receive all I wait for. God mollified my hardness, and I abhorred myself before him, as in dust and ashes. I asked, with all submission, some token from his word. I hardly remember to have

read the passage : it came with power, and abased me to nothing :—"Thou art my battle-axe, and weapons of war ; for in thee will I break in pieces the nations ; and with thee," &c.

I described the new creature at the bowling-green. Many, as they told me afterwards, were then stripped of their vain religion. I received still greater strength at night to expound Isai. xliii. Our souls did magnify the Lord, and our spirits rejoiced in God our Saviour.

Mon., October 8th. We found him applying his own promises, which we really believe belong to us, though delivered to the Jews some thousand years ago.

Sarah Stevens now finds they were made to her. She tells me, the moment she rose from prayer last Wednesday, she felt her weight lessened, and, before she got to the door, entirely removed. At seventy-three she is indeed converted, and become a little child ; full as she can be of peace, and love, and joy. She feels the Spirit of God within her ; embraces Christ with the arms of faith ; and cries out with old Simeon, "Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace ; for mine eyes have seen thy salvation."

Edward Hud testifies his faith in Christ, which came by hearing last week.

Mary Taylor witnesses the same good confession ; and Mary Haman. The latter was justified in private prayer. I called on the dying man, with whom I prayed last night. I found him a new creature. He told me, he now tasted the peace I spoke of, the joy and comfort of a living faith. I asked whether he was still afraid to die. "No, no," he replied ; "I desire to die ; I want to get away." "Why ? do you love Jesus Christ ?" "Yes, dearly," said he with his voice and looks. I left him ready for the Bridegroom, and published the word of reconciliation at the brick-yard. God in Christ was with us of a truth. I never spoke more clearly. The same power was in the Society. Mr. Williams, of Kidderminster, was much edified among us. He followed a letter he wrote, inviting me thither. Of what denomination he is, I know not ; nor is it material : for he has the mind which was in Jesus. I met my brother, just returned from London.

Tues., October 9th. I received a letter from Holt, deterring me from coming again to Bearfield; upon which *invitation* I set out with my brother this morning. We called at Mr. Cottle's, and heard the people were much exasperated against me, it being everywhere reported that I am (*quem minus credere?*) a strong Predestinarian. Much pains had been taken to represent me as such. We judged this a call for me to declare myself, if the weavers, who were to rise, would suffer me.

We found about two thousand waiting. I let my brother pray, and then began abruptly, "If God be for us, who can be against us? He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?" God opened my mouth so as seldom before. I felt what I spoke, while offering Christ to all: in much love I besought the Dissenters not to lose their charity for me because I was of opinion God would have *all* men to be saved. For an hour and a half, I strongly called all sinners to the Saviour of the world. My strength do I ascribe unto him. No one opened his mouth against me. The devil fled before us; and I believe he will no more slander me with being a Predestinarian.

A Dissenting Minister, who before came to us, came to where we dined, and asked me, with much passion, how I durst have the impudence to speak against the Dissenters. I felt no emotion but pity and love. My brother was like-minded. We took no notice of his hard speeches, but tried to pacify, and left him somewhat calmer. O that God would always give us that meekness which his cause deserves!

Thur., October 11th. I expounded the prodigal son among our colliers. Many a one, if not most of them, is ready to say, "I will arise, and go to my Father." At six I began John i., at the widow Jones's. It was the first time of my preaching by night in the open air. The yard contained about four hundred. The house was likewise full. Great power was in the midst. Satan blasphemed without, but durst not venture his children too near the Gospel, when I offered Christ Jesus to them. The enemy hurried them away; and all we could do was to pray for them.

Sat., October 13th. I waited with my brother upon a Minister, about baptizing some of his parish. He complained heavily of the multitude of our communicants, and produced the canon against strangers. He could not admit that as a reason for their coming to his church, that they had no sacrament at their own. I offered my assistance to lessen his *trouble*; but he declined it. "There were a hundred of new communicants," he told us, "last Sunday; and I am credibly informed, some of them came out of spite to me."

We bless God for this cause of offence, and pray it may never be removed.

Sun., October 14th. I took horse for Bradford, the Minister having offered me his pulpit. But yesterday his heart failed; he feared his church would be pulled down; he feared the Bishop would be displeased. I went to church, and thence to the Common, where I preached forgiveness of sins to many serious hearers. In the evening I returned to Bristol.

Mon., October 15th. My brother being gone to Wales, I expounded at eleven, and was, with others, quite melted down; especially in prayer. At the brick-yard I discoursed on Matt. xi. 5: "The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk," &c. In the midst of my discourse, Satan lift up his voice in his own children; which increased my boldness. I told the people, Christ had a work to do, and they should find it so. The sons of Belial soon quitted the field; but the power of the Lord continued with us. One man received a large increase of faith, and confessed it before many witnesses.

I prayed by a poor old woman, departing in the Lord. At the Society I met Mrs. Thomas, who testified her having received forgiveness while I spake to the rioters.

I dined at Rider's, a collier. Eliz. Hawkins here told me, that she received the blessing under the word, some weeks since; but quickly lost it. While we were praying, our brother Rider found an unknown warmth and comfort. I told him, if it was the work of God begun, God would shine upon it, and clearly convince him of righteousness.

In the school-house I preached the promise of the Comforter. A woman fell to the ground with strong crying

and tears. Eliz. Hawkins received her faith, and rejoiced in the light of God's countenance.

In explaining Isai. l., I laid open the self-deceit of some, who rested short of the promises, *because* they had a liking to the word, or me. Many were alarmed, and stirred up to a restless pursuit of Christ.

Wed., October 17th. Eliz. Field was with me, declaring she first found power to believe and love on Monday night, while I spoke from John xiii., of our Lord's humility. "I was immediately lightened," she said; "assured my sins were forgiven; and so full of joy, that I was ready to faint under it."

Mary Branker bore a like testimony, that she was then filled with unknown power and comfort.

Thur., October 18th. I would have visited the poor dying woman to-day, but the Churchwarden, Mr. Every, had been with her, and with threatenings declared, if ever I came near her again, he would turn her out into the street, sick or well.

I received notice from Mrs. Stonehouse, that her husband was ill of the small-pox, and could not look after my affair with Goter; that I must come, or send the writ, or be non-suited. I thought it too late, as the writ must be returned Oct. 20th; and rested quite content.*

Fri., October 19th. Mrs. Cha? informs me, she received remission of sins some time ago, in Isai. xlii.; and has had continual joy ever since.

Many were comforted at the Hall, by Isai. liii.

Abigail Savage says, she found *the* comfort yesterday. She had been long in darkness, and could not lay hold on Christ; but is now fully persuaded of her redemption, and could not believe otherwise, if she would.

* The case here referred to was an action at law, commenced against Mr. Charles Wesley, for an alleged trespass in walking over an open field, on his way to Kennington-Common, after preaching in the church at Newington-Butts. The damages with which he was charged were £10; and the taxed costs of the suit which he was required to pay, amounted to £9. 16s. 8d. The bill of this nefarious transaction has been preserved among the family papers of Mr. Charles Wesley, with the following indorsement, in his own handwriting:—"I paid them the things that I never took." "To be re-judged in THAT DAY."—EDIT.

I read part of Mr. Law on Regeneration to our Society. How promising the beginning! how lame the conclusion! *Sensi hominem!* Christianity, he rightly tells us, is a recovery of the divine image; and a Christian is a fallen spirit restored, and re-instated in paradise; a living mirror of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. After this, he supposes it possible for him to be insensible of such a change; to be happy and holy, translated into Eden, renewed in the likeness of God, one with Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, and yet not know it. Nay, we are not to expect, or bid others expect, any such consciousness, if we listen to one who too plainly demonstrates, by this wretched inconsistency, that his knowledge of the new birth is mostly in theory.

At Mr. Labu's I met Miss Jeffreys, the Quaker, whom I had so laboured to convince of sin. I did not perceive any impression my words made at the time; but now, it seems, they sunk deep. An horrible dread has overwhelmed her. Her flesh trembles for fear of God; and she is afraid of His judgments. She sees herself far worse than I described her; and thought, at my last expounding, she was every moment sinking into hell.

Sat., October 20th. I preached at Bradford in the Town-hall, with little power or effect.

Sun., October 21st. At the Common, in the morning, I described the new creature to above fifteen hundred; and in the afternoon, to thrice that number, I preached the word of reconciliation. They all followed me with their prayers. I trust my labour among them hath not been in vain.

Thur., October 25th. I called on one, who *did* run well, but is turned out of the way by an unbelieving parent. "Woe unto the world because of offences!" Woe unto the man by whom the offence comes! It were better that a millstone were tied about his neck, and he cast into the depth of the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones who believe in Jesus.

Fri., October 26th. I baptized Mr. Wigginton in the river by Baptist-Mills; and went on my way rejoicing to French-Hay.

The rain did not lessen our usual congregation at the fish-ponds; to whom I spoke from Rev. ii. 10: "Fear

none of those things which thou shalt suffer. Behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison," &c.

Sat., October 27th. I preached at the green, on the strong man armed ; and disturbed him in his palace.

I pressed the use of means, as means, from Isai. lviii., which is full of promises to those that walk in the ordinances with a sincere heart. I took occasion to show the degeneracy of our modern Pharisees. Their predecessors fasted twice a week ; but these maintain their character for holiness at a cheaper rate. In reverence to the Church, some keep their public day on Friday. None of them regard it, though enjoined, as a fast. As to prayer and sacrament, their neglect is equally notorious. And yet these men cry out, "The Church, the Church!" when they will not hear the Church themselves ; but despise her authority, trample upon her orders, teach contrary to her Articles and Homilies, and break her Canons, every man of them, who *of late* pretend to press their observance.

Sun., October 28th. From Isaiah lvii. 15, "For thus saith the high and lofty One," &c., I spoke closely to the unawakened, and comfortably to the mourners.

In the hard rain I preached at the bowling-green, from, "Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness."

Mon., October 29th. I expounded, with extraordinary assistance, Isaiah lix., that dreadful description of national sin and punishment. While I was speaking, war with Spain was proclaimed, which made us take the more notice of those words : "According to their deeds, accordingly he will repay ; fury to his adversaries, recompence to his enemies ; to the *islands* he will repay recompence. So shall they fear the name of the Lord from the *west*, and his glory from the rising of the sun : when the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him."

Tues., October 30th. My brother preached his farewell sermon to the sorrowful colliers. I wrote as follows to the Bishop of Bristol :—

"MY LORD,—Several persons, both Quakers and Baptists, have applied to me for baptism. Their names are, W. Crease, Mary Crease, Mary Gregory, Rebecca Dicken-

son, Anne Spanin, Eliz. Mills, Eliz. Parsons. It has pleased God to make me instrumental in their conviction. This has given them such a prejudice for me, that they desire to be received into the Church by my ministry. They choose likewise to be baptized by immersion; and have engaged me to give your Lordship notice, as the Church requires."

To-day I talked with several who have lately found rest to their souls; particularly Joanna Nichols, justified on Sunday, in hearing the word. It was then she first said, "I have redemption in his blood." Jane Connor, at Baptist-Mills, found the power of the Lord present to heal her. Jane Parker experienced the same, while we were singing. Mary Connor on Thursday night recovered that unspeakable peace which she first received some weeks ago, but lost, by keeping it to herself. John Hooper, at Baptist-Mills, saw with the eye of faith our Lord as interceding for him with his Father. The word by which faith came was, "Behold, I have graven thee on the palms of my hands."

While my brother was praying among the bands, one attempted to run out. We stopped and found her in an angry despair, refusing to ask for mercy: we continued instant in prayer for her: God was with us of a truth. Several cried out under strong convictions; others were filled with peace and joy in believing.

A few stayed behind the rest, to comfort our despairing sister. God had hid his face from her, and she went on frowardly in the way of her own heart. Inordinate affection is the strong man's armour; and any unmortified desire, which a man allows himself in, will effectually drive and keep Christ out of the heart.

Thur., November 1st. I met Miss Burdock at Mr. Wiginton's, full of good desires, but kept down by the fear of man. I told her plainly she would never find peace, till she was deeply convinced of her having denied her Master. She now no longer justified herself, but confessed she had loved father and mother more than Christ. I saw her in the toils, earnest for deliverance, but almost despairing. God enlarged my heart in prayer for her. She went away sorrowful, yet not without hope.

Fri., November 2d. Our thanksgiving notes multiply greatly.

I received a summons from Oxford, to respond in divinity disputations; which, with other concurrent providences, is a plain call to that place.

Sat., November 3d. I spent an hour with many of the Society, in attempts to thank God for all, and especially his late, mercies. I administered the sacrament at M. Williams's: began preaching with much reluctance on, "Fight the good fight of faith." The Lord was with my mouth, when he had opened it. I trust many found he was.

Sun., November 4th. I preached in Kingswood on Isaiah xlii. 1: "Behold my servant, whom I uphold," &c. We found that Spirit was put upon Him for us. Seldom have I perceived a greater power amongst us.

I gave the sacrament to one whom I had left waiting for Christ. She was now full of His Spirit, ready for the Bridegroom. No cloud interposed between her Beloved and her; only the thin veil of flesh and blood, which was well-nigh rent asunder. What would I give to be on that death-bed!

I met Miss Burdock once more with her sister, and spent two hours in awakening and exhorting them. I doubt not but they will yet break through the host of the Philistines, and draw water out of the well of Bethlehem.

I expounded the parable of the sower; and in the evening our Lord's divine prayer, John xvii. Many, I trust, found him then interceding for them.

Mon., November 5th. I met some of the bands at our sister Linford's. In prayer one received forgiveness. We had a greater blessing at the Hall than ever before. I summed up all I had said, either to publicans or Pharisees, to the comfort or discomfort of every one present.

I spent the time of conference with the candidates for baptism. All seem prepared for that holy ordinance.

In the Brick-yard I discoursed on the woman with the issue of blood. God magnified his strength in my weakness. Several cried out they were healed! Virtue was gone out of Him. They heard his voice, "Thy faith hath made thee whole: go in peace."

Many had fellowship with Christ in his sufferings, while

I spoke of them in the words of St. John. He melted us into tears of love. I knew not how to leave them, so many testified that they then tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come.

Tues., November 6th. I was called to a woman at Bedminster. I have seldom seen a soul more deeply plunged in the spirit of bondage, or under stronger pangs of the new birth. She received immediate relief in prayer; and came at noon to tell me that her yoke was wholly broken off.

PART V.

FROM MARCH 14TH, 1740, TO DECEMBER 31ST, 1740.*

FRI., March 14th. By eleven I reached Gloucester, where the very last spark, I think, is gone out. In the evening I preached to a few people in Mr. Whitefield's field, on *Isai. liii. 1*: "Who hath believed our report?" I was a little revived just before by Mrs. Wynn of Painswick telling me, she and two more of her family had lately received forgiveness. There was more stirring among the dry bones than I expected.

Sat., March 15th. Between two and three we came to Bengeworth. I sent for Mr. Seward. Answer was returned that he had taken physic, but would send his brother Henry to me. Mr. Henry followed me to Mr. Canning's, and fell upon me without preface or ceremony: I was the downfall of his brother, had picked his pocket, ruined his family, come now to get more money, was a scoundrel, rascal, and so forth, and deserved to have my gown stripped over my ears. He concluded with threatening how he would beat me, if he could but catch me on Bengeworth-Common. I spoke little, and with temper.

All letters, I find, have been intercepted since Mr. Seward's illness; his fever called madness, his servants set over him as spies, &c. Be sure he is to know nothing of my being here; but I mean to give him an hint of it tomorrow, by shouting from the top of his wall.

* No record of Mr. Charles Wesley's labours during the months of December, 1739, and January and February of this year, has been preserved.—EDIT.

Sun., March 16th. I preached the law and Gospel last night, from Isai. xl., with much freedom and power: appointed the usual place for preaching. Mr. Henry came to dissuade me; said, "Four Constables are ordered to apprehend you, if you come near my brother's wall: so come at your peril."

I walked toward the place. An officer from the Mayor met and desired me to come to him. I said I would first wait upon my Lord, and then upon him, whom I revered for his office's sake. I went on. Mr. Henry met me with threats and revilings. I began singing,

"Shall I, for fear of feeble man,
Thy Spirit's course in me restrain?"

He ran about raving like a madman, and quickly got some men for his purpose; who laid hold on me. I asked by what authority? Where was their warrant? Let them show that, I would save them the trouble of using violence. They said they had none, but I should not preach there; and hurried me away amid the cries of the people. Truly their tongues were set on fire of hell. Henry cried, "Take him away, and duck him." I broke out into singing with T. Maxfield, and let them carry me whither they would. At the bridge in the lane they left me. There I stood, out of the liberty of the Corporation, and gave out,

"Angel of God, whate'er betide,
Thy summons I obey!"

Some hundreds they could not frighten from hearing me, on, "If God be for us, who can be against us?" Never did I feel so much what I spoke. The word did not return empty; as the tears on all sides testified.

Then I waited upon Mr. Mayor: the poor sincere ones followed me trembling. He was a little warm at my not coming before. I gave him the reason, and added, that I knew no law of God or man which I had transgressed; if there was any such, desired no favour. He said he should not have denied me leave to preach, even in his own yard; but Mr. Henry Seward and the 'Pothecary had assured him, it would quite cast his brother down again. I said it would rather restore him; for our Gospel was life from the dead.

A lawyer began declaiming against my making the poor gentleman mad. I granted, "You fools must count his life madness." Here a Clergyman spoke much,—and nothing. As near as I could pick out his meaning, he grumbled at Mr. Whitefield's speaking against the Clergy in his Journal. I told him, if he himself was a carnal, worldly-minded Clergyman, *I* might do what he would call railing,—warn God's people to beware of false Prophets. I did not say, because I did not know him, that he *was* one of those shepherds that fed themselves, not the flock; of those dumb dogs that could not bark; of those greedy dogs that could never have enough: if he was, I was sorry for him, and must leave that sentence of Chrysostom with him, "Hell is paved with the skulls of Christian Priests."

He charged me with making a division in Mr. Seward's family. I asked, "Are you a Preacher of the Gospel, and do not know the effect it has among men? 'There shall be five in an house, two against three, and three against two.'" He laughed, and cried to his companion, "Did not I tell you he would bring that?" I urged the necessity of persecution, if one of a family was first awakened. "Awakened!" said he, "I don't know what you mean by that." "I mean, your speaking truth, when you tell God the remembrance of your sins is grievous to you, the burden intolerable." I turned from him, and asked the Mayor, whether he approved the treatment I had met with. He said, "By no means;" and if I complained, he would bind the men over to answer it at the sessions. I told him I did not complain, neither would I prosecute them, as they well knew. I assured him, I had waited upon him, not out of interest, for I wanted nothing of him; not out of fear, for I had done no wrong, and wanted no human support: but out of true respect, and to show him I believed the powers that be are ordained of God.

In church the Minister I had talked with, Mr. Pr., seemed utterly confounded at the Second Lesson, John iii. That saying in the Epistle, likewise, was sadly inconsistent with some of his: "But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now." In his pulpit, (Nicodemus's stronghold,) he strained hard to draw a parallel between the Pharisees and

Methodists. I suppose because we preach self-justification. In the evening I preached without interruption, "The blind receive their sight," &c. Our Lord was present. None stirred for the rain. The school-house was crowded at seven. I spoke convincingly, to some scoffers in particular, who could not long stand it.

"Sing ye to our God above
Praise eternal as his love!"

We have seen wonderful things to-day.

Mon., March 17th. My yesterday's treatment has provoked many to love. They receive me the more gladly into their houses, because Mr. Seward's is shut against me.

I breakfasted at a loving Quaker's. I preached at three by the river's side, on, "Blow ye the trumpet in Sion, sound an alarm in my holy mountain," &c. (Joel ii. 1.) God put strong words into my mouth, and inclined the people's hearts to hearken.

Mr. Henry Seward, mad with passion at my stay, spreads the news of it everywhere, and much increases my audience. To-night I proceeded in the beatitudes. When I came to the last, "Blessed are they which are persecuted," our enemies, not knowing the Scriptures, fulfilled them. A troop poured in from a neighbouring alehouse, and set up their champion, a schoolmaster, upon a bench over against me. For near an hour he spake for his master, and I for mine; but my voice prevailed. Sometimes we prayed, sometimes sang and gave thanks. The Lord our God was with us, and the shout of a King was amongst us. In the midst of tumult, reproach, and blasphemy, I enjoyed a sweet calm within, even while I preached the Gospel with most contention. These slighter conflicts must fit me for greater.

Tues., March 18th. Last night's disturbance, we now hear, was contrived at the alehouse by the 'Squire and Rector.

I preached at the usual place, from Isai. xi.: "The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb," &c. I set my eyes on the man that had been most violent with me on Sunday, and testified my love. He thanked me, and seemed melted.

While I was concluding, my friend the schoolmaster set up his throat. We had recourse to singing, which quite

spoiled his oration. Henry had kept him in town, warm with drink, for this purpose. I could hardly restrain the people from falling upon him.

I went up to my other rough friend, the Sergeant, and shook him by the hand with hearty good-will. He could not well tell how to take it; said he had only done what he was ordered, and seemed glad to get out of my hands.

Some had come merely to make a riot; but my God was stronger than theirs.

I had a message before preaching from Mr. P——, the Minister, that if I did not immediately quit the town, Mr. Henry Seward could easily raise a mob; and then let me look to myself.

Mr. Canning and others dissuaded me from going to the Society; for my enemies were resolved to do me a mischief, which I ought to avoid, by going out of the way for a while. I answered in the words of Nehemiah, "Should such a man as I flee?" not in self-confidence, (for I am naturally afraid of everything,) but I was told in the morning Psalms, "Whoso dwelleth under the shadow of the Most High, shall abide under the defence of the Almighty," &c.

I went, and set upon the opposers; bade them glory of me, for they had terrified me now. I was really afraid—to leave Evesham. I durst no more do it, than forsake my Captain, or deny my Master, while any one of them opened his mouth against the truth. No man answered a word, or offered to disturb me in my following exhortation. Many were convinced: Mrs. Canning was in the depth of mourning. We spent an hour in songs of triumph. Some Quakers joined us, and found their giving God praises with their lips did not at all obstruct the melody of the heart.

I received great comfort from those words in the first Lesson, "Then the men of the city said to Joash, Bring out thy son that he may die, because he hath cast down the altar of Baal. And Joash said unto all that stood against him, Will ye plead for Baal? Will ye save him? If he be a god, let him plead for himself, because one hath cast down his altar."

In the afternoon there was none to plead for him, or to molest me in the work of God, while I showed God's

method of saving souls : " For he maketh sore, and bindeth up ; he woundeth, and his hands make whole." The tears that were shed gave comfortable evidence that my labour has not been in vain.

Wed., March 19th. I laboured to convince my many hearers of sin, from the law, as interpreted by our Lord. The floods began to lift up their voice : I went and stood by the door : the enemy still murmured without, and attempted to force their way in. I turned upon them, and invited them to Christ, till all their opposition ceased. I then took my leave of the little flock ; but for no long season.

After much wandering, by three we found out Mr. Morgan. They received us very affectionately. Mrs. Morgan was very open. God gave her a kind prejudice in my behalf. She related what passed the week they spent at Mr. Bray's. He urged her to cast off all the means of grace : not to go to church, or sacrament ; not to read the Scriptures ; not to pray in private, but *be still* ; and the " new light," as he called it, would come of itself. She would very soon have it, he promised her, for he felt her spirit. The effect of his discourse was, it made her utterly regardless of religion ; for the new light would come, she thought, when it would. Mr. Morgan they dissuaded from family prayer, or preaching, till he should receive it. George Whitefield, they told her, was quite in the dark, and had done great mischief by preaching : so had my brother and I ; but of me they had great hopes. Mrs. Eusters and Mrs. Vaughan were also brought to bear their testimony against the ordinances, and spoke much concerning the pernicious use of them.

Great was the offence which these two poor souls took at our London friends. Mrs. Morgan they dealt with apart, and would have her go to Germany, setting her against her husband. He complains, that since she came under their teaching, she has lost all desire of being a Christian. I can never enough thank God for this unexpected warning against their diabolical stillness. Was I engaged in the devil's service to turn back an awakened soul, I would send him to them for instruction.

We spent the evening in defacing bad impressions, and mutual unmystical exhortation. Next morning we left our

weaker friend, delivered out of the snare of the devil, we trust, and again resolved to work out her salvation.

Mr. Morgan attended us as far as Woodstock, and was astonished at Thomas Maxfield's experience. By three we got to Oxford, where the little flock is kept together by our brother Viney ; whose stillness does not yet consist in trampling upon God's ordinances.

Sat., March 22d. We returned to Mr. Morgan, having before agreed that I should preach in his churches, and then once more look the world in the face at Evesham. He now told me more of J. Bray, and his new guides. John advised him first to get preferment, and then declare himself. They caressed all his natural inclinations, on condition he would come into their notion of stillness. They taught him a Christianity which had no cross in it, no work of faith, no patience of hope, no labour of love.

Sun., March 23d. I read prayers and preached once more in a church at Westcot. It was full of attentive hearers ; my text, "What must I do to be saved?" I never spoke with greater plainness. Many seemed pricked at the heart. Mrs. M—— cried all sermon-time. I went home full of comfort. I preached at Idbury, to a much larger congregation, from our Lord's invitation, "Come unto me, all that labour," &c. I never preached more closely. I returned to Westcot, and showed the legal and evangelical states from 2 Tim. i. 7 : "God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind." Still our Lord was faithful to his promise, "Lo, I am with you."

Mon., March 24th. I returned to Evesham, and met Mr. Henry. He asked me to step into the Crown. I answered, I did not frequent taverns. "What business have you with my brother?" "Can you imagine, if I have any business with him, as a Christian, I shall communicate it to you?" "Why not to me?" "Because you are a natural man." "Why, are not you a natural man as well as I?" "You are a *mere* natural man, in your sins and in your blood." "What do you mean by that? I say, have you any particular business?" "I have business at present, somewhat different from talking with you."

Tues., March 25th. News was brought us, that Mr.

Benjamin Seward was carrying out to Badsey, there to be secured, no doubt, till I turn my back on Evesham. I walked out that way, and met Henry. He excused his past behaviour; said anger was rooted in his nature. "But, indeed, Sir, you are the downfall of my brother Benjamin: he has certainly been out of his senses." "Yes; and so have I been before now in a fever." "O, but we all really think him mad through means of you gentlemen." "Very likely you may. And if it should ever please God to make *you* a Christian, you will be thought mad too." "God make me a Christian! I am a better Christian than you are." "You was once in the way of being one, but you have stifled your convictions." "I say, I am a better Christian than you are. I have good Ministers and the Scriptures to teach me." "Yes; and those Scriptures say, a man that loves money, is no more a Christian than an adulterer." "What, Sir! must not a man love money? How shall he go to market without it? Not that I value it, not I.—But what do you mean by making divisions in our family? You come now to get money." "Indeed, Sir, you know not what I come for. You cannot tell what to make of me. You have no standard to measure me by but yourself. I don't wonder at your outcries. Micah cried after them that ran away with his gods, and should they ask him what ailed him? Money is your god; and you think I come to rob you of it." He rode to a good convenient distance, then, turning back, cried out, "You are a rascal, and a villain, and a pickpocket!" and, setting spurs to his horse, rode off as fast as he could. Brother Maxfield and I walked on, calmly praising God.

Mr. Canning's little daughter told us, she had watched in the lane, and put a note into Mr. Benjamin's hand. Soon after his chariot stopped at our door, and I went out, and found my friend. He invited me to his house. Henry was upon the coach-box, a place he full well became; and which nothing could make uneasy to him but my presence. Yesterday he told me, I should never see his brother, and to-day he himself brings him to me.

I dined at Mr. Keech's, who is somewhat awakened, his daughter more so, his wife a true mourner. I drank tea with one that *was* a sinner, but now looks unto Jesus.

I walked out with brother Maxfield to the river-side, and spent a comfortable hour in prayer and singing. Then we went to Mr. Benjamin Seward's; found Henry and his wife with him; both surprisingly civil, and full of apology. Henry begged my pardon; and waited upon me to the gate.

I finished Matt. v. with the Society. All was quiet till the last hymn. Then I heard the enemy roaring, and gave out another. They left off first; and the people departed, not all, I hope, in peace; for the strong man armed is disturbed in many.

Wed., March 26th. I breakfasted at Mr. Seward's. We were all diverted at Mr. Henry's making, and continually breaking, his promise not to be angry. Who maketh me to differ?

I expounded John iii.; and was much assisted in the application. A poor harlot spoke out, after her manner; but the devil durst not let her stay. He soon hurried her out of the reach of the Gospel, as he did two or three more; who, as soon as they had spoken a word for him, made off.

Thur., March 27th. I finished John iii. in as strong words as I could speak. What a stony heart has the natural man, till the hammer of God's word breaks the rock in pieces!

Fri., March 28th. I met Mr. Henry at his brother's; and, with all plainness of love, endeavoured to convince him of sin. Never have I found a man of so little sense, with so many evasions. I simply told him, that if he died in his present condition, he must die eternally; that he raged in vain; my hook was within him; I had warned the sinner, and delivered my own soul. "Your hook!" cried he; "what do you mean by your hook?" Benjamin answered, smiling, "You know, brother, Mr. Wesley is a fisher of men." As a Minister, I added, I now showed him *his* lost estate, and that whether he would hear, or whether he would forbear.

In the school-house I summed up all I had said, and encouraged them to build up one another; promising to see them again, when the Lord directed my way to them. We had a few noisy ἀγοραῖοι to quicken us. Our parting was as it ought to be.

Sat., March 29th. I took my leave of Mr. Seward. Henry fell upon me, for advising his brother to keep up the Society ; “rogue, rascal, villain, pickpocket,” were the best titles he could afford me. Mr. Benjamin interposed. I begged him not then to answer a fool according to his folly. Henry started up, and courageously took me by the nose. The cries of Mrs. Seward stopped any farther violence. I was filled with comfort ; felt the hand of God upon me, and sat still. I said to Mrs. Seward, “Be not disquieted, Madam : I have learned to turn the other cheek.” Henry was as the troubled sea : Benjamin perfectly composed ; said to me, “You have now received one mark of Christ ;” to his brother, “Was I what you are, I should turn you out of my house this moment.” I would not let him proceed ; begged Mrs. Seward’s pardon for the disturbance I had been the innocent occasion of ; and departed, rejoicing that I was counted worthy to suffer shame for the name of Christ.

I came to Westcot ; found M. Morgan hungering and thirsting for righteousness : the last was become first. They desired me to expound the lesson, St. Paul’s Epistle to Philemon. In speaking to the fifteenth verse, “For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever,” the Spirit was present in his demonstration. Brother Maxfield felt it ; and told me, he *knew* Mrs. M. had received the blessing. She retired to prayer ; informed us afterwards that she had been filled with inexpressible comfort, from an assured sense of pardon ; that, while she was praying, a sudden damp came over her, for having blasphemously thought her sins forgiven. She knew not then, though we did, from whence this fear proceeded.

Sun., March 30th. My late discourses have worked differently. Some are wounded, some hardened : I hear of no neutrals. The word has turned them upside down.

In the pulpit I opened the book on, “The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because the Lord hath anointed me to preach the Gospel to the poor.” I described our Lord’s prophetic office, and the persons on whom alone he could perform it. We returned from the altar with the voice of praise and thanksgiving, among such as keep holiday. Mrs. M. felt every word we sang.

From hence we hasted to the meat which the world knoweth not of. Idbury church and churchyard were full. I showed them wherein holiness consisted ; answered their objections, dividing to them the word of truth, both law and Gospel. Many were pierced to the dividing asunder their soul and spirit. One woman the commandment plainly slew ; and she was carried off in a fit. O that all hardened sinners were so wounded in spirit !

We hasted back to Westcot ; where I preached the pure Gospel from the good Samaritan. Surely he was in the midst, pouring in his oil and wine.

I adjourned to Mr. Morgan's. His house was crowded as a Minister's ought to be. In the morning I had thoughts of expounding Rom. vii. And now a woman told me, she had read that Mr. W. Seward had been convinced by my explaining Rom. vii., and therefore begged me to expound it now. I did so, with great assistance. The woman heard, as her tears confessed, her own state, not St. Paul's, described. Another serious Dissenter was equally moved.

Mon., March 31st. I got, well weary, to Oxford.

Tues., April 1st. I encouraged C. Graves against the fear of man, which had almost separated him from the despised followers of Christ. I preached to the Society "Christ, our wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption." Brother Viney allows we speak the same words with him : if he disallowed it, it makes no matter with me.

Thur., April 3d. I reached London by two, and found my brother Hall quite cold and unconcerned. He seems never to have heard of the Gospel, or that God is reviving his work in these latter days.

At the Foundery I preached on, "The kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost." We joined to meet in the name of Jesus. My heart was enlarged in prayer for the infant Society.

I talked with poor perverted Mr. Simpson. The still ones have carried their point. He said some were prejudiced against the Moravian brethren ; and particularly against Molther : but that he had received great benefit from them. I asked whether he was *still in* the means of grace, or *out of* them. "Means of grace !" he answered ;

“there are none. Neither is there any good to be got by those you call such, or any obligation upon us to use them. Sometimes I go to church and sacrament for example sake : but it is a thing of mere indifference. Most of us have cast them off. You must not speak a word in recommendation of them : that is setting people upon working.”

What shall we say to these things? I then *said* little, but thought, “Ah, my brother ! you have set the wolf to keep the sheep.”

Good-Friday, April 4th. I called on a multitude of sinners at the Foundery, “Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.” Many were melted into tears ; but their tears, our brother Simpson observed, were a sign that they were *not* affected.

After preaching, James Hutton came to fetch me to Molther, at J. Bray’s. I chose rather to fast than eat ; and to pray in God’s house, than dispute in another’s. I called with Maxfield on Molther in the afternoon. He did not much open himself ; only talked in general against running after ordinances. We parted as we met, without either prayer or singing. The time for these poor exercises is past. Brother Maxfield was scandalized at their trifling ; which is perfectly consistent with stillness ; though Christian exhortation is not.

At six I read several bills of thanksgiving for comforts received under the word in the morning. Our Lord was powerfully with me, while I described his sufferings. (Isai. liii.)

Sat., April 5th. I spent an hour with Charles Delamotte. The Philistines have been upon him, and prevailed. He has given up the ordinances, as to their being matter of duty. Only his practice lies a little behind his faith. He uses them still.

He would not have me plead for them. “They are mere outward things. Our brethren have left them off. It would only cause divisions to bring them up again. Let them drop, and speak of the weightier matters of the law.” I told him, I would hear them of their own mouth, who talked against the ordinances ; first have my full evidence, and then speak, and not spare.

I breakfasted with my mother, who has been dealt with,

but in vain. Bishop Beveridge would as soon have given up the ordinances. I disturbed Mr. Stonehouse before his time. It was but eight o'clock. However, he rose and came to me.

"If thou art he! but, O, how changed! how fallen!" He is now taught to teach, that there are no degrees of faith: no forgiveness or faith, where any unbelief remains; any doubt, or fear, or sorrow. He himself was never justified; is going to leave his parish, and transport himself—to Germany!

I have given an account of his wife in him.

From eleven to one is devoted to conference. The first that came was Stephen Dupee, a soldier, who informs me he received forgiveness this week *in* hearing the word, and could lay down his life for the truth of it. But forasmuch as faith came not by hearing the Moravians, I suppose in his first temptation they will remand him to the prison of Satan, and not allow him to have faith till he subscribes to theirs.

Margaret Austin tells me, she has longed for my coming as a child for the breast. "I was justified," she said, "the first Friday you was at Wapping, with those many others; saw my Saviour bringing me a pardon written in his blood. But their telling me I had no faith if I had any doubt, brought me again into darkness. I have been in an agony ever since; but last night my Saviour returned. I received your words as coming from his mouth; and with the eye of faith I again saw my pardon, written in his blood."

I walked with brother Maxfield, praying and praising God. A sweet confidence he gave us that he would not leave us alone; but by us weak things confound the things that are strong.

Sister Jackson called, and much strengthened my hands. Most of the women have renounced the ordinances. Our sister Munsy has left their Society, for their treatment of *her* Ministers.

A separation I foresee unavoidable. All means have been taken to wean our friends of their esteem for us. God never used us, say they, as instruments to convert one soul. Indeed, I have just received a noble testimony of W. Seward's to the contrary. But he and George White-

field are reprobated for unbelievers. In a letter now received, George writes, "Remember what Luther says, 'Rather let heaven and earth come together, than one tittle of truth perish.'"

I preached at Bowers's Society. Many *still* ones were there, watching for my halting. As yet I fight in the cloud ; and think it safest not to converse with such of our misled, misleading brethren as I love best ; particularly Mr. Stonehouse and M. Claggetts.

Easter-day, April 6th. At the Foundery I strongly preached Christ, and the power of his resurrection, from Phil. iii. 9, 10. My intention was, not to mention one word of the controverted points, till I had spoke with each of the seducers. But God ordered it better ; and led me, I know not how, *in ipsam aciem et certamen*. My mouth was opened to ask, "Who hath bewitched you, that you should let go your Saviour? that you should cast away your shield and your confidence, and deny you ever knew him?" More to this purpose I said ; and then followed a burst of general sorrow. The whole congregation was in tears. I called them back to their Saviour, even *theirs*, in words which were not mine ; pressed obedience to the divine ordinances ; and prayed my Lord to stay his hand, and not set to his seal, unless I spake as the oracles of God.

After preaching, he sent me a witness of his truth which I had delivered. A sister, long in darkness through doubtful disputations, came and declared Christ has again appeared unto her, and imprinted forgiveness on her heart. My heart, for the time, was as hers. Brother Maxfield was in the full triumph of faith.

I dined at Hiland's, halting between two. Bell, Simpson, and others, when the bell rung for church, said, "It is good for us to be here." "Well, then," said I, "I will go myself, and leave you to your antichristian liberty." Upon this they started up and bore me company.

One of them told a poor man in my hearing, "That comfort you received at the sacrament, was given you by the devil." I should less blasphemously have called it, the drawing of the Father, or preventing grace.

The Foundery at night was filled, both within and without. I showed them their natural estate, and the way to

come out of it, in blind Bartimeus, who sat by the wayside begging. I could not have *so spoken* of the ordinances, had not God instituted them. Every word brought its own evidence to their hearts.

I walked with Maxfield to Bowers's, where the bands were to meet: the door was shut against us. I carried the few sisters to J. Bray's. More joined us in prayer and praise. God blessed my words, and enlarged our hearts in love to each other. The poor scattered sheep knew my voice. A stranger they will not follow.

J. Bray came with Edmunds, took me aside, and desired brother Maxfield might be turned out. I submitted it to the sisters, who all desired he might stay. Then, without losing an hour in dumb show, I gave out an hymn, and prayed according to God. For an hour I spoke freely, no one forbidding me; avowed my love to them, my disinterestedness, my success; told them what God had done for my soul, and others through me; gloried in the cross of Christ; lamented their having been so troubled; exhorted them to hold fast whereunto they had attained, and never to forsake the holy ordinances; to avoid all reasonings and disputes about their faith; and to go on to perfection.

Many close things God enabled me to speak, concerning those that troubled them, and would exclude us, that they might affect them; yet all in the spirit of meekness.

I asked Bray whether he denied the ordinances to be commands. He answered indirectly, "I grant them to be great privileges." (Edmunds confessed more honestly, that he had cast them off.) Whether he had not denied George Whitefield to have faith? This question he answered by begging to be excused it. He denounced grievous woes against the women, for suffering Maxfield to be present, contrary to order. That order, they said, had been imposed upon them when no Minister was present; and they were threatened to be turned out, unless they consented to it. I put my brother Bray in mind of his respect for the Prophetess Lavington, to show he was not infallible.

We plainly saw his stillness was ruffled: he showed it by threatening to renounce all care of the bands, till they refused Maxfield admittance. I told him I did not see what good he had done them since our leaving London:

asked if he could charge us with preaching another gospel : preferred Molther to myself, yet declared I would not give place to him by subjection, no, not for an hour ; but whosoever cast off the ordinances, I would cast off him, although it was my own brother. We concluded our conference with thanksgiving.

Below, J. Bray asked me whether I should come to my band on Monday. I answered, "No." He modestly replied, "Then you shall be expelled."

Mon., April 7th. I cried to above five thousand at Kennington-Common, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." The love this people bear me requires the counterbalance of our stronger brethren's contempt.

My companions in the coach had been Quakers, but left them for their worldly-mindedness, and clave to us. They begin to feel themselves sinners.

I came to brother Maxfield's assistance, who was engaged in dispute with Bell, but an over-match for him, and much wiser in the things of God than his teacher. Bell graciously allows him to be a child of God, although never brought into confusion by the still brethren.

Tues., April 8th. I met Simpson and Oxley at the Foundery. The former told me plainly, if I recommended the ordinances, he must preach against me. I avowed my resolution never to give them up, as he and our poor deluded brethren had done. He tried all his Moravian questions upon Maxfield : *illidens solido*.

I preached on Mark ii. 10 : "The Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins." Anne Young, one who has been brought into confusion, testified that power, having now received the witness into herself. Several others come out of darkness daily, and recover their comfort.

Many poor sinners came to confer with me to-day about their souls. Two hours is full little for this work.

At one the woman bands met by my appointment. I began praying ; and we were all overwhelmed. I spoke largely of their being brought into the wilderness ; of their folly and ingratitude in giving up not his Ministers only, but their Saviour himself. My love and sorrow ran through them all. I told them that their forsaking the ordinances sufficiently accounted for their being forsaken by Christ ;

warned them against disputing ; against vindicating *me*, or saying, “ I am of Paul, and I of Apollos ;” against the double extreme of resting in the means, or slighting them ; but, above all, against stopping short of the glorious image of God.

Jane Jackson and others witnessed what God had done for their souls, through our ministry. If Christ be not with us, who hath begotten us these ? His power overshadowed us at this time ; therefore our heart danced for joy, and in our song did we praise him.

I drank tea at Mr. Hawthorn’s, who seems, with his wife and sisters, not far from the kingdom of God. I spoke of the love of Christ crucified to the Misses of the school, and melted them into tears. How easily might children receive their Saviour, if he were tendered to them !

I preached at the Common to six thousand poor, maimed, halt, and blind. Glory to Him, who is with his messengers always !

At Mr. Crouch’s I opened the book upon Phil. i. 25 : “ And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith,” &c. I gave some account of our colliers, and prayed that their spirit might be with us. He was so, indeed. One received his testimony in her heart ; all some spiritual gift.

Wed., April 9th. I began Isaiah. At one I met the women ; prayed in faith that some might receive a second gift. Sister Hinsom recovered the sight of *her* Saviour. So did sister Barber. He was with us of a truth. How vainly does man deny, when God confirms !

I dined at Mr. Dawson’s, a sincere soul, his wife unawakened. As we were going, two gentlewomen came in. One was seeking Christ. We prayed, and had free access. We prayed again, and wrestled for an answer. The work went visibly forward in her soul. She trembled exceedingly. The Spirit cried and groaned from her heart. Her sighs shook my soul, till deliverance came. The clouds were scattered more and more. Her doubts and fears died away ; and at last she confidently laid claim to Jesus *her* Saviour.

I never saw a soul so sweetly rising to the assurance of faith. In our thanksgiving she triumphed ; full of the

spirit of love and supplication. I lent words to her faith. Mrs. Dawson trembled; her husband mourned: I was filled with confidence: brother Maxfield was almost out of the body.

This was to prepare us for Fetter-lane, whither I carried brother Maxfield. I was in a mild, open, loving frame. The brethren could not contain long. Hutton began with objecting to Maxfield's presence at the women's lovefeast. I spoke as reconciling as I could; (but the strong cannot bear with the weak;) desired their prayers, that what I knew not, the Lord would show me.

James welcomed Maxfield by telling him, "If ever you speak to any of the women as you used to do at Bristol, you must not come here." Maxfield was the only *still* person among us. The old man rose in me; but my Lord kept me within bounds.

Simpson took upon him next to reprove me for mentioning myself in preaching, and showing such vehemence, which was all animal spirits. I took him up short, that I should not ask him, or any of the brethren, how an ambassador of Christ should speak.

The strong ones were now brim full of dispute. I was to declare my success at Bristol, but they would not permit me. After much thwarting, I told them they did not deserve a true Minister of Christ. James began giving me good words; but Simpson spoiled all again, by accusing me with "preaching up the ordinances." I got home, weary, wounded, and bruised, and faint, through the contradiction of sinners; *poor* sinners, as they call themselves, these heady, violent, fierce contenders for stillness. I could not bear the thought of meeting them again.

I finished Isaiah i. at the Foundery, which led me to speak explicitly on the ordinances. God gave me great power, or, as our brethren will have it, animal spirits, sealing my words upon many hearts.

Mrs. Seaton's in particular. The hammer had broke the rock. "I had so built her up in ordinances," as they phrase it, that she saw herself a damned sinner, a Pharisee, an hypocrite, trusting in a form of godliness all her life, but not knowing the power. She now felt her heart-sins, and that she was capable of all manner of wickedness.

I prayed by a faithful soul, whom Simpson had buffeted; but she would not quite let go her Saviour. She was greatly confirmed; and Mrs. Seaton, too, was fully set at liberty, and rejoiced, believing with all her heart.

Simpson and the rest have dissuaded them, and indeed all our friends, from ever hearing my brother or me, or using any of the means. They condemn all doing good, whether to soul or body. "For, unless you *trust* in them," say they, "you would not do good works, so called."

Yesterday Simpson declared, "No soul *can* be washed in the blood of Christ, unless it be first brought to a true believer, or one in whom Christ is fully formed. But there are only *two such Ministers* in London, which are Molther and Bell." If this is not calling man Rabbi, what is? Nay, it is worse: it is making the excellency of the power to be of man, and not of God; it is robbing Christ of his glory, and making his creature *necessary* to Him in his peculiar work of salvation. First perish Molther, Bell, and all mankind, and sink into nothing, that Christ may be all in all.

I am astonished at the divine goodness. How seasonably did it bring us hither, and lead us since! The adversary roared in the midst of the congregation, and set up his banners for tokens. A new commandment, called "stillness," had repealed all God's commandments, and given a full indulgence to lazy, corrupt nature. The still ones rage above measure against *me*; for my brother, they *say*, had consented to their pulling down the ordinances, and here come I, and build them up again.

God overruled me to declare myself *before the time* I intended, which cut off all their *πικανολογια*. O what a deliverance was this! for they would deceive the very elect. Satan has transformed himself into an angel of light. What havoc would these "dogs of hell" have made, had not our Lord arose to maintain his own cause! But, glory be to Him, when the enemy was come in like a flood, then the Spirit of the Lord lifted up a standard against him.

I met such of the sisters as have not forsook the ordinances. Our Lord divides the spoil with the mighty; and I doubt not but a little one will become a thousand. Some or other continually recover their comfort.

I received the following letter from him we dined with yesterday :—

“O praise the Lord with me, and let us magnify his name together ! Reverend Sir, I cannot forbear acquainting you how mercifully God heard your prayers for me. After you left me, I was deeply depressed, and went mourning all the evening, as I had done for months before ; my prayers seldom reaching farther than sighs and groans. At waking, I offered up my first thoughts, and was presently answered with a comfortable power to say, ‘I know that my Redeemer liveth.’ My heavy load is vanished. Blessed be his eternal goodness ! Now can I praise Him with joyful lips. O pray for me, my dear Pastor ; for to you and your brother I am a debtor more than I can pay. But my Lord will pay it for me ; and now I *know* he has paid all my debts above, he will not forget these below. From your young son in Christ,

“ROBERT DAWSON.”

At six I began St. John’s Gospel. The true Light shone in our darkness. Several saw His glory ; some testified it in the Society ; and more in their notes of thanksgiving. I prayed in confidence. Bell was present. God called forth his witnesses. Four made confession of the faith then given, or restored. I carried Bell to each. He had nothing to object to their strong and full testimony. Two declared they had apprehended Christ before ; but on their forsaking his ordinances, he had forsook them. I warned them all from hence, not to trust in the ordinances, lest God in judgment should suffer them to cast them off : spoke strongly and mildly of those who had turned the lame out of the way ; prayed for their return, and for the increase of this little flock. God himself could not convince one who would not be convinced ; no, not though he made bare his arm before us. “Christ commands me to say,” said Bell, if we would believe him, “that the ordinances are no commands.” I forbid all dispute, telling him, it should rest here :—He said they were no commands, I said they were ; let the word of God determine. In Fetter-lane none durst speak for them : here none should speak against them. If he could forbear, he should be welcome here ; otherwise, not.

Fri., April 11th. The still brethren confront me with my brother's authority, pretending that he consented not to speak of the ordinances, that is, in effect to give them up, but leave it to every one's choice, whether they would use them or not. That necessity is laid upon us to walk in them, that "Do this in remembrance of me" has the nature of a command, they absolutely deny. From "Woe unto the world because of offences," &c., I argued that their having offended or stumbled one of these little ones, was no proof that he did not believe in Jesus, but a dreadful proof that the offender had better never have been born.

Poor Simpson was present, but could not stand it. He withdrew dejected; I hope, shaken: for a mighty power accompanied the word.

Anne Parker, in conference, told me, they had darkened, but could not quite destroy, the work of God in her soul. Her faith she would not give up, though she lost the comfort of it through their doubtful disputations. But on Thursday, while we were praying, she recovered it with large increase.

Hannah Kent declares, she felt Christ's blood applied last night. So did Eliz. Morison, upon my asking, "Believest thou that he is able to do this? that the Son of man can forgive you this moment?" Eliz. Bowen, likewise, received her pardon last night in hearing.

I am forced to allow more time for conference. To-day the weak ones found me full employment from three to eleven.

At Wapping I was directed to, "Go, wash in the pool of Siloam." (John ix. 7.) Well is the Spirit compared to a mighty rushing wind: we heard the sound of it now, and the flame was kindled. Many felt the pangs of the new birth. Behold, a cry, "The Bridegroom cometh!" I knew not when to leave off preaching, praying, singing. Four witnesses stood forth and testified, "A man that is called Jesus hath opened mine eyes." From Him they received power to believe; and they worshipped Him.

Mr. Simpson called, and laid down his two postulatus, that, 1. The ordinances are no commands. 2. It is impossible to doubt after justification. I maintained the contradictory; plainly told him, they were fighting against God,

robbing him of his glory, offending his little ones, and were under a strong delusion.

While I was going to bed, he came again with Bell, and disputed against the ordinances, and degrees of faith. He often repeated to himself, "O my Jesus!" I asked him, "Have you a new heart?" "No." "Have you faith?" "No." "Would you not be damned if you died this moment?" "Yes." "Then how dare you, a damned unbeliever, say, '*My Jesus*'?" He was struck, and had nothing to answer.

Sun., April 13th. I spoke strong words of waiting for Christ *in* the use of means. In vain do our brethren dissuade. They have set the house on fire, and now say they will be quiet if I will.

Before preaching, a woman came to me in the agony of despair. After preaching, I saw her rejoicing in Christ *her* Saviour. Such seals he gives me, as often as I speak in his name: and while he does so, I am content that man should withhold his testimony.

I received the sacrament at St. Paul's. The last time I communicated there, was in company with our whole Society. Who hath bewitched them, that they should not obey their Saviour? A Moravian, by declaring some months ago, he had long sought Christ in the ordinances in vain; but on his leaving them off, immediately found him. Nature caught the word; and our brethren cast off all the means at once.

I am now informed that Mrs. Sutherland was to hear me on Thursday evening, and when she got home was filled with all peace and joy in believing.

My soul was exceeding sorrowful at the love-feast, to find so little love, and so much dispute. I spoke as healingly as I could; declared what God had done for the colliers; put them in remembrance of his work begun in them by our ministry, and what manner of entrance in we had among them; concluded with expostulation, how injuriously our brethren had dealt with us, by dissuading all from hearing us, and hindering, as much as in them lay, the farther course of our ministry. Clark (another Shaw) denied the fact. I appealed to Simpson, who had confessed to me, that he had dissuaded such and such per-

sons from either hearing or seeing me. Our brother Hodges next began talking at random against peace, and joy, and love, as if they were any marks of faith. He had much of them before he had any faith at all, that is, any stillness. The women stopped his mouth. Many bore their testimony to the truth of our doctrine, and that the Moravians, since Peter Böhler, had added nothing to us. In singing and prayer my spirit revived. We praised the Lord with supernatural joy, and magnified his name together.

Tues., April 15th. I received the following letters :—

“My friend in Christ,—I cannot help letting you know that the Lord carries on the work he began in me. He has showed me you are a Minister of his own sending. He hath taken the scales from my eyes. I was lame ; he has made me walk : I was bound as with chains of darkness ; he has burst my bonds in sunder. He has plucked me as a brand out of hell ; and shall I dare to hide this ? Shall I not declare what he hath done for my soul ? I am not ashamed to say, I sat by the way-side begging, and, as Jesus passed by, I received my sight. I am not afraid to say, a servant of Christ uncovered the roof, and Jesus saw me brought unto him, poor and helpless. He looked on me, and said, ‘Thy sins are forgiven thee ; thy faith hath made thee whole.’

“O, this small grain of faith is of matchless value ! ‘Thy sins are forgiven thee !’ O, that word was Christ ! Christ was the word that spoke it. Behold a miracle indeed ! A greater one than if a dead body had been raised out of the earth. I was dead in sin, and Jesus raised me. He brought me from the pit of hell into the kingdom of light. Flesh and blood could not have revealed this, but the Spirit of God, which dwelleth in me. O, Jesus ! make this light a continuing spring of life !

“The Lord confirmed the word you delivered on Friday, concerning Satan’s devices. He regards the low estate of his handmaid. I have some strivings ; but he that keepeth me neither slumbers nor sleeps. I lean on him. I am as a new-born babe. He gently leads me. My Lord has brought me into his banqueting-house, and his banner over me is love. That the Lord may bless your ministry, and that there may never be wanting a constant supply of

faithful labourers, is the most earnest prayer of yours in Christ,
E. BRISTOW."

"Sir,—I beg leave to ask your opinion about my state. I do not doubt myself; for, through the grace given me, I am confident God for Christ's sake hath forgiven and made me free. But it has been questioned by a believer, whether I have received faith or not.

"I was brought up an heathen in a D.D.'s house. After that I went to the Lord's table, and then thought myself a good Christian. But, blessed be God, I now see that I was an abominable Pharisee. For my pride, God cast me out of his house, and I fell into the foulest crimes I could commit.

"After some time, I had a sight of my damnable estate, and that I was nothing but sin. I daily dreaded God's vengeance. I durst not offer to pray, knowing my prayer was an abomination to that God who is of purer eyes than to behold iniquity. I could not think it possible there should be forgiveness for me.

'I had my punishment in view;
I felt a thousand hells my due.'

"I went twice to hear Mr. Whitefield, but thought it did not signify. My misery still increased. But it pleased God, the last time you, his faithful Minister, preached at Kennington, from 2 Cor. vi. 9, my blessed Saviour was revealed in me, in so glorious a manner, that I rather thought myself in heaven than upon earth. I thought I could meet death with boldness. I was ready to cry out to every one, 'O taste and see how good the Lord is!' I would not for a thousand worlds be in my former state again.

"May God prolong your life and health in his service and kingdom!"

I dined at Mr. Crouch's, with M. Seaton. Young West came in. I asked him abruptly, "Should you be as glad to see me at your house now as before I left London?" He was honest not to answer in the affirmative.

Our brethren have set themselves to take off all our authority with our friends, even before they knew we should not come in to their notions. It was best to make all sure, for fear we should not call them Rabbi. West

would not believe they had warned any against hearing us, till M. Seaton declared, they had absolutely forbid her running after my brother, and gave this reason, "He owned to us that he had not the Spirit of God : why, then, should you go to hear him?" Which shall I most admire? his simplicity in making such a confession, or their baseness in making such an use of it?

From our Lord's temptation I reasoned, that our being immediately tempted, is no proof of our not being baptized with the Holy Ghost ; that the devil's questioning our sonship is no disproof of it ; that we may be in heaviness through manifold temptations, and yet have faith ; that we are not to tempt God, by neglecting the use of means, &c. The words reached many hearts ; particularly Mrs. West's.

Wed., April 16th. I breakfasted with two sisters, who, I think, from their own relation, were justified on Sunday last. I hear of fresh seals at all the times of conference. I went to Deptford with Mrs. E. Bray had lately been with her, and tried to bring her into confusion, telling her, if she still heard me, she never could be justified ; but would have all her work to begin again. Simpson, too, draws away all he can, bidding them go to Molther, or they cannot come to Christ.

Their behaviour is all of a piece, and perfectly consistent with that charitable assertion of J. Bray's, "that it is impossible for any one to be a true Christian out of the Moravian church."

I expounded with great enlargement at a Society in Whitechapel. Some were deeply wounded. I lose count of them that are cured. Let God have all the glory. I met the Society at the Foundery ; recommended true stillness *in* the use of means ; sang, prayed, and exhorted with much freedom and love, till Mr. Simpson declared against the sacrament, and asserted that no unjustified person ought to receive it ; for if he did, he ate and drank his own damnation. I replied, it was not fitting for *us* to dispute there. I would leave him to speak what he thought good to the Society. I retired, but returned unseen, that I might undo any mischief he might occasion. A few of the women cried, "Let him go : we will hear Mr. Simpson." Poor Mrs. Hamilton extolled him for contradicting me, and protested

against those who had snatched her as a brand out of the fire. The far greater part were filled with grief and love.

After Mr. Simpson had spoke all he had to say, I appeared, and concluded with the hymn on the means of grace. In conference I heard of more who have tasted the word of life by our ministry.

I expounded in Rotherhithe. The people are quite untamed ; but there was power among us, which drove out several. At Wapping I preached the pure Gospel from the woman washing her Saviour's feet. Many joined their tears with hers.

At Mr. Mason's I found an old believer, who had never been taught by Molther. I met M. Macune, who is now wholly perverted, our brethren would judge ; and wants unsettling and confounding, as much as if she had never heard the new Gospel of stillness.

I was informed that our brother Parker and Fish had been in quest of me. How applicable the scripture I last expounded !—"They all lie in wait ; they hunt every man his brother with a net. The best of them is as a brier, the most upright is sharper than a thorn-hedge. Trust ye not in a friend, put ye not confidence in a guide." (Micah vii.)

Sun., April 20th. God confirmed his word, "If we confess our sins [unto God], he is faithful to forgive us our sins," &c. And while he does so, let who will despise prophesyings.

I preached at the Marshalsea forgiveness by Christ Jesus, from Acts xiii. 38. Thence M. Sparrow carried me to Kennington-Common, where I divided the word of truth to upward of seven thousand hearers. At the Foundery I discoursed on Lazarus raised. The sons of Belial blasphemed. I invited them, till they were quiet as lambs. Then I strongly recommended the use of means from those words, "Take ye away the stone ;" and showed the weakness of faith from those words, "He that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot." The word came with divine evidence. We rode on triumphantly. M. Sparrow thankfully acknowledged she was now delivered out of the snare of stillness which they had laid for her. M. Macune was very full of what they call *animal spirits* !

I was greatly refreshed in the Society, who are all of

one heart, and of one mind. Two orders were now agreed upon : 1. That no order shall be valid, unless the Minister be present at the making of it. 2. That whosoever denies the ordinances to be commands, shall be expelled the Society.

Tues., April 22d. I met Molther at M. Ibison's. He expressly denies that grace, or the Spirit, is transmitted through the means, particularly through the sacrament. This, he insists, is no command ; is for believers only, that is, for such as *are* sanctified, have Christ fully formed in their hearts. Faith, he teaches, is inconsistent with any following doubt, or selfish thought. Forgiveness, and the witness of the Spirit, the indwelling, the seal, are *always* given *together*. Faith, in *this* sense, is a pre-requisite of baptism. That is, the candidate must have received the Holy Ghost, must have Christ living in him, must be justified, and sanctified, must be born of God,—*in order* to—his being born of God.

He mentioned it as a sign of my carnal state, that I complained of our brethren for withdrawing the people's love from me and my brother. I answered, "So did St. Paul on the like occasion. 'They zealously affect you, but not well ; yea, they would exclude *us*, that ye might affect *them*.' If I desired their love for my own sake, it was wrong and carnal ; if for theirs, it was right and apostolical."

I dined at Islington with Mr. Wild and others, who cannot yet be prevailed upon to throw away either their weak faith, or the ordinances. They pressed me much to expound. I answered, "When Mr. Stonehouse, whom they ought still to reverence, desired it, then I would."

At Crouch's Society many were wounded. I left among them the hymn entitled, "The Means of Grace," which I have printed as an antidote to stillness.*

I found my brother at the Foundery, and praised God for his seasonable return. Mr. Simpson, &c., had sent for him, to stop my "preaching up the ordinances."

* The hymn which is here mentioned was afterwards divided into two, both of which are inserted in the Wesleyan Collection. They begin,—

"Long have I seem'd to serve thee, Lord."

"Still for thy lovingkindness, Lord."

—EDIT.

I attended my brother to Fetter-lane. The first hour passed in dumb show, as usual; the next in trifles not worth naming. John Bray, who seems to be a pillar, if not the main one, expelled one brother, and reproved me for not attending my band. We parted as we met, with little of singing, less of prayer, and nothing of love. However, they carried their point, which was to divert my brother from speaking.

Thur., April 24th. My brother spoke after my own heart. His text, "Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die." Simpson and other disputers heard him describe that wilderness-state. They will not now say that my brother and I preach different Gospels.

To the Society he demonstrated the ordinances to be both means of grace, and commands of God. His power rested on us. None opened their mouth against the truth. We trust the little flock, who were following their new leaders into ruin, will now, through grace, come back again.

Fri., April 25th. I had a conference with Molther and our still brethren, but could come to no agreement. They contend for the impossibility of doubting after justification, and an absolute liberty from the means of grace, as we falsely call them, when they are neither means nor commands. We could not consent to say nothing; and so parted. I talked in the evening with James Hutton, concerning the division which must soon ensue. I asked, "Have you the witness in yourself?" "No." "How then can you have faith?" "I have it not in the full proper sense: but I am in no fear. I have the full assurance of hope; and know my Saviour will give it me."

This, in my opinion, is giving up the point. Here is a lower faith, where the abiding, indwelling Spirit is *not yet*. And I see no necessity of denying the imperfect faith, in order to gain the perfect.

I sent a friend at Bristol the following account:—"My brother came most critically. The snare, we trust, will now be broken, and many simple souls delivered. Many here insist that a part of their Christian calling is liberty *from* obeying, not liberty *to* obey. The unjustified, say

they, are *to be still* ; that is, not to search the Scriptures, not to pray, not to communicate, not to do good, not to endeavour, not to desire ; for it is impossible to use means without trusting in them. Their practice is agreeable to their principles. Lazy and proud themselves, bitter and censorious toward others, they trample upon the ordinances, and despise the commands, of Christ. I see no middle point wherein we can meet."

Sat., April 26th. I received a most insolent letter from Ridley, threatening my downfal and destruction !

Sun., April 27th. I heard my brother preach at the Common, to a multitude of ten thousand. The still brethren at the love-feast were kept down.

Mon., April 28th. Brother Ibison declared his having found peace through my ministry. Likewise my sister Hall gave me reason to hope she is accepted in the Beloved.

Wed., April 30th. At Fetter-lane I read Ridley's letter. James strove to palliate it. Ridley himself justified it. They fell upon me about the women reading *their* rule for the exclusion of the brethren. We answered, "Whence had you your authority over them ? We will save you any farther trouble, and do now take them out of your hands." They would fain have kept them still. I insisted that they should not. Much dispute ensued. The question about the ordinances was debated. My brother exhorted to love, in vain. We left them daunted and overawed, having rescued our lambs out of their hands.

Thur., May 1st. I met S. Soan's band, full of love, and longing for the Lord's appearing. I conferred with more, who were lately justified. I visited a sick man, just sent forth out of the pit by the blood of the covenant.

Fri., May 2d. I prayed at Islington with Anne Gates, believing we had the petitions we asked. I then baptized a child and her. We all felt the descent of the Holy Ghost. Before, she was in the spirit of heaviness and bondage. The moment the water touched her, she declares she felt her load removed, and sensibly received forgiveness. Sorrow and sighing fled away. The Spirit bore witness with the water, and she longed to be with Christ. We gave glory to God, who so magnified his ordinance.

I began observing the weekly church-fast with a few at

the Foundery. I rebuked one of the bands, who was fallen asleep. Instead of spending the Sunday in carnal ordinances, she passed it partly in idleness, partly in her common business. For what signified her endeavours to keep the commandments before she had faith?

I preached the Gospel at Wapping to the poor. Their groans and tears testified their inward affection.

I received the following simple letter. Let our brethren of Fetter-lane answer it.

“My Rev. Father in Christ,—My heart being now open before God, I write as in his presence.

“The first gift of faith I received after I had seen myself a lost sinner, bound with a thousand chains, and dropping into hell. Then I heard his voice, ‘Be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee;’ and could say, ‘The Son of God loved me, and gave himself for me.’ I thought I saw him at the right hand of his Father, making intercession for me. I went on in great joy for four months. Then pride crept in, and I thought the work was finished, when it was but just begun. There I rested, and in a little time fell into doubts and fears, whether my sins were really forgiven me, till I plunged myself into the depth of misery. I could not pray; neither had I any desire to do it, or to read, or hear the word. My soul was like the troubled sea. Then did I see my own evil heart, my cursed, devilish nature, and feel my helplessness, that I could not so much as think a good thought. My love was turned into hatred, passion, envy; and

‘I felt a thousand hells my due.’

and cried out in bitter anguish of spirit, ‘Save, Lord, or I perish.’

“In my last extremity, I saw my Saviour full of grace and truth for me; and heard his voice again whispering, ‘Peace, be still.’ My peace returned, and greater sweetness of love than I ever knew before.

“Now my joy is calm and solid; my heart drawn out to the Lord continually. I know that my Redeemer liveth for me. He is my strength and my rock, and will carry on his work in my soul, to the day of redemption.

“Dear Sir, I have spoke the state of my heart, as before the Lord. I beg your prayers, that I may go on from

strength to strength, from conquering to conquer, till death is swallowed up in victory.

“GRACE MURRAY.”*

Sat., May 3d. My spirit revived at the sight of the scoffers in the Foundery. I was directed to Heb. xii. 18 : “For ye are not come to the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness,” &c. God put strong words in my mouth, and in battles of shaking did he fight with them. The effect was both seen and heard : therefore would our still brethren say it had no effect at all.

Sun., May 4th. I dwelt on that word, “Thou art a God that hidest thyself, O God of Israel the Saviour ;” and spoke, with much liberty and power, of the wilderness-state, and the means of grace.

After sermon I was accosted by Howel Harris, whom God sent to my assistance. He had first called on James Hutton, who directed him to go hear Viney preach. But he blundered to the Foundery. “His conscience in the Holy Ghost,” he said, “bore witness to the truth I spoke, and he found his heart immediately knit to me.” We took sweet counsel together, and went to the altar of God as friends.

In the evening I opened the book on, “And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.” He who sent was with me, in his promised power. The fire was kindled in many hearts. Ascribe unto the Lord the honour due unto his name.

I carried Howel to the bands. He spoke in simplicity concerning Satan’s devices, and repeated the very words which the tempter has so often spoke to us by the mouth of our still brethren. All his arguments touching “false joy, animal spirits, presumption,” &c., had been tried upon our brother, to make him let go his shield.

Mon., May 5th. I carried him to S. Anderson’s, to whom he spoke in words which man’s wisdom doth not teach. The Spirit of love and supplication was poured out. There was as in us all one soul.

* To this lady Mr. John Wesley afterwards made an offer of marriage. She was prevailed upon, by Mr. Charles Wesley, to marry John Bennet, one of the Itinerant Preachers.—EDIT.

We met the bands at five. I bear them witness that their love abounds yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment.

I preached from John iii. The word made great havoc. They cried out on all sides, and fell down under it. I spoke afterwards to two or three of them. In the same hour God had made them sore, and bound them up ; he had wounded, and his hands made them whole.

Tues., May 6th. In the hours of conference Eliz. Holmes informed me, she had been filled with the Spirit of love while we were praying at S. Anderson's. Cordelia Critchet, a Papist till convinced by us, appeared not far from the kingdom of heaven. I want time to take a particular account of them who are daily convinced of sin or of righteousness. Our brethren, I bless God, are mistaken in saying He no longer works by our hands.

I heard Howel Harris expound at Crouch's. He is indeed a son of thunder and of consolation.

God put it into our hearts to pray for the poor malefactors, passing to execution : and his Spirit made intercession. I am sure (how much more the rest of us !) that our prayer was heard, and answered, upon some of our dying brethren.

At eleven Cordelia Critchet came to let me know she received the atonement yesterday, while we were at prayers. The work, as far as I can yet discern, is real.

Another, who, after justification, had fallen into gross sin, informs me, God has again received him to his mercy in Christ Jesus. His deep humility and abundant love are good evidences for him.

Lucy Spring, who, on Monday night, fell into the pangs of the new birth, came to-day, full of peace and comfort.

Howel Harris, whom I carried to the still bands, delivered a full and noble testimony, that "he had been drawn to the sacrament while dead in sin, and received forgiveness there ; *afterwards* the love of God was shed abroad in his heart by the Holy Ghost, then given him. From *thence* commenced the fight of faith. Fears, doubts, darkness returned ; and he was brought through fire and water into a wealthy place."

His words were contradictory to all our still brethren

have been teaching this half year. They were scandalized and confounded ; the weak comforted. Much caviling followed. Howel, be sure, had no faith. Bray attempted to explain away what he said ; Bell and Oxley to confute it : the latter compared him to Cain, when God lightened his burden, upon his complaining it was too heavy for him to bear. All agreed that he had not seen his heart ; and because he had some strivings, had no faith. I invited them to hear more of him on Thursday evening.

Thur., May 8th. He declared his experience before our Society. O what a flame was kindled ! Never man spake, in my hearing, as this man spake. What a nursing-father has God sent us ! He has indeed learned of the good Shepherd to carry the lambs in his bosom. Such love, such power, such simplicity was irresistible. The lambs dropped down on all sides into their shepherd's arms. Those words broke out like thunder, "I now find a commission from God to invite all poor sinners, justified or unjustified, to his altar ; and I would not for ten thousand worlds be the man that should keep any from it. There I first found Him myself. That is the place of meeting." He went on in the power of the Most Highest. God called forth his witnesses. Several declared they had found Christ *in* the ordinances.

Poor Simpson stood by, hardening his heart. I suppose now he will call Howel, as he does my brother, "a subtle deceiver of the people." Scarce any from Fetter-lane were present : too good care had been taken to prevent them.

Fri., May 9th. I went to Islington, intending to baptize Bridget Armstead. Satan hindered, by *his* Churchwardens. But can any one forbid water ? Not unless they can dry up the Thames.

In conference Mrs. Dupee informed me, she had received forgiveness last week while I was preaching it. Is His hand shortened at all, that he cannot save ? Or, because we are weak, hath He no power to deliver ?

I met about one hundred of the Society to keep the fast. Christ owned *his* ordinance, and melted us into prayer, through his Spirit helping our infirmities.

I went to give the sacrament to a dying woman. I found her an old, subtle Pharisee. I could have no access

in speaking, and betook myself to prayer. The sin-convincing Spirit came mightily upon her, so that she roared for the very disquietness of her heart. The strong man who had peaceably kept his palace for above seventy years, was now disturbed, tormented, bound, cast out. She broke forth into strong cryings, and, soon after, into blessings and thanksgivings. As far as I can discern, she is quite delivered. We showed forth our Lord's death, and he was with us of a truth.

Sat., May 10th. I spoke closely to those who trusted to their faith of adherence, and insisted on that *lowest mark* of Christianity, forgiveness of sins.

My back was scarcely turned, when Oxley took his opportunity to draw away Howel Harris to deaf Bell's. I came time enough to break off their conference with my unwary friend. He now, without distrusting God, resolves to go nowhere without me. Two are better than one. Their word doth eat as a canker; especially Oxley's, whom we have cherished in our bosom. God help me to love *him*! I abhor both his principles and practices.

At Bowers's Society I found Bell, Bray, Hutton, Oxley, Holland, Ridley, and others of the same class. I withstood them to the face, and appealed to the God that answereth by fire, for the truth of my doctrine, that the ordinances bind all, both justified and unjustified. A woman testified, that the last time I expounded here, and bade them who had been confounded ask Jesus Christ *alone* whether they had faith, she did ask in our prayer, and immediately the love of God overflowed her heart.

I preached at the Foundery on 1 John ii. 12: "I write unto you, little children," &c. Hence I showed the three particulars which difference a child from a young man. The young man is *strong*; the child *weak*: the young man *hath* overcome the wicked one; the child is *overcoming* him: in the young man the word of God *abideth*; that is, he hath the *constant* witness of the Spirit.

In the Society Howel spoke excellently of good works, searching the Scripture, and loving one another.

Sun., May 11th. I met the women Leaders for the first time; and, after a lively prayer, led them to the Lord's table at St. Paul's.

I went forth to Kennington-Common. The hand of the Lord was upon me, and I prophesied, "O ye dry bones, hear the word of the Lord." Truly there were very many in the open valley, and lo, they were very dry. But as I prophesied there was a noise, and, behold, a shaking, which we both saw and heard. Into some, I am confident, the breath came, and they lived.

Mon., May 12th. I employed three hours most profitably in conferring with the poor people ; more of whom daily receive forgiveness, or the witness of the Spirit. Three or four were now set at liberty, in immediate answer to prayer.

I was with Miss Branford ; who has been in darkness ever since her eyes were first opened (two years ago, at St. Helen's) to see her sins forgiven. In prayer, the love of God was now shed abroad in her heart, and she was translated into his marvellous light.

An aged gentlewoman here testified that she had long denied that article of her creed, "forgiveness of sins," but was yesterday experimentally convinced of it, under Mr. Hall's ministry. Others I meet with, who have passed from death unto life, in hearing our brother Whitefield. Our brethren of Fetter-lane deny the fact, that any soul has been justified by our ministry, since "no one gives what he has not himself."

Tues., May 13th. Sarah Redford, justified under the word last Sunday, Mary Barraby and Anne Broad, a few days ago, and others, were with me to-day, testifying the work of God in their souls.

Mrs. Ricard told me at S. Witham's, that in the depth of despair Christ had given her rest ; but Satan came in with the still brethren, and gained such advantage over her, that she even denied the faith, and its Author. Our Lord again confirmed his love to her, through a worm, the very scorn of men, and outcast of the still ones.

I met the men Leaders at Bray's, and was surprised to find above twenty of the still brethren there ; and more, to hear they constantly meet on Thursday and Sunday, while I am preaching at the Foundery. The reason is obvious.

I bore my testimony for the ordinances and weak faith. Asked whether they did not hold, 1. That the means of grace are neither commands nor means : 2. That forgive-

ness is never given but together with the abiding witness of the Spirit? James Hutton would not have them give me any answer. I said, if they durst not avow their principles, I should take their silence for confession, and warn God's people against them.

Wed., May 14th. I talked with a woman to whom Jesus lately appeared, but immediately vanished out of her sight. Never did I see a soul more inconsolable. Esther Owen was with me, pierced, melted, overpowered with love.

At Blackheath I preached redemption in the blood of Jesus. He gave me power "to sound the unbelieving heart." A woman screamed out so loud that I could not be heard; and therefore had her removed, but not out of hearing. To the scoffers I spoke with much contention. Many were driven off, and others constrained to stay. I am sure the word did not return void.

I found Mr. Hall at Fetter-lane, asking them, whether they would try their spirits by the word, or the word by their spirits. I enforced the question, which they strove to evade. Rabbi Hutton forbade their answering me. I warned the few remaining brethren to beware of the leaven of stillness; showed them the delusion of those who had cast off the ordinances, and confined the faith to *themselves only*; I foretold the dreadful consequences of their enthusiasm; set the case of Gregor before their eyes; besought, entreated, conjured them not to renounce the means, or deny the Lord that bought them; read a letter from one who had been strongly tempted to leave off the sacrament, but, in receiving, powerfully convinced that her dissuader was the devil. Hodges, Hall, and Howel Harris confirmed my words. Others were hereby emboldened to bear their testimony to the divine ordinances. By the strength of the Lord we have stood between the living and the dead; and the plague, we trust, is stayed.

Poor James was all tergiversation. O how unlike himself! The honest, plain, undesigning Jacob, is now turned a subtle, close, ambiguous Loyola. Bell was more frank, and I therefore put him upon speaking. He expressly denied the sacrament to the unjustified; that is, in effect, to all but Molther, M. Eusters, and himself; for these three are all the church Christ has in England.

I mentioned Simpson's advice to M. Seaton, that if she would but leave off the sacrament, prayer, and reading the Scriptures, for *one week*, she should then find what she never found before in her life. He justified his advising her, and several others, to lay aside their Bibles, *because they trusted in them*. The rest abated somewhat of their stiffness, and much pressed me "to preach Christ the foundation;" meaning, that I should not recommend the ordinances, but let them trample on them undisturbed. I did not say that I *understood* them.

Ascension-day, May 15th. I preached from Rom. viii. 33, 34. Great power accompanied the word; but greater still, while I exhorted the Society to wait for the promise of the Father. Many cried out in the birth-pangs. After a long and violent struggle, Eleanor Tubbs testified that God had now showed her her heart, and broke it in pieces, and bound it up.

Sarah Church informed me she had received forgiveness the night Mr. Simpson expounded at Rag-fair; not under his preaching, which was quite dead to her, but in singing an hymn which I gave out. So did Anne Roberts, after hearing the word, in the same carnal ordinance of singing.

Mary Shrievely, who has been groaning under the burden of sin from the time she first heard me preach, was last night relieved by the coming of Jesus, and now goes on her way rejoicing. Jane Bourn also informs me that she received forgiveness in the Society, and was sprinkled from her idols.

Fri., May 16th. Almost the whole Society met at one. A spirit of contrition ran through all.

I received the following letter:—

"My Friend,—I hear there are divisions among you; for some say, 'I am of Wesley;' and others, 'I am of Molther;' but I say, I am of Christ; and what he bids me do, I will do, and not trust in any man.

"Here some will say, 'What Christ bids you do, is, to believe and be still.' True; but does he bid me do nothing else? He bids me let my light so shine before men, that they may see my good works, and glorify my Father which is in heaven.

"He likewise says, 'The scribes and Pharisees sit in

Moses's chair : all therefore whatsoever *they bid you* observe, that observe and do.' But how can I know what they bid me do, except I go to hear them ?

"Again : Christ bids me observe all things which he commands the Apostles ; and with such He will be to the end of the world. But if I do not observe and do his commands, he will not be with *me*.

"He bids me 'do this in remembrance of Him.' Now, if any man can prove this is not a command, I will obey it no longer. 'But whosoever breaketh one of these least commandments, and teacheth men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven.'

"As to stillness, our Saviour saith, 'The kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force ;' and, 'Strive to enter in at the strait gate.' And St. Paul saith, 'Work out your salvation with fear and trembling.' And, 'God is a rewarder of them that *diligently seek him*.' Now these scriptures imply somewhat more than barely sitting still.

"Some deny that there are any means of grace : but I will be thankful for them ; since it was in them I first heard you preach faith in Christ ; and had I not been there, I might have been without faith unto this day.

"One told me, when you preached you had nature in your face. So will every one have, who speaks with zeal ; but no matter for that, if he has but grace in his heart. My friend, there are many teachers, but few fathers ; but you are my father, who begot me by the Gospel, and, I trust, many more.

"May the Lord lead you into all truth !"

Sat., May 17th. I expounded the chapter in course, Isaiah liii. One could not bear my enlarging on that, "The Lord hath laid on Him the iniquity of us ALL ;" but often interrupted me with, "Stop his mouth." Alas ! thought I, if meekness be the mark of the elect, I fear thou art still a reprobate.

I dined at Mr. Williams's. His wife had formerly found favour with God under the word ; but Satan reasoned her out of it. After our praying, she said she had an answer in herself at every word. All doubt and unbelief fled away, and she clearly saw *her* interest in the Saviour of all men.

Sun., May 18th. I preached to near ten thousand at the Common, from 1 Cor. vi. 9, &c. The Lord was with us in his convincing power. I *would* give Him the glory.

Mon., May 19th. Our brethren complain, that we unjustly charge them with speaking against the ordinances. Yet they teach, that your using them *before* faith, *necessarily* keeps you out of it; and your using them *after* faith, necessarily makes you lose it. Particularly when you find comfort, by no means offer to pray, they say: if you pray then, you will forfeit it immediately.

Ridley is famous for saying, "You may as well go to hell in praying as in thieving." Mr. Brown's words are, "If we read, the devil reads with us; if we pray, he prays with us; if we go to church or sacrament, he goes with us."

In the time of conference Mary Benham declared her faith, which she has lately received. Anne Judge found power to believe under the word last Monday; Thomas Boreman, while we were at prayers.

While I expounded the woman of Samaria, the word reached many hearts, particularly Mrs. Ash the Quaker's, a great enemy to crying out. However, she could not now forbear; for the love of Christ constrained her. Jesus had said, "I that speak unto thee am He!" Her sister appeared under strong convictions at the sight of her. O that the flame might spread throughout all the earth!

Tues., May 20th. Poor desperate John Dickenson received the word of reconciliation, Isaiah liv.: "For a small moment have I forsaken thee, but with great mercies will I gather thee," &c. After having been long afflicted, tossed with tempests, and not comforted, in this hour he found rest to his soul.

At eleven, Eliz. Bird testified her having lately felt the atoning blood; as likewise Astrea Edzard and Thomas Haddock; all by the ministry of the word. Mary Wotlen, too, can set to her seal, that God is true. I found S. Sutherland strong in the Lord. Several others were present, whom I took knowledge of, that they have been with Jesus.

I went with Maxfield to Bray's, as a fool to the correction of the stocks. I laboured for peace: but only the Almighty can root out those cursed tares of pride, contempt,

and self-sufficiency, with which our Moravianized brethren are overrun.

Wed., May 21st. I carried Bridget Armstead to Bloomsbury church, where the Minister baptized her. She had been bred a Quaker. I was one of the witnesses. We were all in great heaviness before ; but perceived that Christ was with us always in his ordinances. The Spirit infallibly bears witness on this occasion. Our youngest sister assuredly knows that she is born of water and of the Spirit.

Thur., May 22d. I found our dear brother Ingham at M. West's. The holiday mob was very outrageous at the Foundery. God filled my mouth with threatenings and promises. Both, I believe, took place ; for at last we got the victory, and the fiercest rioters were overawed into silence.

The day of Pentecost, May 25th. I discoursed on the first pouring out of the Spirit. (Acts ii.) He gave me utterance. Many felt his descent in an invisible power ; and even trembled at his presence.

At the Common I again declared *the promise* to many thousands. At the love-feast I was overwhelmed with the burden of our brethren, with such visible signs of dejection, that several, I was since informed, were in great hopes that I was now coming down in my pride, or unsettling, and coming into confusion. Indeed, my faith did well nigh fail me : for in spite of the seeming reconciliation which brother Ingham *forces* them into, it is impossible we should ever be of one mind, unless they were convinced of their abrogating the law of *Christian* ordinances, and taking away the children's bread.

Mon., May 26th. A woman from Islington complained to me, that she had brought Mr. Stonehouse to her mother, who lay a-dying, but waiting for redemption. Her Minister told her, "it signified nothing to pray either publicly or privately. Reading the Scriptures, or taking the sacrament, were equally useless. These outward things must all be laid aside. She had nothing to do but to be still." He refused to pray by her, and *so* left her.

The work of grace goes on in several that were with me to-day ; and God still gives fresh seals to my ministry.

Tues., May 27th. I rejoiced to find no difference betwixt my brother Ingham and me. He has honestly withstood

the deluded brethren ; contradicted their favourite errors, and constrained them to be *still*. That blot he easily hit : “ You say no man must speak of what he has not experienced : you, Oxley and Simpson, say, that one in Gospel-liberty can have no stirrings of sin.” “ Yes.” “ Are you in Gospel-liberty ?” “ No.” “ Then out of your own mouth I judge you : you speak of the things which you know not of.”

I expounded in Snowsfield, and met the bands at the Foundry. An extraordinary power overshadowed us. S. Hunting received the witness in herself ; R. R. was even lost in love.

Wed., May 28th. At Blackheath I discoursed from Matt. xxi. : “ He that falleth on this stone shall be broken,” &c. There were a multitude of scoffers, but all forced to fly before the sword of the Spirit.

I talked once more with our wild brethren, and laboured heartily for peace and union. But it cannot be, while they are so full of bitter, proud contempt of all except themselves.

Thur., May 29th. I expounded Isai. lvii., a chapter most contradictory to the doctrine of our brethren. I dined at friend Keen’s, a Quaker and a Christian ; and read George Whitefield’s account of God’s dealings with him. The love and esteem he expresses for me, filled me with confusion, and brought back my fear, lest, after having preached to others, I should be myself a cast-away.

At Marybone the scoffers fulfilled the scripture I explained : “ The wicked are like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt.” I addressed myself to one of them after another, and silenced them on whatever side I turned. Sometimes a stray coach would stop : but my doctrine did not suit them. Our Lord vouchsafed us much of his presence at the Society. We find him daily uncovering our hearts, casting down imaginations, and bringing every thought into captivity. The souls of many were smitten asunder as with a sword ; and I am sure, if God wounds, he will bind up again.

Fri., May 30th. I had yet another conference, but could not convince our dear brother Simpson. He cannot allow there are more than four Christians in London, which are

Molther, M. Eusters, Wheeler's maid, and Bell. Of the last he roundly affirms, that he is holier than Moses, the meekest of men ; than Abraham, the friend of God ; than David, the man after God's own heart ; than Elijah and Enoch, who walked with God, and were translated. As to our father Abraham, he denies him to have had any right faith at all.

Sat., May 31st. I took sweet counsel with Benjamin Ingham, and Howel Harris. A threefold cord cannot easily be broken.

I heard that the Foundery was lately presented at Hicks's Hall, for a seditious assembly. Sir John Gunson interposed, and objected, that no persons were named in the presentment. Upon this they presented Charles Wesley, Clerk, J. Hutton, bookseller, Timothy Lewis, printer, and Howel Harris, *alias* the Welsh Apostle. But our friend Sir John quashed the whole.

Sun., June 1st. I was much refreshed in spirit among the women bands. They have rest, and walk in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, and are edified.

Mon., June 2d. I *preached up* the ordinances, as they call it, from Isai. lviii. ; but first with the Prophet I preached them *down*. Telchig, Ingham, &c., were present, which made me use greater plainness, that they might set me right, if I mistook.

I talked with several in whom the work of conversion is effectually begun ; particularly Mary Russel, convinced and deeply wounded by my last discourse at Kennington ; Mary Peck, whom God showed her heart in singing ; Sarah Redford, to whom faith lately came by hearing ; and Mary Litchfield, who, by all I can yet discern, was justified the last time I preached at Blackheath.

I preached on Job xxiii. 8, I would hope, to the comfort of many, whose hearts God is directing into the love of Christ, and into the patient waiting for him.

Tues., June 3d. I met with Amos Comenius's moving exhortation of the Bohemian churches to the Church of England. O that we might see, at least in this our day ! Who knows but *our* eyes may behold "the last surviving Bishop of the Church of England !"

Wed., June 4th. I preached at Marybone on, "What

must I do to be saved?" The opposers had threatened me hard ; but all they now could do was to curse and swear. I only *invited* them to Christ. But I am more and more persuaded, that the law has its use, and Moses must bring us to Christ. The promises to the unawakened are pearls before swine. First the hammer must break the rocks ; then we *may* preach Christ crucified.

Thur., June 5th. My brother returned from Bristol.

Fri., June 6th. I spoke with Billah Aspernel, who had lately been with me in the depth of mourning. A still brother had been troubling her, and deterring from the word and sacrament. Last night it pleased our Lord to lift up her head above all her enemies. He spoke to her in the word, and she had joy again, and her joy shall no man take from her.

Martin Chow and Margaret Martin at the same time found the power of the Lord present to heal them ; as did Eleanor Gambal the Thursday before.

I went with my brother, and Howel Harris, and J. Purdy, to see Molther, at Islington. I wished George Stonehouse joy of his good bargain ; and left him to justify to my brother the selling of his living. I half persuaded a Dissenter out of her faith of adherence.

I explained the progress of grace by our Lord's comparison of the grain of mustard-seed, and the little leaven.

Sat., June 7th. I recommended the woman of Canaan as a pattern of triumphant importunity. It is plain she had not heard of the doctrine of stillness.

Mon., June 9th. I dined at Mr. Wild's, in Islington, and rejoiced over a few *unperverted* souls. The shepherd, alas, is smitten, and the sheep are scattered ; but not all. God has left himself a very small remnant.

Tues., June 10th. I rode with Maxfield to Bexley, and was greatly comforted with my brother Piers. The weak stand when the strong fall. In spite of all the *still* ones, he had held fast the truth, neither forsaking the ordinances, nor denying his *weak* faith.

I went thence to Blendon : no longer Blendon to me. They could hardly force themselves to be barely civil. I took an hasty leave, and with an heavy heart, weighed down by their ingratitude, returned to Bexley.

Here I preached the Gospel to a little flock, among whom the grievous wolves are not entered.

Wed., June 11th. I was constrained to bear my testimony for the last time at Blendon. Maxfield accompanied me. I desired to speak with Mrs. Delamotte alone. She did not well know how to refuse, and walked with me into the hall. I began, "Three years ago God sent me to call you from the form to the power of godliness. I told you what true religion was, a new birth, a participation of the divine nature. The way to this I did not know myself till a year after. Then I showed it to you, preaching Jesus Christ, and faith in his blood. You know how you treated me; God soon after called you to a living faith by my ministry. Then you received me as an angel of God. Where is now the blessedness you spake of? Whence is this change? this jealousy, and fear, and coldness? Why are you thus impatient to hear me speak?" She offered several times to leave me; said, "She did not know what I meant; did not want to dispute," &c. "I do not come to dispute: why are you afraid of me? What have I done? You gave as a reason for not seeing me in town, that you did not care to be unsettled. Once I unsettled you through the strength of the Almighty, stirred you up from your lees, took you off your own works, and grounded you upon Christ. Other foundation than this can no man lay. I only desire to settle you more firmly upon Him, to warn you against the danger of being removed from the hope of the Gospel. Our brethren, whom now you follow, are making a schism in the church: follow them not in this." She would not bear any more, but hurried into the parlour. When I came in, Betty left it; but afterwards returned. She has not been at the sacrament for several months. I warned them against casting off the ordinances, which were divine commands, binding all, whether justified or unjustified.

They continually interrupted me, asking why I talked to them. I answered, "Because I durst not forbear, but must deliver my own soul." Betty said she had received great benefit from Molther, and should therefore hear none but him. I told her, I had nothing to say against her hearing him, unless when he spoke against the ordinances.

Upon their again and again bidding me silence, I asked, "Do you, therefore, at this time, in the presence of Jesus Christ, acquit, release, and discharge me from any farther care, concern, or regard for your souls? Do you desire I would never more speak unto you in His name?" Betty frankly answered, "Yes." Mrs. Delamotte assented by her silence. "Then here," said I, "I take my leave of you, till we meet at the judgment-seat." With these words I rendered up my charge to God.

"Then said I," after leaving them, "I have laboured in vain, I have spent my strength for nought; yet surely my judgment is with the Lord, and my work with my God." Surely this is enough to wean and make me cease from man. With Blendon I give up all expectation of gratitude upon earth. Vanity of vanities, all is vanity, even friendship itself.

I rode on softly to Eltham, cast out by my dearest friends. I pray God it may not be laid to theirs, or their seducers', charge! Pity and grief for them was uppermost in my heart; and these were much relieved by the scripture that first offered: "And Paul went down, and fell on him, and, embracing him, said, Trouble not yourselves, for his life is in him."

I returned to be exercised by our *still* brethren's contradiction. My brother proposed new-modelling the bands, and setting by themselves those few who were still for the ordinances. Great clamour was raised by this proposal. The noisy *still*-ones well knew that they had carried their point, by wearying out the sincere ones, scattered among them, one or two in a band of disputers, who had harassed and sawn them asunder; so that a remnant is scarcely left. They grudged us even this remnant, which would soon be all their own, unless immediately rescued out of their hands. Benjamin Ingham seconded us; and obtained that the names should be called over, and as many as were aggrieved put into new bands.

We gathered up our wreck,—*raros nantes in gurgite vasto*: for nine out of ten are swallowed up in the dead sea of stillness. O, why was not this done six months ago? How fatal was our delay and false moderation! "Let them alone, and they will soon be weary, and come to themselves

of course," said one,--*unus qui nobis cunctando restituet rem!* I tremble at the consequence. Will they submit themselves to every ordinance of man, who refuse subjection to the ordinances of God? I told them plainly I SHOULD ONLY CONTINUE WITH THEM SO LONG AS THEY CONTINUED IN THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND. My every word was grievous to them. I am a thorn in their sides, and they cannot bear me.

They *modestly* denied that we had any but hearsay proof of their denying the ordinances. I asked them all and every one, particularly Bray, Bell, &c., whether they would now acknowledge them to be commands or duties; whether they sinned in omitting them; whether they did not leave it to every man's fancy to use them or not; whether they did not exclude all from the Lord's table, excepting those whom *they* called believers. These questions I put too close to be evaded; though better dodgers never came out of the school of Loyola. Honest Bell and some others spoke out, and insisted upon their antichristian liberty. The rest put by their stillness, and delivered me over to Satan for a blasphemer, a very Saul, (for to him they compare me,) out of blind zeal persecuting the church of Christ.

Thur., June 12th. The power of the Lord was present in his word, both to wound and heal. The adversary roared in the midst of the congregation; for to him, and not to the God of order, do I impute those horrible outcries which almost drowned my voice, and kept back the glad tidings from sinners.

Fri., June 13th. At Wapping some so disturbed us by their outcries, that my preaching was vain. Those who cried, "Away with them," I rebuked; but wish for the sake of all, and myself also, that, if it be the will of God, this stumbling-block may be removed.

At the time of intercession, we were carried out for all mankind, especially for our own Church and nation, and the little flock which God is gathering. I prayed believing, that Satan might not destroy his work, as in the last age, by that spirit of rebellion and enthusiasm which is so visible in our deluded brethren.

Mon., June 16th. M. Sparrow carried me to Eltham, where I called to many, in King John's chapel, "Ho, every

one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." It was indeed a solemn assembly. We found God had formerly recorded his name there, and that was one place of meeting Him. Several of the assembly-ladies heard me patiently, while I showed them they were in no wise better than the harlots and publicans.

Tues., June 17th. I had an extraordinary meeting of the Society, now increased from twelve to three hundred, most of them justified ; and took my leave of them with hearty prayer.

Wed., June 18th. I set out at two for Oxford, with brother Maxfield, and a nephew I was going to prentice at Bristol. We stopped half-an-hour at brother Hodge's ; lost our way through Kensington ; baited an hour at Gerard's-cross. Three miles short of Wycombe, several people met, and asked us if we had seen an highwayman, who had shot a man on the road, not an hour ago. In a mile's riding, we found the poor man weltering in his blood. The Minister of Wycombe informed us, that he was a little behind, and heard the highwayman threaten to shoot him, if he did not deliver his money that instant. He answered, " You shall have all the money I have ; but it is not much ;" and the other, without any more words, shot him through the head.

I could not but observe the particular providence of God over us. Had we not delayed in the morning, had we not called on Hodges, had we not stopped at Gerard's-cross, we had just met the murderer.

Thur., June 19th. Hearing he was apprehended at a farrier's, his horse having cast a shoe, I went this morning to tell him, Christ died to save murderers ; but his heart was harder than the nether millstone.

By noon we came to Oxford. I called on M. Ford, and found her shut up. She besought me *not to speak* in the Society, not to make disturbances and divisions, &c. I told her, I spoke no other words than I had from the beginning ; whence then her unusual apprehensions ? Mr. Simpson's presence accounted for it. Wherever he comes, his first business is to supplant us, which he does by insinuating himself, under the appearance of our friend.

To the Society I described the stillness of the first Chris-

tians ; (Acts ii. 42 ;) who continued *in* the Apostles' doctrine, and *in* fellowship, and *in* breaking of bread, and *in* prayers.

Fri., June 20th. At the desire of some Baptists in Malmesbury, I expounded Rom. vii. ; but not at all to their satisfaction. They could not see any higher state of perfection than what is there described.

Sat., June 21st. Such an unaccountable heaviness came over me on the road, that I was forced to light and lie down for a quarter of an hour. I rose refreshed with this little sleep, and rode forward till we met a poor old man of eighty : was enabled to preach the Gospel to his heart. We left him looking up to Jesus, and went on praising God.

My first greeting in Kingswood was by one of our colliers' daughters. I then rejoiced with William Hooper and Hannah Cennick. In the evening at the Malt-room I addressed myself to those in the wilderness. O what simplicity is in this childlike people ! A spirit of contrition and love ran through them. Here the seed has fallen upon good ground.

Sun., June 22d. I went to learn Christ among our colliers, and drank into their spirit. We rejoiced for the consolation. O that our London brethren would come to school to Kingswood ! These *are* what they *pretend* to be. God knows their poverty ; but they are rich ; and daily entering into rest, without being first brought into confusion. They do not hold it necessary to deny the weak faith, in order to get the strong. Their soul truly waiteth still upon God, in the way of his ordinances. Ye many masters, come learn Christ of these outcasts ; for know, except ye be converted, and become like these little children, ye cannot enter into the kingdom of heaven.

I met several of those whom I had baptized, and found them grown in grace. Some thousands waited for me at Rose-green, to whom I expounded Ezek. xvi. And surely the Lord passed by, and said to some in their blood, "Live." I concluded the day at the men's love-feast. Peace, unity, and love are here. We did not forget our poor distracted brethren that were, till the Moravians came.

How ought I to rejoice at my deliverance out of their hands and spirit ! My soul is escaped as a bird out of the

snare of the fowler. *Abii, erupi, evasi*. And did I not love the lambs of Christ, indeed, the grievous wolves, I would see your face no more.

I am no longer a debtor of the Gospel to *you*. Me ye have fairly discharged ; but if you reject my testimony, others receive it gladly, and say, "Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord."

Tues., June 24th. I preached Christ, the way, the truth, and the life, to one thousand little children at Kingswood. At the room I proceeded in St. John. Some were present who fancy themselves elect, and therefore sink back into their old tempers. Without meddling in the dispute, I rebuked them sharply, yet in much love. I read my Journal to the bands, as an antidote to stillness.

Thur., June 26th. I saw Mrs. T—— under the buffetings of Satan, to whom she is plainly delivered over, for her pride and envy. O that she may learn hence not to blaspheme, or mimic the Spirit of God, with her imaginary experiences !

In my farther exposition of Ezek. xvi., the secrets of many hearts were revealed. When some cried out, I bade the people be quiet, that Satan might lose his end. Those noisy souls I believed sincere ; but he tormented them to make them confound the work, and hinder the word of God. Immediately, as if his device was discovered, the enemy withdrew, and the outcries ceased.

Sat., June 28th. I met the bands in Kingswood, and reproved Hannah Barrow before them all. She would not be convinced of her pride ; but was *sure* she had the witness of the Spirit, and the seal, and what not. I tremble to think what will be the end.

Sun., June 29th. I found the spirit of the colliers before I began to speak. Then my mouth was opened to declare the promise of sanctification, in Ezekiel. I gave the sacrament to about eighty colliers ; exhorted the last-baptized ; met the men-Leaders ; preached to the usual congregation at Rose-green ; and returned without strength to the Horsefair.

When I am weak, then I am strong ; and was never more enlarged, nor I think so much, as in speaking from that scripture : "Holding forth the word of life, that I

may rejoice in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain." Many in that hour found heaven begun upon earth.

Mon., June 30th. I spent a week at Oxford to little purpose but that of obedience to man for the Lord's sake. In the Hall I read my two lectures on Psalm cxxx., preaching repentance towards God and faith in Jesus Christ. But learned Gallio cared for none of these things.

Yet even in this place God did not leave himself without witnesses. He *began* to call them forth ; but where are they now ? all scattered by those refiners on Christianity who make the cross of none effect, and forbid men to remember God in *his* ways. Therefore, when I came in the name of the Lord Jesus, there was no man ; when I called them to Him, there was none to answer ; or at most a score, out of the multitude which Mr. Viney found.

Sun., July 6th. I preached at Stanton-Harcourt in the morning, at Southleigh in the afternoon ; then expounded blind Bartimeus at Mr. G.'s. The next evening I discoursed on the good Samaritan.

Tues., July 8th. I came to Malmsbury with Mr. Robson ; and the next day to Bristol. I met the Lord among his people. Brother Robson said, "It is good for me to be here ;" and that the half had not been told him of God's goodness to this little flock.

Fri., July 11th. This morning he preached on Lazarus raised, with the demonstration of the Spirit. I carried him to Kingswood : he was in love with our colliers.

Sat., July 12th. I passed the afternoon with them. They grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. We cannot be among them, and not perceive the divine presence.

Sun., July 13th. I gave the sacrament to above seventy of them, different from those who received the last time. I preached at Rose-green on the fall of man. (Gen. iii.) I dare not depart from the work, while God so strengthens me therein. We walked over the waste to the school, singing and rejoicing. It was their love-feast. Two hundred were assembled in the Spirit of Jesus. Never have I seen and *felt* such a congregation of faithful souls. I question whether Hernhuth can now afford the like.

Tues., July 15th. To the colliers I described, what many of them have experienced, religion, a participation of the divine nature. At Bristol I pressed the example of the primitive Christians, (Acts ii.,) and tasted something of their spirit.

Wed., July 16th. I was convincing the natural man of sin, when a poor sinner cried out vehemently, "What do you mean by looking at *me*, and directing yourself to *me*, and telling *me* I shall be damned?" I did then address myself to him; but he hurried away with the utmost precipitation.

At the time of intercession, the Spirit greatly helped our infirmities. We began with particulars; but at last were enlarged in prayer for all mankind.

I dissuaded one who was strongly tempted to leave the fellowship. The devil knows what he does: *Divide et impera*, will carry the world before him.

While I was meeting the bands, my mouth was opened to rebuke, reprove, exhort, in words not my own. All trembled before the presence of God. I was forced to cut off a rotten member; but I felt such love and pity at the time, as humbled me into the dust. It was as if one criminal was made to execute another. We betook ourselves to fervent prayer for him, and the Society. The Spirit was poured out; and we returned unto the Lord in weeping, and mourning, and praying.

Thur., July 17th. I admitted near thirty new members into the Society.

Sun., July 20th. Our poor colliers being repelled from the Lord's table, by most of the Bristol Ministers, I exhorted them, notwithstanding, to continue daily with one accord in the temple; where the wickedest administrator can neither spoil the prayers, nor poison the sacrament. *These poor sinners have ears to hear.*

Wed., July 23d. I talked with Mrs. T——, who justifies God, and the wisdom of his children, taking shame to herself, and confessing that spiritual pride was the sole occasion of her fall.

In the bands I reproved one who was fallen asleep again, and yet horribly confident she was in a good way, and should go to heaven if she died that moment. I tried the weapons of our warfare upon her strong-holds, and pulled

them down, to the conviction of all but herself. At last she raged and tore like a mad woman ; this child of God, with her full assurance of faith ! I showed the rest, through her, the deceitfulness of the heart, and the blinding power of Satan.

Thur., July 24th. I went to see her, lest Satan should get irrecoverable advantage over her. She was more moderate, but still in the false assurance of unbelief, in the spirit of self-delusion. What an exertion of omnipotence does such a soul require to re-awaken it !

At night I took occasion, from Acts vii., to discourse on the sin of resisting the Holy Ghost. He sent the word home to many souls.

Sun., July 27th. I heard a miserable sermon at Temple church, recommending religion as the most likely way to raise a fortune. After it, proclamation was made, "that all should depart who were not of the parish." While the shepherd was driving away the lambs, I stayed, suspecting nothing, till the Clerk came to me, and said, "Mr. Beacher bids you go away, for he will not give you the sacrament." I went to the vestry-door, and mildly desired Mr. Beacher to admit me. He asked, "Are you of this parish ?" I answered, "Sir, you *see* I am a Clergyman." Dropping his first pretence, he charged me with rebellion in expounding the Scriptures without authority ; and said in express words, "I repel you from the sacrament." I replied, "I cite you to answer this before Jesus Christ at the day of judgment." This enraged him above measure. He called out, "*Here, take away this man !*" The Constables were ordered to attend, I suppose lest the furious colliers should take the sacrament by force : but I saved them the trouble of taking away this man, and quietly retired.

I preached the Gospel in Kingswood with double power, from Isai. xl. : "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God." Before sermon, I declared our brother Cennick's entire agreement with me in the belief of universal redemption ; and he confirmed my saying with an hymn of his own. Never did I find my spirit more knit to him.

At Rose-green, though my bodily strength was gone, I was carried out beyond myself in speaking of God's free-grace to sinners.

Mon., July 28th. I spoke searchingly on those words of our Lord : " Nevertheless, I tell you the truth ; it is expedient for you that I go away ; for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come," &c.

Tues., July 29th. One, pestered with the Predestinarians, desired me to expound Rom. ix. I did, through Christ strengthening me, in an extraordinary manner. The poor creature Wildboar contradicted and blasphemed, and even *called for damnation upon his own soul, if Christ died for all, and if God was willing that all men should be saved.* The power of the Lord was present so much the more. Many believed with their heart, and made confession with their mouth, of Jesus Christ the Saviour of all men. I have not known a more triumphant night since I knew Bristol.

Sun., August 3d. I preached Jesus Christ to the colliers from Isai. lxiii. : " Who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah ?" Great power was in the midst. Many wept. I myself was much affected. At Rose-green my text was, " Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness." It rained hard : but that did not interrupt their attention. I was comforted at the women's love-feast.

Tues., August 5th. I talked sharply to Jenny Dechamps, a girl of twelve years old ; who now confessed that her fits and cryings out (above thirty of them) were all feigned, that Mr. Wesley might take notice of her.

Wed., August 6th. In great heaviness I spoke to the women-bands, as taking my farewell : sang the hymn which begins,—

" While sickness shakes the house of clay,
And, sapp'd by pain's continued course,
My nature hastens to decay,
And waits the fever's friendly force."

After speaking a few faint words to the brethren, I was immediately taken with a shivering ; and then the fever came.

The next morning I was bled, and carried by M. Hooper to her house. There I looked into the Bible, and met with, " The Lord will strengthen him upon the bed of languishing, thou wilt make all his bed in his sickness." My pain and disease increased for ten days ; so that there was

no hope of my life : but then Jesus touched my hand, and rebuked the fever, and it left me. I had no apprehension of death myself. It was reported I was dead, and published in the papers : but God had not finished (O that he had effectually begun !) his work in me : therefore he held my soul in life ; and made all things work together for my recovery.

Dr. Middleton, an utter stranger to me, God raised up, and sent to my assistance. He refused taking any fees, and told the Apothecary he would pay for my physic, if I could not. He attended me constantly, as the divine blessing did his prescriptions ; so that in less than a fortnight the danger was over.

For the next fortnight I recovered slowly, but had little use of my legs, and none of my head. One of our colliers, taken ill of the same fever since me, has died in full triumph of faith.

When I was just able to stand, my brother came from London. We rode out most days in Mr. Wane's, or an hired, chariot, comparing our dangers, temptations, and deliverances.

I found myself, after this gracious visitation, more desirous and able to pray ; more afraid of sin, more earnestly longing for deliverance, and the fulness of Christian salvation.

Sun., September 7th. As soon as my bodily weakness would permit, I returned to my old hours of retirement ; but with fear, and earnest prayer that I might not rest in my own works or endeavours.

Mr. Cary's Curate informed us, that Mr. Cary had ordered him to repel my brother and me from the sacrament.

Wed., September 10th. It rained all day, but cleared up when I went to the bands. A few words I spoke in great weakness ; and they seemed not spoken in vain.

Mon., September 15th. I passed two or three days at Mr. Arthur's, in Kingswood, and, by the blessing of God, recovered the use of my understanding, which was so clouded, that I could neither read nor think.

Thur., September 18th. Out of weakness I was made strong to preach at the room to-night ; not for a quarter of an hour, as I proposed, but for an hour and an half.

Fri., September 19th. "They that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength." So I found it this morning, both in soul and body. At night I was enabled to preach Anne Hodges's funeral sermon.

Mon., September 22d. I was setting out for the Downs, when one asked me to ride out toward Mr. Willis's. At the end of the town I was informed the colliers were risen. Above one thousand of them I met at Lawrence-hill. They came about me, and saluted me very affectionately, not having seen me since my sickness. The occasion of their rising, they told me, was the dearness of corn. I got to an eminence, and began speaking to them. Many seemed inclined to go back with me to the school; but the devil stirred up his oldest servants, who violently rushed upon the others, beating, and tearing, and driving them away from me. I rode up to a ruffian who was striking one of our colliers, and prayed him rather to strike me. He would not, he said, for all the world; and was quite overcome. I turned upon one who struck my horse, and he also sank into a lamb. Wherever I turned, Satan lost ground; so that he was obliged to make one general assault, and, by the few violent colliers, forced on the quiet ones into the town.

I seized on one of the tallest, and earnestly besought him to follow me: that he would, he said, all the world over. About six more I pressed into Christ's service. We met several parties; stopped and exhorted them to join us. We gleaned a few from every company, and grew as we marched along singing to the school. From one till three we spent in prayer that evil might be prevented, and the lion chained. Then news was brought us that the colliers were returned in peace. They had quietly walked into the city, without sticks, or the least violence. A few of the better sort went to the Mayor, and told their grievance: then they all returned as they came, without noise or disturbance. All who saw were amazed; for the leopards were laid down. Nothing could have more shown the change wrought in them than this rising.

I found afterwards that all our colliers to a man had been forced into it. Having learned of Christ not to resist evil, they went a mile with those that compelled them,

rather than free themselves by violence. One the rioters dragged out of his sick-bed, and threw him into the Fish-ponds: near twenty of Mr. Willis's men they got by threatening to fill up their pits, and bury them alive, if they did not come up and bear them company.

Tues., September 23d. Mr. W. Seward came, and was very cordial. We prayed, rejoiced, and gave thanks. If I did not love him the better for his opinion, I am sure it made me more industrious to confirm my old love towards him.

I carried him to Mr. Wane's, and then to our colliers; before whom I set the things they would have done in the late rising, had not grace restrained them. One poor man declared, when they forced him away, he would much more willingly have gone to the gallows.

Mr. Seward spoke a few words to them, which did not convince me of his call to preach. In our return, he told me Mrs. Grevil and others had urged him to claim the room in the Horse-fair; but he abhorred their baseness.

Wed., September 24th. He told me he was in a mist; the Baptists last night having laboured hard to make him oppose me publicly. Before we parted, all was set right again. Yet a few hours after, he came from them, and utterly renounced both me and my brother, in bitter words of hatred, which they had put in his mouth. I pray God lay not this sin to their charge, neither all the weakness of word and action which ensued for the following days.

God endues my soul and body also with much strength. This day he has comforted me on every side. To Him be all the glory.

Fri., September 26th. I was greatly assisted in the evening to preach the Christian perfection, that is, utter dominion over sin; constant peace, and love, and joy in the Holy Ghost; the full assurance of faith, righteousness, and true holiness. I see more and more into the height of our privileges, and that God will give them to me.

Sun., September 28th. At the sacrament I received power to believe sin shall not have dominion over me. I reached many hearts in expounding blind Bartimeus.

Our love-feast was such as deserved the name. We all rejoiced in hope of the glory of God.

Mon., September 29th. God was wonderfully with our assembly, and opened my eyes to see the promise of holiness, or perfection, not in some, but in almost every, scripture.

Thur., October 2d. I rejoiced to hear that M. Purnell was on Sunday morning, under the word, taken into the very borders of Canaan. The patient abiding of the meek shall not perish for ever.

Sun., October 5th. I offered myself at the sacrament, and was not refused, though Mr. Cary himself administered. I received it with comfort.

Mon., October 6th. I prayed by Margaret Thomas. At my first visit, she *hoped* her sins were forgiven. Now she more than hoped it, having received the faith which works by love, and filial fear of offending.

I met the Leaders ; and endeavoured to humble one who begins to grow rich, not by denying what God has done for his soul, but by showing him he could no more trust to his graces than his works, but must still come to Christ as a poor sinner that has need of all things.

Wed., October 8th. I took down the case of Catherine Hyfield. She was charged with robbing her master (one Townsend) of £300 ; whose dying wife my brother had visited. Alderman Day, &c., threatened to put her in irons, &c., if she would not confess she had given the money to my brother. When no proof could be brought against her, they were forced to discharge her : and soon after, her master found the money where himself had lodged it.

Thur., October 9th. I was much revived by the sight of Margaret Thomas, dying in the highest triumph of faith. I could not help asking,

“ Is this the soul so late weigh’d down
By cares and sins, by griefs and pains ?
Whither are all thy terrors gone ?
Jesus for thee the victory gains,
And death, and sin, and Satan yield
To faith’s unconquerable shield.”

Her hope was now full of immortality. She had no desire of life or death, or ease in her great pain. God had finished his work ; and her will was quite swallowed up in his. This is that holiness without which no one shall see the Lord.

Fri., October 10th. I prayed by Mrs. Purnell, who patiently waits for the seal of her pardon. At night I spoke strongly to the unawakened ; and, behold, a cry ! but such as became poor lost sinners. Great was the stirring among the dry bones.

Sun., October 12th. From Isai. lxiv. I was assisted to stir up those who had settled upon their lees, since they were justified. I visited Margaret, now at the haven where she would be, and only waiting the word, "Come up hither !" Her spirit helped me wonderfully in prayer. She told me, she had been heard in my behalf, and God would give me an humble heart.

Mon., October 13th. I breakfasted and gave an exhortation to some of our friends. One *seemed* so deeply affected, that her outcries much interrupted me. I took no notice of her, seeing she *could not help it* ; only said at last, "I do not think the better of you for this ;" and immediately her trouble was over, and she hushed and unconcerned as before.

Wed., October 15th. At the intercession, our casting down was in the midst of us. O that I was always as I am sometimes ! But a fit or start of humility is not to be depended on.

Thur., October 16th. I rejoiced in an opportunity of heaping coals of fire upon the head of an enemy. Poor Mitchel, arrested by Charles Martin, sent me first a reproaching, and then a begging, letter. I paid his debt, and won him at a very moderate price.

Fri., October 17th. I prayed by Mrs. Purnell, near death. She had no fear, and no assurance of pardon ; but believed she should know her sins forgiven before she went hence. I called again at noon ; and then the Lord had showed her his salvation, and she could confidently testify, "God for Christ's sake hath forgiven me."

Sun., October 19th. I called on a dying man, who told me he hoped to be saved through Christ, because he was none of the worst of sinners. "If that be your plea," said I, "you must be damned without all remedy." I proceeded to set before him the spirituality of the law, and the terrors of the Lord. He fought hard against God, often repeating the words of his predecessor, "I am not like other men,"

reproaching my Master, not me, and refusing to humble himself under the mighty hand of God. He told me he never desired to see me more ; yet, when I offered to go, he desired me to pray by him. I did, in faith, that God might open his eyes to see himself the chief of sinners. He begged me to call again.

I gave the sacrament to Mrs. Purnell ; who, after receiving the cup, cried, "It is finished !" I visited her once more in her last conflict ; yet, even then, by plain signs expressing her confidence. She held out till Wednesday morning, October 22d ; and then departed to the church triumphant.

I met the Leaders, and removed one, (J. W—k,) who was much lifted up, but lay concealed from herself by a voluntary humility. She cheerfully resigned an office which she owned herself so unfit for ; yet, afterwards, I heard, complained, with many tears, that I should think ill of her from the report of others. The next day she was taken with a fit of humility, and bade a sister go and tell it me. "Anybody now," she said, "might trample upon me : do you : pray trample upon me ; but tell Mr. Wesley." Verily, "the heart is deceitful above all things. Who can know it ?"

Thur., October 23d. I met several of the bands at the house of our departed sister Purnell, and solemnly rejoiced over her, with singing. I walked with the funeral as far as the church ; then hastened back to the room, where lay the corpse of Margaret. Her spirit was, with the other's, returned to God. A wonderful power accompanied the word preached, 1 Cor. xv. O what triumph did we find in the house of mourning ! Many strangers were convinced. The Society attended her to the grave, and praised God with joyful lips for her translation.

Fri., October 24th. I was greatly enlarged in enforcing that promise, "The Lord knoweth how to deliver out of temptation." I showed them the only infallible way to conquer sin. namely, "Sin shall not have dominion over me, because I believe in Jesus Christ that it shall not." A poor drunkard believed, and had a witness that he shall no more turn back to his own wickedness.

Sun., October 26th. I heard Mr. Tucker's (not railing)

accusation against the Methodists, "that they went contrary to custom ; did not catechise their children ; did not reform men in the regular way." He told us farther, what Mr. Whitefield would say when he returned from Georgia ; and concluded with an excellent quotation out of Mr. Law. I offered my assistance at the sacrament, which he civilly declined.

Mon., October 27th. I met a young gentlewoman who was never under the word till the night of our triumphant funeral. Then it laid hold on her heart : yet I could not persuade her to expect the promise, till she had endeavoured, and mourned, and waited *longer*.

In the evening I set the terrors of the Lord in array against sinners, and an horrible dread overwhelmed some of them. May the law be their schoolmaster to bring them to Christ.

Tues., October 28th. I was exceedingly shocked with the news of Mr. Seward's death : but he is taken from the evil ; rescued out of the hands of wicked men.

Calling on the Pharisee whom I had visited last week, I found him dead ; but at the last hour he had cried unto Jesus, as a poor, undone sinner, who *was* like other men.

I was led in the evening to preach universal redemption from those words, "The Lord is not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance." The Spirit mightily confirmed that irresistible truth. I then spoke with unfeigned concern of our dear departed brother ; and with just abhorrence of those unhappy bigots, whose headlong zeal had robbed us of him. We sang a funeral hymn over him, and were comforted in the hope of soon meeting him again, where no sower of tares, no reprobating Pharisee, shall ever part us more.

Fri., October 31st. The time for my going to Wales is now come. To-day Captain Philips challenged me ; said he came to fetch me ; and Mr. Wells invited me to preach in his churches.

I passed an hour with two very wise Quakers, who were for inverting the order of God, and making Christ our sanctification before he is our righteousness. The true Light, I trust, will one day teach them better.

Tues., November 4th. At Kingswood Mr. Cennick

showed me a letter from Howel Harris, wherein he justified poor Mr. Seward, and talked of declaring against us himself. With the loss of him and all things, I am commanded to preach the Gospel to every creature. I did so to the colliers, from Titus ii. 11; and was carried out more than ever before, till all were drowned in tears of love. While I was testifying Christ died for all, Mr. Cennick, in the hearing of many, gave me the lie. I calmly told him afterwards, "If I speak not the truth as it is in Jesus, may I decrease, and you increase."

Thur., November 6th. At six I took boat for Cardiff, and at six in the evening landed on Welsh ground with the voice of praise and thanksgiving. Mr. Wells, who invited me over, waited to give me the first greeting. From his house we went to the Society, where God opened my mouth to call, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." They received the word with all readiness. I lodged at Mr. Glascot's.

Fri., November 7th. I rode with Mr. Williams to St. Andrew's, a little town four Welsh miles from Cardiff. Mr. Wells was not afraid to trust me in his pulpit. I was greatly assisted to invite many poor sinners to come weary and heavy laden to Christ. They gladly received my saying. Mr. Hodges desired me to preach next Tuesday in his church at Wenvo. I returned to Cardiff rejoicing; and expounded 1 John i., to the conviction, I hope, of many.

Sat., November 8th. I had an opportunity to moderate the spirits of some who were greatly exasperated against Howel Harris, for preaching predestination among them.

After church I waited with Mr. Wells on the sick Minister; who was extremely civil, invited me to dinner, and to preach in his pulpit morning and evening.

I spent the day in singing and close conference, with some who would fain persuade themselves they had faith, without forgiveness. My Master, I trust, will soon persuade them that they have both together.

Sun., November 9th. At six I explained the legal state, from Rom. vii. I read prayers, and preached to a large congregation, "All have sinned and come short of the glory of God." I administered the sacrament to many strangers.

I read prayers in the afternoon, baptized a child, and preached both law and Gospel with great plainness. My hearers were surprisingly patient. Only one went out. I continued my discourse till it was dark ; and had much comfort in having delivered my message.

The scripture to be expounded at night was, 1 John ii. : "If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father," &c. God opened my mouth to declare the truth of his everlasting love to all mankind. At the same time he enlarged my heart to its opposers. I took the occasion to speak of Howel Harris ; bore such a testimony of him as he deserves ; and mildly upbraided them for their ingratitude toward the greatest benefactor their country ever had. We all expressed our love by joining in hearty prayer for him.

Mon., November 10th. I set out for St. Nicholas ; called at Llandaff on the then officiating Minister, to ask the pulpit. He referred me to the Chapter ; but I do not mean to trouble them. The church at St. Nicholas, also, was shut against me ; but we met at a neighbouring house, Mr. Deer's, where I offered Christ to all sinners, with much freedom and power.

At Cardiff I spoke a word in season to one (Sus. Young) who was puffed up, and boasted of her graces, and took upon her to teach others. I told her she had deceived her own soul, and brought a scandal on religion. She flew out into self-justification : God knew her heart, would not quench the smoking flax, &c. But I cut her short, and, with six plain words, God accompanying them with his power, struck her down into the deep. She cried out, "I am damned, I am damned," and was stripped of all, as in one moment.

I sent a messenger to Howel Harris, with the following letter :—

"My dearest Friend and Brother,—In the name of Jesus Christ I beseech you, if you have his glory and the good of souls at heart, come immediately, and meet me here. I trust we shall never be two in time or eternity. O my brother, I am grieved that Satan should get a moment's advantage over us ; and am ready to lay my neck under your feet for Christ's sake. If your heart is as my

heart, hasten, in the name of our dear Lord, to your second self,

“C. WESLEY.”

Tues., November 11th. The church at Wenvo was full as it could hold, while I preached the Gospel from the good Samaritan. All were visibly affected. I went to Mr. Hodges; took sweet counsel with him and Mr. Wells. The former, at parting, in great simplicity desired my prayers and a kiss.

Wed., November 12th. In Lanissan church I preached on, “Repent, and believe the Gospel.” Our Lord was never more with me than at this time. I concluded with earnest prayer for the Curate.

I dined at Mr. Wells’s with several of the brethren, and Mr. Thomas, a neighbouring Curate of great simplicity, who preaches not himself, but Christ Jesus the Lord.

Thur., November 13th. I went with reluctance to the prisoners, almost despairing to do any good, when I received faith to believe Christ would be with me. I looked up to him; and never preached the Gospel with greater freedom. Two women fell down as dead. The infection ran through us all, and we felt that the Gospel was indeed the power of God.

The three Ministers, Mr. Wells, Hodges, and Thomas, made part of my evening congregation; to whom I showed in strong words the blessedness of persecution.

Fri., November 14th. I rode with Mr. Hodges to Micelston-Lepil. He read prayers: I preached Christ from, “Who is this that cometh from Edom with dyed garments?” &c. He was evidently set forth before our eyes as crucified. I rode back in the spirit of triumph. I heard the players had sent me a challenge; that is, a ticket and invitation to their play. Suffice for the time past. I now serve another Master.

Sat., November 15th. At Mr. Price’s, in Watford, I preached “Christ our wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption;” and again at five with double power. An Arian Minister of our own Church, and a Baptist teacher, were present. The latter could not allow either justification or sanctification necessary to salvation.

Sun., November 16th. Mr. Williams informed me that

many had bound themselves with a curse to make a disturbance in the church, and not suffer me to preach. Then the Clerk told me I was not to preach in the afternoon. I answered, I had not expected to preach there in the morning, or, indeed, a second time.

The Psalms began, "O God, the Heathen are come into thine inheritance; thy holy temple have they defiled." The Second Lesson was very animating, being John viii.; that earnest contention of our Lord with the Pharisees.

My text was, "If God be for us, who can be against us?" I began abruptly with the opposers, and defied them in the name of the Lord Jesus. The Spirit of power was with me; but I soon perceived him as the Spirit of love; and besought those unhappy sinners to be reconciled unto God. Their master durst not hazard their staying any longer; but, in the midst of my discourse, hurried them out of church.

I went on convincing and entreating the Pharisees to submit to the righteousness of God. Never was my mouth and heart more enlarged. Upon my repeating, "It pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save all them that believe," a gentleman rose, and turned his back on the Gospel of his salvation. I called after him in vain; then earnestly prayed for him and the rest, the Spirit helping my infirmity.

I read prayers in the afternoon. Many hungry souls were disappointed through my not preaching. I sent them to the Society. Several players were present, but quickly fled before the sword of the Spirit. When we were departing, Mr. Wells stopped us to hear his unexpected apology for me. He strongly enforced the truths I had delivered; and, with great humility, asked me to set him right, if he had spoken aught contrary to sound doctrine.

Mon., November 17th. Again my mouth was opened to preach the law and the Gospel at Llantrissant. Mr. Harris, the Minister, was exceeding civil. He had been dealt with to refuse me the pulpit, but would not break his word.

Tues., November 18th. I preached at St. Bride's, "Thou shalt call his name Jesus," &c. Here, too, I cast my net to catch the fisher. We were setting out from the public-house, when God brought Howel Harris to us. All mis-

understandings vanished at sight of each other, and our hearts were knit together as at the beginning. We sang an hymn of triumph. God had prepared his heart for this meeting. At the sacrament he had found the spirit of martyrdom falling upon him, and immediately I was brought to his remembrance. His heart overflowed with love, and he thought we were going hand in hand to the stake.

Before the Society, several were with me, desiring me, now I had gotten him, to reprove him openly. Some wanted me to preach against lay-preaching ; some against predestination, &c. In my discourse on Isai. xl., a gentleman, who had come thither on purpose, interrupted me, by desiring I would now speak to Mr. Harris, since I was sent for to disprove his errors, and Mr. Wells, an experienced Clergyman, sat by to moderate between us. God gave me immediate recollection. I smiled at Satan's impudence ; but turned aside the question with mildness, and thanks to the proposer. In vain he urged me to enter the lists with my friend. I quashed all farther importunity by declaring, "I am unwilling to speak of my brother Howel Harris, because, when I begin, I know not how to leave off ; and should say so much good of him, as some of you could not bear." The gentleman, disappointed of his hope, immediately departed.

After this victory over Satan, I proceeded with double power, addressing myself particularly to the ladies, whose company we were favoured with because there was no play to-night. I showed them they were no better than common harlots, if they outwardly differed from them through pride, not virtue. The Lord open their hearts to receive my hard saying.

The Captain giving me notice that he should sail the next day, I determined to spend the night in taking leave. We supped at the friendly Mr. Wells's, and then called at Captain Philips's. Between ten and eleven, just as I was going, Satan began to show his wrath at the many sore disappointments he has met with this very day. He could not set the children of God against each other, and was therefore forced to make use of his own. The Physician, who had gone out of church on Sunday, stirred up by his companions, and unusually heated with wine, came and

demanding satisfaction of me for calling him Pharisee. I said, "I was ready to acknowledge my mistake, if he would assure me he had gone out of church to visit his patients." He replied, "He had gone out because he disliked my discourse." "Then, Sir," said I, "I cannot ask pardon for telling you the truth." "But you must for calling me a Pharisee." "I still insist you are a Pharisee, and cannot endure sound doctrine. My commission is, to show you your sins; and I shall make no apology for so doing, to you or any man living. You are a damned sinner by nature, and a Pharisee, like me: and this testimony I should bear before rulers and Kings. You are a rebel against God, and must bow your stiff neck to Him before you can be forgiven." "How do you know my heart?" "My heart sheweth me the wickedness of the ungodly." "Sir, I am as good a Christian as yourself." "You are no Christian at all, unless you have received the Holy Ghost." "How do you prove that you have the Holy Ghost?" "By searching your heart, and showing you that you are a Pharisee." Here he lifted up his cane, and struck me. Mrs. Philips intercepted and broke the blow; F. Farley tripped up his heels; and the company rushed in between. My soul was immediately filled with the calm, recollected boldness of faith. There was a great outcry among the women. Several of them he struck, and hurt, and raged like one possessed, till the men forced him out, and shut the door.

Soon after, it was broken open by a Justice, and the Bailiff, or head-Magistrate. The latter began expostulating with me upon the affront offered the Doctor; and said, "As it was a public injury, I ought to make him public satisfaction." I answered, "Mr. Bailiff, I honour you for your office's sake; but was you yourself, or His Majesty King George, among my hearers, I should tell you both that you are by nature damned sinners. In the church, while preaching, I have no superior but God; and shall not ask man leave to show him his sins.—As a ruler, it is your duty to be a terror to evil-doers, but a praise to them that do well." Upon my thus speaking, he became exceeding civil; assured me of his good-will, and that he had come to prevent my being insulted; and none should touch an hair of my head.

While we were talking, the Doctor made another attempt to break in, and get at me ; but the two Justices and others with much trouble at last got him out. They went ; and we continued our triumph in the name of the Lord our God. The shout of a King was among us. We sang on unconcerned, though those sons of Belial, the players, had beset the house. They were armed, and threatened to burn the house. The ground of their quarrel with me is, that the Gospel has starved them. We prayed and sang with great tranquillity till one in the morning. Then I lay down till three ; rose again ; and was scarce got into the room, when they discovered a player just by me, who had stole in unobserved. They seized him, and F. Farley wrested the sword from him. There was no need of drawing it, for the point and blade were stripped an hand-breadth of the scabbard.

When the sword was brought in, the spirit of faith was kindled among us, at sight of the danger. Great was our rejoicing within, and the uproar of the players without, who strove to force their way after their companion. My female advisers were by no means for my venturing out, but deferring my journey. I preferred Mr. Wells's advice of going with him, through the midst of our enemies. I called in on the poor creature they had secured. They talked of warrants, prosecutions, &c. On sight of me he cried, "Indeed, Mr. Wesley, I did not intend to do you any harm." "That," I answered, "was best known to God, and his own heart : but my principle was, to return good for evil ; wherefore I desired he might be released ;" assured him of my good wishes, and with Mr. Wells walked peaceably to the water-side, no man forbidding me. Our friends stood on the shore, while we joined in hearty thanksgiving. The fierceness of men shall turn to thy praise, and the fierceness of them shalt thou restrain.

Wed., November 19th. Between five and six we were forced to return for want of water. I found Howel Harris and the flock still at Captain Philips's, and was strengthened to lay open the promise of sanctification. (Ezek. xxxvi.) I took leave of my dear Howel ; and with Mr. Wells waited upon the Bailiff ; acknowledged his last night's civilities ; and left him, as a trophy, the player's

sword. In public prayer, Mr. Wells returned thanks to God for our late deliverance.

At two I took my leave of the Society, and preached the pure Gospel from the woman of Canaan. A spirit of love constrained me to beseech them, with tears, to receive Christ Jesus. It ran through all. Some of the greatest opposers wept, especially a young lady, for whose entertainment the players had acted me, sang, and prayed, and trembled exceedingly. The word was as a fire that melteth the rocks. I saw why God had brought me back. Our parting was such as it ought to be.

About four, Mr. Wells, &c., attended me to the vessel. I laid me down, and slept, and took my rest ; for it is thou, Lord, only, that makest me dwell in safety.

Thur., November 20th. By five this morning, He who blest our going out, blest our coming in to Bristol.

I found my brother at the room, expounding Rom. ix. I confirmed his saying, and gave some account of my success in Wales. A great power accompanied the word, and I prayed in the Spirit. I joined with him in administering the sacrament to a young woman I had baptized, but who had not kept her garments unspotted. Yet God healed her backslidings, and soon after she confidently resigned her spirit into the hands of Jesus.

Fri., November 21st. My brother returned to London.

Sun., November 23d. I was very dead in delivering it, yet the word was mixed with faith in some that heard it, as they afterwards testified.

Thur., November 27th. At the Malt-house, the spirit of love and supplication fell upon me. I was filled with the tenderest concern for the desolate Church of England ; which I could not help expressing before the congregation in tears, and strong cries to God for her.

Sun., November 30th. I gave the sacrament to our sister Taylor, dying in triumph. Here is another witness to the truth of our Gospel. Commend me to a religion upon which I can trust my soul, while entering into eternity.

I expounded the lesson at Kingswood. It was Hebrews vi. I prayed Christ our Teacher to enlighten the people and me ; and began my discourse with fear and trembling. The Spirit gave me utterance. I calmly warned them

against apostasy, and spake with great tenderness and caution. But who can stand before envy and bigotry? The strong ones were offended. The poison of Calvin has drunk up their spirit of love. Anne Ayling and Anne Davis could not refrain from railing. John Cennick never offered to stop them. Alas! we have set the wolf to keep the sheep! God gave me great moderation toward him, who, for many months, has been undermining our doctrine and authority.

Mon., December 1st. I passed two hours at M. Parsons's funeral, and looked with envy on the corpse in the coffin. Her soul, before it left the body, was sweetly and fully conscious of its reconciliation with God. The word has been a savour of life to her also.

While I was showing the universality of Christ's redemption, the flame was kindled all around, and the Holy Ghost bore witness with many consciences.

Tues., December 2d. I had a conference in Kingswood with Mr. Cennick and his friends, but could come to no agreement, though I offered entirely to drop the controversy if he would.

I preached on the three-fold office of Christ, but never with greater power. It constrained even the separatists to own that God was with us of a truth. I rode back in a glorious storm of thunder, lightning, and rain. My spirit rejoiced in hope of the glory of God.

He opened my mouth again at the Society; and I spoke in much grief and love of our desolate mother the Church of England. My heart yearns towards her when I think upon her ruins, and it pitieth me to see her in the dust.

Thur., December 4th. I administered the sacrament to Mr. Page, against hope believing in hope. After receiving, he had power to believe his sins forgiven.

Fri., December 5th. I was much refreshed in spirit among some of my friends, the Quakers, by a writer of theirs, who strongly insists on the perfect death unto sin, and life unto righteousness, which every Christian experiences. Death must precede life, and condemnation justification. This he as clearly teaches, as any of our first Reformers.

Sat., December 6th. I wrote my brother a full account of the predestinarian party, their practices and designs,

particularly "to have a church within themselves, and to give themselves the sacrament in bread and water."

Sun., December 21st. I took my leave of the colliers in the words of the great Apostle, (without comparing myself to him,) "And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace." The loving spirit was mightily among us, and more still at our love-feast, for all the brethren of Kingswood and Bristol.

Mon., December 22d. I showed, with demonstration of the Spirit, the (ordinary) necessity of our being bruised and broken *before* the Comforter would abide in us for ever. He who saith, "My work is before me," set to his seal.

Wed., December 24th. At five I set out for London, which I reached, with Thomas Maxfield, the next day by five in the afternoon. At six God renewed my strength to preach the glad tidings to a crowded audience at the Foundry. Great was our joy in the Lord, and in each other.

Fri., December 26th. I rose at five, without feeling my journey, and expounded Isai. xl. 9: "O Zion, that bringest good tidings, get thee up into the high mountain," &c. He spake comfortably to his people by my mouth, though I am nothing.

I talked with one, who has entirely stopped the work of God in her own soul, by judging of it in others.

A spirit of contrition fell upon me the moment I entered the Society-room. We made supplication for all men, especially the household of faith, and that small part of it at Bristol.

Sat., December 27th. From eleven to one I met five or six hundred, to praise God with the voice of joy and thanksgiving. He hath done great things for us already, but we shall see greater things than these.

I dined at a Dissenter's, armed cap-a-pie with her faith of adherence, brim full of the five points, and going on to the perfection of Rom. vii.

At Mr. Craven's, a man abruptly accosted me, "Are you ready to receive my message?" "Yes," I answered, "if you speak not of yourself." "I speak to you from God." "Where are your credentials? What proof show you of your divine commission?" "Nay, nay," said he, "if you cannot receive my saying, I have nothing to do with you."

I have delivered my own soul." With these he flung away, and left his prophecy imperfect.

Sun., December 28th. In the evening the scoffers were very outrageous. God filled my mouth with threatenings and promises. I defied and invited them by turns, till he got himself the victory ; and I freely published the glad tidings, "To us a son is born, to us a child is given."

I earnestly warned the bands not to fancy they had new hearts before they had seen the deceitfulness of the old ; not to think they would ever be above the necessity of praying ; not to yield for one moment to the spirit of judging.

Among my visitants this morning I had a very ingenious person, who generously proffered to teach me the grand arcanum for the value of five shillings. Having no need of money, I declined his proffer ; but gave him sixpence, and told him, as he had the art of transmutation, it was the same as if I had given him half a guinea. We had more serious talk before parting : how to change an heart of stone into an heart of flesh.

Tues., December 30th. I exhorted the Society at Deptford with convincing power. A woman fell down under it.

Wed., December 31st. I found the Spirit of prayer among the bands in London, and strongly exhorted them to humility.

PART VI.

FROM APRIL 3D, 1741, TO SEPTEMBER 22D, 1741.*

FRIDAY, April 3d. I set out for Bristol, to which God brought me safe by Saturday evening. I expounded at the malt-house Rev. ii. 24 ; and God was with my mouth.

Sun., April 5th. I spake words of comfort to many mourners, from Isai. xxx. 18 : "And therefore will the Lord wait, that he may be gracious unto you," &c. Again God greatly to be feared was in the midst of our congregation, and revived many drooping hearts.

* No account of Mr. Charles Wesley's labours during the months of January, February, and March, of this year has been preserved.—
EDIT.

Mon., April 6th. I prayed by one supposed at the point of death. He rejoiced to meet the King of terrors, and appeared so sweetly resigned, so ready for the Bridegroom, that I longed to change places with him.

I visited three murderers under sentence of death, who were ready to say, "Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord."

Thur., April 9th. I got some hours for visiting our numerous sick, most of whom I found in a good way : only one backslider, B. Hawks, was in the depth of despair.

I preached at Kendalshire, and gathered up the wreck. In riding back my horse threw me ; but I know who caught me in his arms.

Fri., April 10th. I found a dying sinner rejoicing in God her Saviour. At sight of me she cried out, "O how loving is God to me ! but he is loving to every man : he loves every soul as well as he loves mine." Many like words she uttered in triumphant faith, and witnessed in death the universal love of Christ Jesus.

Sat., April 11th. To-day He called forth another of his dying witnesses ; the young woman whom, at my last visit, I left in utter despair. This morning she broke out into, "I see, I see it now, that Jesus Christ died for me, and for all the world." From that time she testified, with much assurance, that Christ gave his life a ransom for all. Some of her words to me were, "Death stares me in the face ; but I fear him not. He cannot hurt me,

* And death may shake his dart in vain.*

Your report is true. God is love, pure love ; love to every man. The Spirit which is in me tells me that Jesus Christ died for me and the whole world."

The next I saw was our brother S.,

" With joyful eyes, and looks divine,
Smiling, and pleased in death."

He, likewise, had in himself the witness of God's all-redeeming love, and could stake his soul upon the truth of it. Who will show me a predestinarian that dares die for the truth of reprobation ?

Sun., April 12th. At Kingswood, while I was repeating

B. H.'s dying testimony, the Spirit came down "as a mighty rushing wind." Just then the predestinarians came in from hearing Cennick. In battles of shaking did He fight with them. We were all in a flame of love.

I gave the sacrament to the bands of Kingswood, not of Bristol, in obedience, as I told them, to the Church of England, which requires a weekly sacrament at every cathedral. But as they had it not there, and on this particular Sunday were refused it at Temple-church, (I myself, with many of them, having been repelled,) I therefore administered it to them in our school; and, had we wanted an house, would justify doing it in the midst of the Wood. I strongly urged the duty of their receiving it as often as they could be admitted at the churches.

I had prayed God to show me some token if this was his will concerning us: and, indeed, my prayer was answered; for such a sacrament was I never present at before. We received the sure pledges of our Saviour's dying love, and were most of us filled with all peace and joy in believing.

I preached a fourth time at Bristol: read the bands my Journal of what has lately passed in London. It occasioned a grief which, mixed with pity, violated not their joy. I gave them all the treatise on Predestination.

Mon., April 13th. While I was in great love, warning the bands, the Spirit of power came down, the fountain was set open, my mouth and heart enlarged, and I spoke such words as I cannot repeat. Many sunk under the love of Christ crucified, and were constrained to break out, "Christ died for all." Some confessed, with tears of joy, they were going to leave us, but could now die for the truth of the doctrine.

Tues., April 14th. I was enlarged in prayer for the malefactors who are to die to-morrow.

Thur., April 16th. One of our old men in the Wood complained to me, that the separatists had got from him the treatise against Predestination, and burnt it. In like manner they *answer* all they can lay hands on; but they do nothing, unless they could burn one more book,—the Bible.

At Kendalshire God gave me words to maintain his cause. I showed the end of Messiah being cut off; namely,

“to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sin, and to bring in everlasting righteousness.” One soul, as I afterwards heard, was added to the witnesses of Jesus.

Fri., April 17th. For the sake of many poor soldiers present, I enlarged on the “faithful saying, That Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners.”

Sat., April 18th. I called to see one that was a-dying : it was Hannah Richardson.

Sun., April 19th. Returning from Baptist-Mills, I heard that our sister Richardson had finished her course. My soul was filled with strong consolation, and struggled, as it were, to go out after her, “as heavenward endeavouring.” Jesu, my time is in thy hand : only let me so follow her, as she has followed Thee !

The voice of joy and thanksgiving was in the congregation, while I spake of her death. Our sister Purnell has proved a true Prophet, that many of the Society would quickly follow her, but God would first finish his work, and cut it short in righteousness.

Mon., April 20th. The hand of the Lord was upon me at Downing, while I enforced his universal call, “Look unto me, and be ye saved, *all* the ends of the earth.” Many felt the earthquake which precedes the coming of the Son of man. We prayed and sung alternately for two hours ; and the Lord, we trust, enlarged and established our hearts.

Tues., April 21st. I hastened to the joyful funeral of our sister Richardson. The room was crowded within and without. My subject was, “I know that my Redeemer liveth,” &c. (Job xix. 25.) I spoke searchingly to the hearsay-believers ; and then largely of her, whose faith they might safely follow. Great was my glorying and rejoicing over her. She, being dead, yet spoke in words of faith and love, which ought to be had in remembrance. Surely her spirit was present with us ; and we were in a measure partakers of her joy, a joy unspeakable and full of glory.

The whole Society followed her to her grave. Through all the city Satan raged exceedingly in his children, who threw dirt and stones at us : but the bridle was in their mouths. After the burial we joined in the following Hymn :—

“ Come, let us who in Christ believe,
With saints and angels join,
Glory, and praise, and blessing give,
And thanks to grace divine.

“ Our friend, in sure and certain hope,
Hath laid her body down,
She knew that Christ will raise her up,
And give the heavenly crown.

“ To all who his appearing love,
He opens paradise,
And we shall join the hosts above,
And we shall grasp the prize.

“ Then let us wait to see the day,
To hear the welcome word,
To answer, Lo, we come away,
We die to meet our Lord.”

Wed., April 22d. I sharply reprov'd three or four inflexible Pharisees; then prayed the Lord to give me words of consolation, and immediately I was filled with power, which broke out as a mighty torrent. All our hearts caught fire as in a moment, and such tears and strong cryings followed, as quite drowned my voice. I sat still while the prayer of the humble pierced the clouds, and entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth. All present received an answer of peace; and, from his love in their hearts, testified that Christ died for all.

Thur., April 23d. In the evening I gathered up a stray sheep at Bristol, and carried her to the word which she had long forsaken. I strongly exhorted the people to put on the whole armour of God. God doubly confirms the word when it is denied.

Fri., April 24th. At the intercession I had great faith in prayer, that all things shall happen for the furtherance of the Gospel. A predestinarian was struck as with the pangs of death, and earnestly desired our prayers.

I spent the afternoon in confirming the weak. In the evening I opened the book where it was written, “And now, I beseech thee, let the power of my Lord be great, according as thou hast spoken;” (Num. xiv. ;) that famous history of the spies, who brought up an evil report of the promised land. I said, “Let us go up at once and possess it, for we are well able to overcome it.” God inclined their

hearts to listen unto me, rather than the men that went up with us, who say, "We are not able to go up against the people, for they are stronger than we. We can never conquer *all* sin : we must sin sometimes."

I rode to Kingswood, where many were come from far to spend the night in watching and prayer. We had much of the divine presence ; but remained myself like Gideon's fleece ; till, at midnight, a cry, "Behold, the Bridegroom cometh !" The flame was kindled, and the Lord our God was among us as in the holy place of Sinai.

Sat., April 25th. The word at night was refreshing to our souls. Our thanksgiving-notes multiply more and more. One wrote thus :—"There was not a word came out of your mouth last night, but I could apply it to my own soul, and witness it the doctrine of Christ. I know that Christ is a whole Saviour. I know the blood of Christ has washed away all my sins. I am sure the Lord will make me perfect in love before I go hence, and am no more seen.

‘O for a thousand tongues to sing
My dear Redeemer's praise!’ &c.

Sun., April 26th. I proceeded in Num. xiv., and warned the hearers lest, a promise being made them of entering into rest, any of them should come short of it through unbelief.

God every day adds fresh seals to my ministry ; as many testify in their notes of thanksgiving.

Thur., April 30th. I went on in Num. xiv. Many eyes were opened to see that land of promise which God hath sworn to give unto all who believe.

We find a continual increase of faith and strength. It is good for us to be assaulted by Satan and his children. They watch *for* our halting, which makes us watch *against* it.

Fri., May 1st. I visited a sister dying in the Lord ; and then two others, one mourning after, the other rejoicing in, God her Saviour.

I found our sister Hooper sick of love. Her body, too, sunk under it.

While I finished my discourse on Num. xiv., God fulfilled his promise, "Lo, I am with you always."

I was now informed that another of our sisters, E. Smith, is gone home in triumph. She witnessed a good confession of the universal Saviour, and gave up her spirit with those words, "I go to my heavenly Father."

Sun., May 3d. At Kingswood as soon as I had named my text, "It is finished!" the love of Christ crucified so constrained me, that I burst into tears, and felt strong sympathy with Him in his sufferings. In like manner, the whole congregation looked upon Him whom they had pierced, and mourned.

I joined the Society in thanksgiving for our departed sister. We found where she was, by the sweet power and solemn awe with which the divine presence filled us.

Mon., May 4th. I passed an hour in weeping with some that wept; then rejoiced over our sister Hooper. The more the outward man decayeth, the inner is renewed. For one whole night she had wrestled with all the powers of darkness. This is that evil day, that fiery trial. But, having done all, she stood unshaken. From henceforth she was kept in perfect peace, and that wicked one touched her not.

In conference B. Walters told me that last night God had opened her eyes under the word, and the love of Christ, the Saviour of all men, quite overpowered her soul.

I saw my dear friend again, in great bodily weakness, but strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. "The Spirit," said she, "bears witness every moment with my spirit, that I am a child of God." I spoke with her Physician, who said he had little hope of her recovery; "only," added he, "she has no dread upon her spirits, which is generally the worst symptom. Most people die for fear of dying: but I never met with such people as yours. They are none of them afraid of death; but calm, and patient, and resigned to the last." He had said to her, "Madam, be not cast down." She answered smiling, "Sir, I shall never be cast down."

At Downing I explained good old Simeon's confession: "Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace," &c. Our sister Hooper was present in spirit. I hastened back, and asked, "How are you now?" Her answer was, "Full, full of love."

I met the bands in Kingswood. One, who, in fear of God, and mistrust of himself, had heard Mr. W——, assured me he had preached barefaced reprobation. The people fled before the reprobating lion. But again and again, as he observed them depart, the preacher of sad tidings called them back, with general offers of salvation. Vain and empty offers indeed ! What availed his telling them that, for *ought he knew*, they might be *all* elect. He did not believe them all elect ; he could not : therefore he only mocked them with an empty word of invitation ; and if God sent him to preach the Gospel to *every creature*, God, according to his scheme, sent him to *deceive* the greatest part of mankind.

Tues., May 5th. We had much of the spirit of supplication among our colliers. I could not but look on it as a good omen, that, while I was praying for the increase of our spiritual children, a wild collier brought me four of his children, and threw the youngest on the table before me, crying, "You have got the mother, take the bairns too."

Wed., May 6th. I found our sister Hooper just at the haven. She expressed, while able to speak, her fulness of confidence and love ; her desire to be with Christ ; her grief at their preaching the other Gospel. Some of her words were, "Does Mr. Cennick still preach his wretched doctrine ? O what has he to answer for, for turning his poor sister out of the way ! But my Lord will pity, and not suffer her to die in that delusion."

At my next visit, I saw her in her latest conflict. The angel of death was come, and but a few moments between her and a blessed eternity. We poured out our souls to God for her, her children, ourselves, the Church and Ministers, and all mankind. I had some perception of her joy. My soul was tenderly affected for her sufferings, yet the joy swallowed up the sorrow. How much more then did *her* consolations abound ! The servants of Christ suffer nothing. I asked her whether she was not in great pain. "Yes," she answered, "but in greater joy. I would not be without either." "But do you not prefer life or death ?" She replied, "All is alike to me ; let Christ choose ; I have no will of my own." This is that holiness, or absolute resignation, or Christian perfection !

Two days ago, I asked her if she expected to recover. She answered, God had in the beginning of her sickness given her notice of her departure. And I now remember, she told me some months ago, that Mrs. Purnell, on her death-bed, had said, "You shall shortly follow me."

A few moments before her last, I found such a complication of grief, joy, love, envy, as quite overpowered me. I fell upon the bed, and in that instant her spirit ascended to God. I felt our souls were knit together by the violent struggle of mine to follow her.

When I saw the breathless temple of the Holy Ghost, my heart was still, and a calm resignation took place. We knelt down, and gave God thanks from the ground of our heart. We then had recourse to the book of comfort, and found it written, "He was a burning and a shining light : and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light." The next word was for us : "Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest." Even so, come, Lord Jesus, and give us an inheritance among all them that are sanctified !

After her death, they found a memorandum in her handwriting : "On such a day Mr. Wesley came to town ; the next day I received a fresh witness. November 2d. I received, early in the morning, such a manifestation of God's love, as is not to be expressed."

One night, I remember, she told me she knew, while coming to us, we should have that extraordinary power among the bands ; that in the way God had given her a sight of the new Jerusalem. This she did not mention to others, nor indeed many manifestations of Christ, being exceeding jealous lest she should take any glory to herself. O that all who tell what God hath done for their souls, would tell it with like humble reverence !

I met the bands ; a solemn assembly. I cautioned the unstable, and comforted the feeble-minded. My mentioning our sister's release occasioned much thanksgiving to God.

Thur., May 7th. I visited Hannah C., full of love to her Saviour, crying out, "Liberty, liberty ! This is the glorious liberty of God's children. O, who can name the name of Jesus, and not depart from iniquity ? God loves me. God loves every man. Jesus Christ is the Saviour of the whole world."

I could not but observe, and bless God for, this answer to our dying sister's prayer.

At the room, I opened the book on, "And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me." Was I to search after the strongest scriptures for universal redemption, I could not choose so well as Providence chooses for me. God at this time made bare his arm. I knew not how to give over, but continued my discourse till nine. Many witnesses stood forth, and testified God's love to all.

Fri., May 8th. We solemnized the funeral of our sister Hooper, and rejoiced over her with singing; particularly that hymn which concludes,—

"Thus may we all our parting breath
Into the Saviour's hands resign;
O, sister, let *me* die thy death,
And let thy latter end be mine!"

My text was, "Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace." A great multitude attended her to her grave. There we sang another hymn of triumph; and I found myself pressed in spirit to speak to those who contradicted and blasphemed. While I reasoned on death and judgment to come, many trembled; one woman cried out in horrible agony. We returned to the room, and continued our solemn rejoicings, all desiring to be dissolved, and to be with Christ.

Sun., May 10th. I gave the sacrament to the colliers; preached on Elijah's small, still voice; went out into the highways, and concluded the happy day with a feast in Kingswood.

Mon., May 11th. At Downing I explained, "I will heal thy backslidings, I will love thee freely." He who gave the promise, applied it. I was quite melted down by it. Several wept much, and loved much, because they had much forgiven.

Thur., May 14th. I visited our sister Lillington, whom her Saviour had brought to a bed of sickness, before she knew he was *her* Saviour. She told me, two nights ago she saw herself as it were dropping into hell, when suddenly a ray of light was darted into her soul, and filled her with all peace and joy in believing. All fear of hell, death, and sin fled away in that same moment.

I saw two more of our sick sisters ; then two of the brethren in Kingswood, who were all rejoicing in hope of a speedy dissolution. I preached at Kendalshire, and visited one of the bands there, who walked through the valley of the shadow of death, and feared no evil. I prayed by a seventh in Bristol, who laughed at the King of terrors. If God be not with us, who hath begotten us these ?

Fri., May 15th. I saw our sister Lillington again ; still without fear, desiring nothing but to be with Christ. "I never felt," said she, "such love before : I love every soul ; I am all love,—and so is God. He is loving unto every man : He would have all men to be saved."

Sat., May 16th. I visited another of our sisters, who was triumphing over death. I asked her, "Do you know Christ died for you?" "Yes," she answered joyfully, "for me, and for the whole world. He has begun, and he will finish, his work in my soul." "But will he save you," I said, "from *all* sin?" She replied, "I know he will. There shall no sin remain in me."

I was sent for to another, who had lately heard a preacher of reprobation. The tempter would not lose the advantage, and immediately suggested, "You are one of those for whom Christ did not die." This threw her into a fever. I found her dying in despair ; preached the true Gospel, (Gospel to every creature,) prayed, and left her a prisoner of hope.

Whitsunday, May 17th. The fire was kindled while we were singing,

"Bear we witness unto Thee,
Thou thy light to all dost give,
That the world through it may see
Their Saviour, and believe."

One cried out, "It is the truth !" Several found the same constraint of the all-loving Spirit. We blessed the God and Saviour of all men, who never leaves himself without witness, where his true Gospel is preached.

Mon., May 18th. A poor soldier confessed to me, that God had opened his eyes to see his universal love : I was repeating that verse,—

"Arise, O God, arise,
Thy glorious cause maintain;
Hold forth the bloody sacrifice,
For every sinner slain."

By all I can discern, he did in that moment receive the atonement.

I settled the bands in Kingswood. Toward the end, an awful sense of God fell upon us; and we trembled, seeing Him that is invisible.

Tues., May 19th. I am more and more confirmed in the truth by its miserable opposers. I talked lately with Mr. H——, and urged him with this dilemma: "For what did God make this reprobate? to be damned, or to be saved?" He durst not say God made even Judas to be damned, and would not say God made him to be saved. I desired to know for what third end he could make him; but all the answer I could get was, "It is not a fair question."

Next I asked, "Whether he that believeth not shall not be damned, because he believeth not?" "Yes," he answered; and I replied, "Because he believeth not what?" Here he hesitated, and I was forced to help him out with the Apostle's answer, "That they all might be damned who believed not the truth." "What truth," I asked again, "but the truth of the Gospel of *their* salvation? If it is not the Gospel of *their* salvation, and yet they are bound to believe it, then they are bound to believe a lie, under pain of damnation; and the Apostle should have said, 'That they all might be damned who believed not *a lie*.'" This drove him to assert, that no man was damned for *actual* unbelief, but only for what he called *original*; that is, for not believing before he was born. "But where," said I, "is the justice of this?" He answered, not over-hastily, "I confess there is a mystery in reprobation." Or, to put it in Beza's words, which I then read him, "We believe, though it is incomprehensible, that it is just to damn such as do not deserve it."

Farther I asked him, "Why does God command all men everywhere to repent? Why does he call, and offer his grace to, reprobates? Why does his Spirit strive with every child of man for *some* time, though not always?" I could

get no answer, and so read him one of his friend Calvin's : "God speaketh to them, that they may be the deafer ; He gives light to them, that they may be the blinder ; He offers instruction to them, that they may be the more ignorant ; and uses the remedy, that they may *not* be healed." (Calvin, Instit., l. iii., c. 24.)

Never did I meet with a more pitiful advocate of a more pitiful cause. And yet I believe he could say as much for reprobation as another. I told him *his* predestination had got a millstone about its neck, and would infallibly be drowned, if he did not part it from reprobation.

At Kingswood I preached on those much-perverted words, "I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me ;" that is, his Apostles. He does not take in believers of future ages till verse 20. Then in verse 21 he prays for the unbelieving world ; "that," to use Mr. Baxter's words on the place, "by *their* concord, the *world* may be won to Christianity." (Paraphrase on New Testament : see again on verse 23, "That this lustre of their excellency and concord may convince the world that thou hast sent me.") So far is our Lord from not praying for the world *at all*, that in this very chapter he prays once for his first disciples, once for believers in after-ages, and *twice* for the *world* that lieth in wickedness, that the world may *believe*, —that the world may *know*.

He who prays for all men himself, and commands us to pray for all men, was with us, and showed us, with the demonstration of his Spirit, that he is not willing any should perish, but that all should come to the knowledge of the truth, and be saved.

Wed., May 20th. I was called to a dying woman, who confessed she had often railed on me in her health, but was now constrained to send for me, and ask my pardon, or she could not die in peace. We prayed our Lord to speak peace and pardon to her soul. Several such instances have we had of scoffers, when their feet came to stumble on the dark mountains.

Fri., May 22d. I preached a funeral sermon over sister Lillington, and attended her to her grave ; where we rejoiced in hope of quickly following her. I gave an exhortation to repentance, though Satan greatly withstood me ;

thereby teaching me, never to let go unwarned the poor sinners that come on such occasions.

I passed the night with my brother, at Kingswood, in watching unto prayer. I would this primitive custom were revived among all our brethren. The word of God encourages us to be in watchings often. I returned by two to Bristol; and at five found strength to expound in the room.

Sun., May 24th. I preached on Jacob wrestling for the blessing. Many then, I believe, took hold on his strength, and will not let him go, till he bless them, and tell them his name.

I heard my brother at the Mills, and attended him to the Society. We had the cloud on our assembly. A woman was constrained to testify, "God this moment assures me that my pardon is sealed in heaven." The prince of this world was displeased. One of his subjects threw a stone into the room, which had no permission to hurt. We accepted it as a challenge to stay, and continued an hour longer, singing and praising God.

Mon., May 25th. I visited one, who had been grievously tormented with the spirit of reprobation, but now rejoiced on a bed of sickness, free from all fear, and trouble, and *sense* of pain. "I am confident," she said, "that Jesus Christ will finish his work in me. That wicked one toucheth me not. He can no more make me doubt of God's universal love. Jesus is the stronger. He is the Saviour of all mankind. It is a glorious Gospel you preach. I stake my soul upon the truth of it."

While I was passing by the bowling-green, a woman cried out, "The curse of God light upon you," with such uncommon bitterness, that I could not but turn and stop to bless her. When I asked her why she cursed me, she answered, "For preaching against Mr. ———." I had indeed a suspicion, from her dialect, that she was one of the self-elect; but stayed heaping coals of fire upon her head, till at last she said, "God bless you all."

Thur., May 28th. In the evening I expounded Ezek. xviii. Some were grieved, and I myself also, at the necessity laid upon me to convince gainsayers, and not to employ both hands in building. Yet our Lord owned me here also, and the hammer of his word broke the rock of absolute

predestination in pieces. One, who had been long entangled with it, now testified that he had delivered her soul out of the snare of the fowler.

Sat., May 30th. I passed an hour with a spiritual Quaker, and rejoiced to find we were both of the same religion.

Sun., May 31st. Throughout this day I found my strength increase with my labour. Many at the Mills were affected deeply with our Lord's description of his coming to judgment. (Matt. xxiv.)

I read in the Society my account of H. Richardson's death. She, being dead, yet spoke so powerfully to our hearts, that my voice was lost in the sorrowful sighing of such as be in captivity. To several God showed himself the God of consolation also: particularly to two young Welshmen, whom his providence sent hither from Caermarthen. They had heard most dreadful stories of us Arminians, freewillers, perfectionists, Papists; which all vanished like smoke when they came to hear with their own ears. God applied to their hearts the word of his power. I carried them to my lodgings, and stocked them with books, and sent them away, recommended to the grace of God, which bringeth salvation unto all men.

Thur., June 4th. I met with one who *said* she was in the full liberty of the Gospel, and much displeased that I did not acknowledge her: "but the spiritual man is discerned of none, though I discern you; you are justified, but you have not my gifts." Upon my coming closer, she was very abusive, called me "child of the devil," &c., and denounced judgments against our whole Society for not receiving her.

In the evening-Society God wrought wonderfully. I have seldom known such a night. We rejoiced till near midnight with joy unspeakable.

Fri., June 5th. The morning word was as a sharp, two-edged sword, a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart. Mary Stretten, the poor self-deceiver I spoke with yesterday, could not bear it, but cried out, "You are a child of the devil, and your Society are all accursed." I let her speak on, that she might *show* herself; then warned the high-minded, lest they also should fall into the condemnation of the devil. See the false assurance of unbe-

lief, and tremble ! One, in the gall of bitterness, the bond of iniquity, persuades herself that she is in the glorious liberty of the sons of God.

I visited one, who had violently maintained the impossibility of knowing our sins forgiven in this life. But Christ hath taught her better on her death-bed. She was overjoyed to see me. I prayed over her in faith ; and left her calmly waiting for the salvation of God.

I prayed by another of the bands, who has recovered in sickness the confidence she had long lost.

I walked out of town to a third, who lay a-dying, and could not rest till she had seen me. She had been a great opposer of this way, which now she confesses to be the only way of salvation.

I was sent for to rejoice with our brother G., in an high fever. The witness testified, "I come quickly." Therefore consolations did much more abound.

Sat., June 6th. W. H. informed me, that last night he was delivered, under the word, from the snare of predestination.

Mon., June 8th. A woman spoke to me of her husband. He was under strong convictions, while he attended the word ; but the first time he heard the *other Gospel*, came home *elect*, and, in proof of it, *beat his wife*. His seriousness was at an end. His work was done. God doth not behold iniquity in Jacob ; therefore his iniquity and cruelty towards her abound. He uses her worse than a Turk, (his predestinarian brother,) and tells her, if he killed her he could not be damned.

I visited the woman whom I had left waiting for the redemption she had long denied. She cried out at sight of me, "O, blessed be God that ever I heard you ! You have been the saving of my soul." I taught her to speak more exactly. Her faith wrought powerfully by love. Her mouth was full of prayers and blessings. She continued for two days praising God ; and then he took her to himself.

Wed., June 10th. I warned one of the bands, who, by his Ahab-like humility, had deceived many. I prayed our Lord, if he approved my plainness of speech, to give us an answer of peace.

Immediately the spirit of supplication burst forth. We wrestled with God for a blessing on ourselves, on all who

wait for full redemption, on those who blaspheme the glorious liberty of his children. The Spirit made intercession with groans unutterable. Many called upon God out of the deep ; others rejoiced with joy unspeakable, and full assurance that we had the petitions we asked.

Sat., June 13th. Some days since, I was sent for to one whom I had put out of our Society for disorderly walking. He earnestly desired to see me. I found him senseless, and at the point of death, as was supposed. I was surprised to-day at hearing he was still alive, and in his senses. He was overjoyed to see me, and I to find the Lord had again been merciful unto him.

Tues., June 16th. Seeking a sick man, near Hanham, whose name I had forgot, I called at some of the huts for direction. At last a child informed me of one who lay a-dying. It was not the man whom I meant, but whom God meant, and sent me to bring him good news at the eleventh hour.

The woman asked me how Thomas Reed did : the very man I wanted to find, and was now directed to. He was one that had drawn back ; but gladly received me now. No dying man is grieved to hear Christ died for all.

I spoke with one of the bands, most barbarously used by her husband, because she will not forsake God and his people. An hundred times, she said, he has carried a knife to bed with him, to cut her throat. Her soul is alway in her hand. She sleeps in the shadow of death, and fears no evil ; knowing he can have no power over her, except it be given him from above. She ventures her life upon that word, "How knowest thou, O woman, but thou mayest save thy husband?"

I preached in the wood on that dreadful word, "Sell all," never with more assistance. How has the devil baffled those teachers, who, for fear of setting men upon works, forbear urging this *first universal* duty ! If enforcing Christ's own words is to preach works, I hope I shall preach works as long as I live.

Wed., June 17th. I gave the sacrament to our sister Brimble, dying in such strong agonies as I have not seen before, no, not in Hannah Richardson. She had no fear of hell, yet was so deeply convinced of original sin, as made

all who heard her tremble. She could not let go her confidence that God would finish his work in her, though there were so few hours betwixt her and eternity.

We met in Kingswood, to humble our souls with fasting, and deprecate the national judgments. In the evening, God gave me words to stir up some who were settled upon their lees. How long have we called him "Lord, Lord," and not done the things which he bade us, not denied ourselves, and taken up our daily cross!

Thur., June 18th. I visited our brother Haskin's father, at Sison, whom God has showed that he is a sinner, but not yet that he is the chief of sinners. I left him desirous to know even as he is known. Soon after, he entered upon his last agony. By his vehement prayers to the Saviour of sinners, and by the faith which God gave his son, I trust God made a short work in his soul, and received it without spot to himself.

Fri., June 19th. I expounded the fall of Jericho, and felt the truth of every word I spoke. Howel Harris was present; and afterwards confessed to me, that he felt the power by which I spake, restraining him from denying the truth, and filling him with strong desires of its accomplishment.

At the watchnight I preached again on the same subject, with double power. It was a glorious night indeed. We followed the ark, and the shout of a King was in the midst of us.

Mon., June 22d. I visited one of the Society on her death-bed. God sent me to her that she might preach to me. She conjured me not to depart from the word; said, "The Ministers will endure a great fight of afflictions; but go on to preach Christ the Saviour of all men, whose blood cleanseth from all sin. Christ died for all: none can resist this truth. I have not yet attained, but know He will fill up what is lacking in my faith."

Wed., June 24th. I asked her if she had a new heart. She answered, "No; but I shall receive it with the sacrament." After administering, I repeated the question, and she bore witness to the truth: "Every one that is perfect shall be as his Master." God, she said, had then taken away the evil heart, and she had no sin remaining in her. I told her that time and temptation would show.

Thur., June 25th. I found her still the same, declaring she had felt no motion of evil or self-will since the occasion of stumbling, as she thinks, was taken away.

Fri., June 26th. Suky Harding informed me, that Howel Harris, coming from the room that night to her master's, had stopped their railings, saying, he would hear nothing against his brother Wesleys, for they were true Ministers of Christ, and children of God. He confessed, before a large company of our enemies, he had found such power under the word, that his soul was lifted up to the third heaven; he longed to be free from sin, which he hated; he lay open to the light; "and if," said he, "the Scriptures say Christ died for all, I will say so too." By many such words he utterly confounded them. But who can touch pitch, and not be defiled? The very next day he came, and threatened to declare against me as a deceiver.

Sun., June 28th. A day much to be remembered. I preached in Bristol on repentance; at Kendalshire on temptation, with more life. My strength increased with my work; so that in the afternoon I was filled with power; and again at Baptist-mills.

Last night Howel Harris told me he would come to our Society. I bade him come in God's name. We were singing,

"Thee triumphantly we praise,
Vie with all thy hosts above;
Shout thine universal grace,
Thine everlasting love;"

when W. Hooper, by my order, brought him. I prayed according to God; gave out an hymn which we might all join in. The hand of the Lord was upon me. I asked Howel whether he had a mind to speak, and sat by for half an hour, while he gave an account of his conversion by *irresistible grace*, mixing with his experience the impossibility of falling, God's unchangeableness, &c. I could not but observe the ungenerousness of my friend; and after hearing him long and patiently, was moved to rise up, and ask in the name of Jesus, "Ye that are spiritual, doth the Spirit which is in you suffer me still to keep silence, and let my brother go on? Can I do it without bringing the blood of these souls upon me?" A woman

first cried out, (Mrs. Rawlins, I think,) "The wounds of Jesus answer, 'No.'" Then many others repeated, "No, no, no;" and a whole cloud of witnesses arose, declaring, "Christ died for all!"

I asked again, "Would you have my brother Harris proceed, or would you not? If you would hear him, I will be silent all night." Again they forbade me in strong words; upon which I gave out,

"Break forth into joy,
Your Comforter sing," &c.

They did break forth as the voice of many waters, or mighty thunderings. O what a burst of joy was there in the midst of us! The God and Saviour of all men magnified his universal love.

Howel Harris would have entered into dispute, but was stopped. "Then," said he, "you thrust me out." "No," said I, "we do not: you are welcome to stay as long as you please. We acknowledge you a child of God." Yet again he began, "If you do not believe irresistible grace;" and I cut off the sentence of reprobation which I foresaw coming, with,

"Praise God, from whom pure blessings flow,
Whose bowels yearn on *all* below:
Who would not have one sinner lost;
Praise Father, Son, and Holy Ghost."

Here Mr. Labbe pulled him away, and carried him from us. We betook ourselves to prayer, in which the Spirit wonderfully helped our infirmities. Great was the company, both of mourners and rejoicers. We perceived God had taken the matter into his own hand, and was arose to maintain his own cause. My mouth, and all their hearts, were opened. I spake as I never spake before, and all agreed in one testimony. John Doleman, and Francis Vigor, a young Quaker, received forgiveness of sins; and all that knew Christ, an increase of faith and love.

I acknowledged the grace given to our dear brother Harris, and excused his estrangement from me through the wickedness of his counsellors. I spake, I know not what, words of exhortation and instruction.

The Spirit of their Father spake in many; and this I

have found since, that just when I began to stop Howel, several felt in themselves that the time was come ; and, if I had deferred it, would themselves have rebuked the madness of the Prophet.

Mon., June 29th. I called on a sister in Bath, and exhorted a few to "save themselves from this untoward generation." At their desire I opened the Scripture, and warned them from the first words, "Depart, I pray you, from the tents of these wicked men, and touch nothing of theirs, lest ye be consumed in all their sins." (Num. xvi. 26.)

Sat., July 4th. While the letters were reading,* we had a glimpse of the felicity of God's chosen, and rejoiced in the gladness of his people, and gave thanks with his inheritance.

I visited a dying woman, who fell upon me with revilings for not coming sooner to give her the sacrament. She went on so violently, that I feared her last breath would go in curses. I hoped she was not in her senses ; but the attendants assured me this was her language continually. She had no trouble about her soul. When I told her she would be lost if she died unchanged, she answered, "You will go to hell before me." I could not account for it, till they told me she was a constant hearer of the predestinarians. We joined in prayer for her ; and God gave us a faint spark of hope.

Tues., July 7th. I visited her a second time, and perceived the strong man was bound : if so, he may be cast out. This is the Lord's doing.

I prayed by another who had been exceeding mad against Christ and his people. But the fierce persecutor is now struck to the ground, and asks, "Lord, what wouldest thou have me to do?" I doubt not but the scales will fall from his eyes before they are closed in death.

I received an earnest invitation to Cardiff, where some are fallen asleep, and some turned back into Egypt.

Fri., July 10th. I spent most of the afternoon in reading Gell on the Pentateuch. Never man, uninspired, spake as

* The Wesleys and Mr. Whitefield were all in the habit of reading in their religious meetings extracts from the letters of their correspondents, relative to the progress of the Gospel in various parts of the world.—EDIT.

this man speaks. I wonder where the devil has hid him so long. But the good providence which has put him into our hands, will now, I trust, "set him on a candlestick, that he may shine to all that are in the house."

Sat., July 11th. I preached at Bristol, then among the colliers, a third time at Bath, a fourth at Sawford, and yet again in the Wood. Let God have the glory. Preaching five times a day, when he calls me to it, no more wearies the flesh than preaching once.

Satan took it ill to be attacked in his head-quarters, that Sodom of our land, Bath. While I was explaining the trembling jailer's question, he raged horribly in his children. They went out, and came back again, and mocked, and at last roared, as if each man's name was Legion. My power increased with the opposition. The sincere were melted into tears and strong desires of salvation.

Sun., July 12th. I preached from Titus ii. 11, &c. The power and seal of God is never wanting while I declare the *two great truths* of the everlasting Gospel, universal redemption and Christian perfection.

At Kingswood I received Jane Sheep into the fold by baptism, which she felt in that moment to be for the remission of sins.

Mon., July 13th. I set out with our brother Hooper, and by three reached Cardiff. At six I met, and laboured to stir up, the Society; and the Lord was with my mouth.

Tues., July 14th. I warned them against apostasy, from 1 Cor. x. I preached in the afternoon to the prisoners, "How shall I give thee up, O Ephraim?" Above twenty were felons. The word melted them down. Many tears were shed at the singing that,

"Outcasts of men, to you I call," &c.

At night, for near three hours, I described the grace of God which bringeth salvation to all men.

Wed., July 15th. I encouraged them to expect salvation from indwelling sin by that blessed promise, "Who art thou, O great mountain? before Zerubbabel thou shalt become a plain."

I rode to Wenvo, and asked my brother Hodges if he had forbid letting me preach. He told me his church, while he

had one, should be always open to me. It was full at so short a warning. I read prayers, and preached from Isai. lii. : "Awake, awake ; put on thy strength, O Zion," &c.

I rode on five miles farther with Mr. Wells, Hodges, and others, to Fommon-Castle. Mr. Jones, who had sent for me, received me very courteously. He civilly apologized for his first questions which he asked me as a Magistrate, whether I was a Papist, whether a member of the established Church of England, &c. ; was fully satisfied with my answers, and found we were cotemporaries at the same College.

After dinner he sent to Porthkerry ; where, at his desire, the Minister lent me his pulpit. After Mr. Richards had made him a promise of it, he sent again, desiring him to act without bias or constraint, by either granting or refusing the church, as his conscience directed.

I read prayers, and preached "God so loved the world." God was amongst us, and a mighty tempest was stirred up round about Him. He shook many souls out of their carnal security. Never hath He given me more convincing words. The poor simple souls fell down at the feet of Jesus. Their shepherd, also, was deeply affected, and hid his face, and wept ; especially while I was praying for him. After sermon he begged my pardon for believing the strange reports concerning me. God had spoke the contrary to his heart, and the hearts of his people ; for, when we were gone out of the church, it was still filled with the cries of the wounded.

I yielded to Mr. Jones's importunity, and agreed to delay my return to Bristol, that I might preach here once more, and pass a night at the Castle. Mr. Richards pressed me first to come to his house.

I hastened back to Cardiff, and, in great bodily weakness, showed unawakened sinners their state in dead Lazarus. The word was quick and powerful.

Thur., July 16th. I discoursed on Lazarus raised. I dined at Lanissan, and preached to the Society and a few others, chiefly predestinarians. Without touching the dispute, I simply declared the scriptural marks of election ; whereby some, I believe, were cut off from their vain confidence. The sincere ones clave to me. Who can resist

the power of love? A loving messenger of a loving God might drive reprobation out of Wales, without once naming it.

In the evening, at Cardiff, Mr. Wells and Hodges shamed me by patiently sitting by to hear *me* preach. My subject was, "Wrestling Jacob." Some whole sinners were offended at the sick and wounded, who cried out for a Physician : but such offences must needs come.

Fri., July 17th. I expounded the woman healed of her bloody issue. The power of the Lord was present. We took leave of each other with many tears ; and I earnestly exhorted them to continue in the grace of God.

I dropped most of my company on the road, that I might meet Mr. Jones at Mr. Richards's. He came with Mrs. Jones ; and was met by a Minister whom, with some others, he had invited to his house, with a view of reconciling them to me. None but Mr. Carne accepted his invitation. His address was not so smooth as theirs who dwell in Kings' palaces ; but I said little till I could speak as one having authority. With difficulty Mr. Jones restrained him from breaking out.

He flew out on sight of the multitude in the churchyard, and a motion made for my preaching there. It was then proposed to take down one of the windows, that those without might hear : but, on Mr. Carne's again threatening to go away, we went into the church, as many as could, and the rest stood without.

Mr. Carne stood up all the prayers and sermon-time. The First Lesson was a remarkable word to me : "Then said I, Ah, Lord God ! behold, I cannot speak : for I am a child. But the Lord said unto me, Say not, I am a child : for thou shalt go to all that I shall send thee, and whatsoever I command thee thou shalt speak. Be not afraid of their faces : for I am with thee to deliver thee, saith the Lord. Then the Lord put forth his hand, and touched my mouth. And the Lord said, Behold, I have put my words in thy mouth. Thou therefore gird up thy loins, and arise, and speak unto them all that I command thee : be not dismayed at their faces, lest I confound thee before them. For, behold, I have made thee this day a defenced city, and an iron pillar, and brazen walls : and they shall fight against

thee, but they shall not prevail against thee : for I am with thee, saith the Lord, to deliver thee." (Jer. i.)

The Second Lesson was John v. The Psalms, also, spake nothing but encouragement. I expected that to be now fulfilled, "Show some token for good upon thy servant, that they who hate me may see it, and be ashamed, because thou, Lord God, hast holpen and comforted me."

I never read prayers with more inward feeling. Like strength was given me to explain the "good Samaritan" for two hours. Out of the abundance of my heart my mouth spake. Great was the company of mourners, whose tears God put into his bottle ; and they shall reap in joy.

I could not help smiling at Mr. Carne, who had come, as he said, on purpose to judge me ; and his judgment was, "Sir, you have got very good lungs : but you will make the people melancholy. I saw them crying throughout the church." Then he turned on Mr. Jones, and told him he would make himself ridiculous all over the country by encouraging such a fellow. I was afraid of despising him, and therefore passed on, and left them together. Mr. Jones almost overcame his evil with good, but could not prevail upon him to come under the same roof with me.

However, the poor people were glad to accept of his invitation to hear me again at the Castle. We ate our bread with gladness and singleness of heart : and at seven I preached to some hundreds in the court-yard. My three brethren, Richards, Wells, and Hodges, stood in the midst of them, knelt on the ground in prayer, and cried after the Son of David. He breathed into our souls strong desires. O that he may confirm, increase, and satisfy them !

The voice of praise and thanksgiving was heard in this dwelling-place. Before, at, and after supper we sang, and blessed God with joyful lips. Those in the parlour and kitchen were continually honouring, by offering him praise. I thought it looked like the house of faithful Abraham. We called our brethren of Kingswood to be present with us in spirit, and continued rejoicing with them till morning.

Sat., July 18th. I took sweet counsel with Mr. Jones alone. The seed is sown in his heart, and shall bring forth

fruit unto perfection. His wife, a simple, innocent creature, joined us. I commended them to the grace of God in earnest prayer, and then, with my Cardiff friends, went on my way rejoicing.

I consented, that some should ask Mr. Coldrach for the use of his pulpit. He civilly answered, that he would readily grant it, but the Bishop had forbade him. "Doth our law judge any man before it hear him, and know what he doeth?"

At two I set out for the Passage. The boat was just ready for us. By nine I found my brother at the room, the Lord having blessed both my going out and my coming in.

Thur., July 23d. I was sent for by a predestinarian that *was* till death approached. Her miserable comforters she would none of now, but said, "Blessed be him that cometh in the name of the Lord and Saviour of all men."

I visited one of our own flock, a joyful prisoner of hope. The Lord, when he came, found her watching for that great salvation.

I reprov'd an invincible Pharisee at Mr. Farley's, whose whole discourse is of herself. She told us, as she does all the world, how often she goes to prayers and sacrament, how many sermons she hears, what good she does, &c. She breathes out threatenings and woes against our Society, for not acknowledging her gifts. "God loves no one upon earth as well as her." Never have I seen a professor more full of pride, and self, and the devil: yet she pretends to the full assurance of faith.

Sat., July 25th. We met at ten to pray for a blessing on my brother's sermon, which he is preaching at this hour before the University.

Sun., July 26th. Our hope was much confirmed by those words which I enforced at Kingswood, "Stand still, and see the salvation of the Lord;" or, as it is afterwards expressed, "Speak unto the children of Israel, that they go forward."

I discoursed in the afternoon on the same subject, from Isai. lxiv. 5: "Thou meetest—those that remember thee in thy ways," &c. Hence I magnified the law of Christian ordinances, exhorting those who wait for salvation, to be as

clay in the hand of the potter, *by* stirring themselves up to lay hold on the Lord. God gave me much freedom to explain that most active, vigorous, restless thing, true stillness.

I preached a fourth time at the Mills, and a fifth time in the room, on the one thing needful.

Mon., July 27th. The neighbourhood of the fair fills our room with strangers. Again God put his words in my mouth, and set me to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down : to build also, and to plant, if it be his blessed will concerning me.

Tues., July 28th. God be praised, there is some ground for that complaint of a predestinarian, that the plague of perfection reigns at Bristol, and many of the Welsh catch it. O that all mankind were infected with this plague ! if it is a plague to be healed of every plague.

One serious youth I spake with to-day, who did run well : but from the time that he was persuaded to believe there was no falling after justification, he did begin to fall, as he now confesses, into carelessness, self-indulgence, and at last into known sin.

Fri., July 31st. Still by patience, and comfort of God's holy word, many daily lay hold on eternal life. He gave us this night strong consolation. O that in the strength thereof we might travel to his holy mountain !

Sun., August 2d. In my way to Kingswood, I met Mr. Wynn, of Painswick, who informed me, that when I was last there, a word I directed to another on a sick bed was applied to him ; and he, in that moment, received remission of sins. He had heard of nothing farther, and yet wanted something more, he knew not what, till God sent him hither. Now he rejoices in hope of redemption from all iniquity.

I got unawares with my chaise among the coal-pits. We were going to alight, when the horse started, and overturned us. I leaped over both horse and chaise ; but our sister Gaseath was thrown out upon her head, and the chaise turned topsy-turvy over her. She lay between the wheels, untouched by either ; the horse lay quiet upon his back. We all rose unhurt. Thou, Lord, shalt save both man and beast : how excellent is thy mercy !

I preached a funeral sermon over our sister Rachel Peacock, who died in the Lord most triumphantly. She had had continual joy in the Lord, which made her cry out, "Though I groan, I feel no pain at all : Christ so rejoices and fills my heart." Her mouth also was filled with laughter, and her tongue with joy. She sang hymns incessantly. "Christ," said she, "is in my heart, and one minute with the Lord is worth a million of ages. O how brave it is to banquet with the Lamb !"

She was always praising God for giving her such patience. All her desires were unto the Lord, and she continued calling upon him, in all the confidence of love, till he received her into his more immediate presence.

At the sight of her coffin, my soul was moved within me, and struggled as a bird to break its cage. Some relief I found in tears, but still was so overpowered, that, unless God had abated the vehemence of my desires, I could have had no utterance. The whole congregation partook with me in the blessedness of mourning.

Mon., August 3d. I visited our sister Reed, on a bed of sickness. All her doubts and fears are vanished at the approach of death, and she rejoices in confident hope that the Lord will sanctify her wholly, before he takes her hence.

Wed., August 5th. I saw our brother Stanley, in the same, if not an higher, state, dying with eternal life abiding in him.

Thur., August 6th. To-night God shook many souls by the word of his power. My subject was the pool of Bethesda.

Coming to pray by a poor Welshwoman, she began with me, "Blessed be God that ever I heard you ! Jesus, *my* Jesus, has visited me on a bed of sickness. He is in my heart. He is my strength. None shall pluck me out of his hand. I cannot leave him, and he will not leave me." It was the spirit of her Father that spoke in her : "O, do not let me ask for death, if thou wouldst have me live. I know thou canst keep me from ever sinning more. If thou wouldst have me live, let me walk humbly with thee all my days."

I sat and heard her sing the new song, till even my hard heart was melted. She glorified the Saviour of the world, who would have all men to be saved. "I know it, I feel

it," said she : " He would not have one sinner lost. Believe, and he will give you all what he hath given me."

Sun., August 9th. I gave her the sacrament, which she had never received before ; but was taught to desire it by the Spirit that was in her, even as soon as she had received him. I asked what difference she found *after* communicating. She answered, that she saw God and was full of him before ; but in the act of receiving, she had the brightness of his presence, and was filled, as it were, with all the fulness of God.

Fri., August 14th. I went after a stray sheep, who was turned out of the way by the predestinarians ; but the good Shepherd had found her himself, and brought her home rejoicing. For some days she had been under the full influence of that narrow opinion, and could not bear any of her brethren and sisters. Then she cried unto the Lord to show her the truth, and he answered her by his own mouth. The true light broke in upon her, and in his light she saw that God is love. She is now humbled in the dust before him, for having "robbed him of his most darling attribute."

Our Kingswood school was crowded with those that came from all parts to the watchnight. I enforced our Lord's words, "Have faith in God ;" and indeed we had. The spirit of faith was poured out. Many were there who could not keep it in, but out of the abundance of their heart their mouth spake. I triumphed till the morning with the voice of joy and thanksgiving, among such as keep holiday.

Mon., August 17th. I visited one who was forsaking the fellowship, when God arrested her in her flight by sickness, convinced, condemned, and justified her again. It is good for her to have been in trouble, since thereby He has plucked her as a brand out of the fire.

Sat., August 22d. While I was declaring, at Sawford, "He shall save his people from their sins," the enemy stirred up his servants to great fierceness of opposition. But we defied them in the name of the Lord, who first restrained, and then stilled, the madness of the people.

Mon., August 24th. I took horse with F. Farley for Wales. In the passage, I read on, while some gentlemen

mocked. At last the chief of them asked, "What are you reading? Let us have a little with you." I read on the words that followed: "And, behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be." This struck a damp upon them, and silenced them in a moment; so that we reached the land without farther molestation.

The assizes brought many strangers to the Society in Cardiff, before whom I declared, "Other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ." Some, I doubt not, were enabled to receive the strange things I brought to their ears.

Tues., August 25th. I found at five this morning, by the return of the strangers, that the word had not fallen to the ground.

I found our dear friend and brother at Wenvo, nothing terrified by his adversaries. Their threats, instead of shaking, have more deeply rooted him in the truth.

They have had the same effect upon Mr. Jones. The poor prodigals who are not yet come to themselves, say of him, that he is beside himself: but he is content that they fools should count his life madness; only, when any of them come in his way, he speaks such words of truth and soberness as they cannot resist.

For three hours we sang, rejoiced, and gave thanks; then rode to Porthkerry, where I read prayers, and discoursed near two hours on the pool of Bethesda. The whole congregation were in tears.

I returned to the castle, and met some hundreds of the poor neighbours in our chapel, the dining-room. I exhorted them to build up one another, from Mal. iii. 16-18: "Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another," &c. At ten we departed. We kept on rejoicing till one in the morning.

Wed., August 26th. I prayed by a dying woman, who waits for redemption from *all* iniquity *here*; otherwise, she knows she cannot see God. About noon I applied, at John Deer's Society, "But ye are washed, but ye are sanctified," &c. Never have I spoke more closely to those who rest in the first gift. Some, who seemed to be pillars, begin to find themselves shaken reeds.

I preached again in Wenvo church, and at night in Cardiff.

Thur., August 27th. Great power was among us, while I spake on the walls of Jericho falling down; but much greater at the prison, where I recommended to two condemned malefactors the example of the penitent thief. Both were melted into tears. The congregation sympathized, and joined in fervent prayer, that our Lord would remember them, now he is come into his kingdom.

I went to a revel at Lanvane, and dissuaded them from their *innocent* diversions, in St. Peter's words: "For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries." An old dancer of threescore fell down under the stroke of the hammer. She could never be convinced before that there was any harm in those innocent pleasures. O that all her fellows might likewise confess, "She that liveth in pleasures is dead while she liveth."

I prayed by a poor persecutor, who had found mercy at the last hour; then expounded Ezekiel's vision of dry bones. A poor drunkard spoke the whole time, but without interrupting me or the congregation; for the hand of the Lord was over us.

Fri., August 28th. I preached again in Porthkerry church. Many cried after Jesus, with the woman of Canaan. It was a time of great refreshing. I returned in the coach with Mr. and Mrs. Jones, and a little girl of eight years old, who has not outlived the simple life, or that breath of God, which is the first enmity to the seed of the subtle serpent.

At six I expounded Isai. liii. in the court-yard, and was greatly assisted to purge out the leaven of Calvin. I spent the evening in conference with those who desired to be of the Society, which was now begun in the name of Jesus Christ the Saviour of all men. I sang and prayed with them till ten; with the family till midnight.

Sat., August 29th. I preached our Lord's seven last cries on the cross, and spoke to the men under sentence of death. God showed my thoughts were not as his thoughts; for the most hardened, whom I had least hopes of, appeared truly

justified. He told Mr. Wells and me he was quite easy, had no fear of death, no ill-will to his prosecutors. "But had you never any fear of it?" I asked. "Yes," he replied, "till I heard you preach: then it went away, and I have felt no trouble ever since."

Who knoweth the power of divine love? O gather this outcast of men, and show forth in him that thine arm is not shortened at all!

I took horse with Mr. Wynn and Farley; reached the Passage by seven, the English shore by nine, and Bristol before midnight.

Mon., August 31st. I met with a sincere woman, who did verily believe my brother to be a Papist, because, when she asked him, he did not deny it. I asked her, "Are you a Turk?—Yes; for you do not answer, 'No.'" I showed her from hence the folly of her conclusion. Would a Jesuit scruple to lie? However, I assured her now my brother was a true Protestant; and if it would be any farther satisfaction to her, should tell her so himself.

I met the Kingswood bands, and rejoiced in their steadfastness; none having turned either to the right hand or the left, either to stillness or predestination.

Wed., September 2d. I was sent for to Miss Gr., who has had no rest in her flesh since she left us Papists to follow Calvin. She often longed to return, and would sometimes come by stealth to hear the word. The first time her mother heard of it, she turned her out of doors, and has ever since treated her with true predestinarian meekness. All her relations joined in the same spirit; so that at last, by their oppression, they have fairly drove her distracted.

Now they sent for me in all haste. Never did I see a more pitiable spectacle. She was altogether untractable to them, but did just whatever I desired her. I led her to her chamber, and returned to Mr. Hooper's; but at midnight we were waked by her shrieks, and I was sent for again. She lay in a manner inexpressible. Such outcries and distortions I have never heard or seen. Every breath they thought would be her last. She prayed to the Virgin Mary, Queen of Heaven, in words which I am sure the devil taught her; for she had never seen a mass-book.

How justly does God suffer this stumbling-block for those who have been continually suggesting to her the lies which they now believe!

I rebuked the lying spirit, and prayed the one Mediator, in his time, to bring her out of the furnace. This her relations afterwards represented as "unbewitching her."

Thur., September 3d. I preached a second time at the prison on the lost sheep, for the sake of a poor woman under condemnation; and the next day, September 4th, on Christ crucified. His dying words came with power to many hearts, being applied by his own Spirit.

Sat., September 5th. I heard that Justice Cr——, and forty more, both the great vulgar and the small, had seized upon Mr. Cennick's house, and threatened to take ours on Tuesday next. They forget whose bridle is in their jaws.

Sun., September 6th. I preached morning and afternoon at Kingswood on our Lord's last cries; which sunk into the souls of many. At Baptist-mills I administered that antidote of spiritual pride, 1 Cor. x.

I was astonished by a letter from my brother, relating his conference with the Apostle of the Moravians.*

If thou art he; but O, how fallen!—Who would believe it of C. Z., that he should utterly deny all Christian holiness? I never could, but for a saying of his, which I heard with my own ears. Speaking of St. James's Epistle, he said, "If it was thrown out of the canon, *ego non restituerem!*"

Mon., September 7th. I would have preached at Newgate to the poor penitent thief, but Satan hindered. Thou fool! it is now too late; the prey is plucked out of thy teeth. Jesus hath found his lost sheep, and brought her home rejoicing. She was a sinner; but she *is* justified.

I went after another, a backslider, who had returned to folly, and all outward wickedness. Now in her adversity she considered. God, who lifteth up them that are fallen, returned to her in sickness; and she hears the rod, and him that appointeth it.

Tues., September 8th. Being commended by the church

* The "conference" which is here referred to is given at large by the Rev. John Wesley, in his printed Journal, under the date of September 3d, 1741.—EDIT.

to the grace of God, I took horse at four with W. Hooper, for the Passage. I preached Christ crucified at Caldicut, to an house full of simple souls, though wet through with the hard rain. But I live by the Gospel. What would *kill* another, shall not *hurt* a Minister. By six God brought us safe to Cardiff, where we rejoiced with the little flock, in the sure word of life and grace through Christ Jesus.

Wed., September 9th. I preached to the two condemned malefactors, and found them in the passage from death to life eternal.

I rode by Wenvo to Fommon, and rejoiced with that household of faith. I went to fetch our little Society from Aberthaw, and returned, singing, to the castle. I explained the Apostle's answer to the jailer: "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved." God gave me words to awaken some, who were lulled fast asleep by the opiate of final perseverance.

Thur., September 10th. I read prayers at Porthkerry, and applied our Lord's words, Matt. xi. 5: "The blind receive their sight," &c.

I preached again, from Acts iii., to the self-righteous predestinarians chiefly. Some of them afterwards complained to me, that I should say, if they fell from grace after justification, they had better never have been justified at all. *Hinc illæ lachrymæ.* I cannot allow them Christ's righteousness for a cloak to their sins.

Fri., September 11th. I besought my guilty brethren at Cardiff, especially those who are to be executed to-morrow, to be reconciled unto God. I set out directly for Llantrissant, eight Welsh miles from Cardiff, and pointed them to the Son of man lifted up, "that whosoever believeth on him might not perish, but have everlasting life." I hasted back, shifted my wet clothes, and attended Mr. Wells and Thomas to the prison. I asked one of the malefactors, "Are you afraid to die?" "No," he answered; "I should rejoice to die this moment." Both behaved as believing penitents. We had strong consolation in prayer; the amen and answer of God in our hearts.

Sat., September 12th. I had only time at the Society to offer up a prayer for the prisoners. At five I went to them; the Sheriff being resolved to hurry them away at six, some

hours before the usual time. He would hardly let them stay to receive the sacrament. Then he ordered them out, not allowing time to strike off their fetters.

They were very calm and composed, nothing afraid of death, or its consequences. One of them assured me, if it was now left to his choice, he would rather die than live. I asked the reason, and he answered, "Was I to be any longer in this world, I might sin again." He also acknowledged that his punishment was just, not on account of the theft for which he was condemned, (as to which he persisted in his innocency to the last,) but for another offence of the same sort, for which the justice of *man* had never taken hold of him.

Mr. Wells rode by the side of the cart; Mr. Thomas and I with the criminals in it. The Sheriff's hurry often endangered our being overturned, but could not hinder our singing, till we came to the place of execution. I spoke a few minutes to the people from Gal. iii. 13: "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law," &c. Still I could not observe the least sign of fear or trouble on either of the dying men. They confessed their steadfast faith in Christ crucified; and are now, I make no doubt, with Him in paradise.

I preached at night to a numerous congregation of gentry and others. God gives me favour in their sight. O that I could make them displeased with themselves!

Sun., September 13th. I preached at Cardiff, then at Wenvo; the third time at Porthkerry, and the last at Fonmon. The remainder of the night we passed admonishing one another in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs.

Mon., September 14th. We sang on till two; then I rode to a revel at Dennis-Powis. It was one of the greatest in the country; but is now dwindled down to nothing. I preached Jesus, the Saviour of his people from their sins. We rejoiced in hope of his great salvation.

Tues., September 15th. I was at another famous revel in Whitechurch, which lasts a week, and is honoured with the presence of the gentry and Clergy, far and near, I put myself in their way, and called, "Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light." I trust there was a great awakening among the

dead souls. So again at Cardiff, while I showed the state of modern Christians in the church of Laodicea.

Wed., September 16th. I exhorted the Society in private. One accursed thing is discovered, and removed,—their abominably wicked custom of selling on Sundays.

I kept a watchnight at Fonmon, and expounded the ten virgins. We continued singing and rejoicing till two in the morning. O that all the world were partakers with us!

Fri., September 18th. I rose at six, and took leave of our dear sister, who cheerfully parted with Mr. Jones, to visit our beloved colliers.

Sat., September 19th. After exhorting and praying with the Society at Cardiff, I set out with Mr. Jones and Williams for Bristol. Thither the Lord brought us by seven in the evening, after a delightful journey.

Sun., September 20th. Most of the Society were at St. James's sacrament.

I carried Mr. Jones to Kingswood, where the Lord was mightily present in his own ordinance. At Baptist-mills I expounded the bloody issue. Great disturbance was made behind me, till I turned upon the disturbers, and by the law first, and then the Gospel, entirely silenced them.

It was a glorious time at the Society, where God called forth his witnesses. Our guest was filled with consolation, and acknowledged that God was with us of a truth.

I introduced him to the Leaders of the colliers, with whom he had sweet fellowship. I met the bands, and strongly urged them to press toward the mark. I read them a letter full of threatenings to take our house by violence. Immediately the power came down, and we laughed all our enemies to scorn. Faith saw the mountain full of horsemen and chariots of fire. Our brother from Wales was compelled to bear his testimony, and declare before all what God had done for his soul. "At that time, when the power of the Holy Ghost so overshadowed him," he assured them "all bodily sufferings would have been as nothing. Neither would they feel them, if made partakers of the Holy Ghost, in the *same measure*."

He warned us to prepare for the storm, which would surely fall upon us if the work of God went on. His artless words were greatly blessed to us all; and our hearts

were bowed and warmed by the Spirit of love, as the heart of one man.

Tues., September 22d. He would have carried me to some great friends of his in the city ; and particularly to a Counsellor, about the threatened seizure. I feared nothing but helping myself, and trusting to an arm of flesh. Our safety is to sit still. However, at his importunity, I went with him a little way ; but stopped, and turned him back, and at last agreed to accompany him to Justice Cr——, the most forward of our adversaries.

He received us courteously. I said, I came to wait upon him in respect to his office, having heard his name mentioned among some who were offended at the good we did to the poor colliers ; that I should be sorry to give any just cause of complaint, and willing to know from himself if such had been given ; that many idle reports were spread, as if he should countenance the violence of those who had seized Mr. Cennick's house, and now threatened to take away the colliers' school.

I caught up an expression he dropped, that it would make a good workhouse ; and said, "It is a workhouse already." "Ay, but what work is done there?" "We work the works of God, which man cannot hinder." "But you occasion the increase of our poor." "Sir, you are misinformed : the reverse of that is true. None of our Society is chargeable to you : even those who were so before they heard us, or who spent all their wages at the alehouse, now never go there at all, but keep their money to maintain their families ; and have to give to those that want. Notorious swearers have now only the praises of God in their mouths. The good done among them is indisputable : our worst enemies cannot deny it. None who hears us continues either to swear or drink." "If I thought so," he hastily replied, *in eodem luto hæsitans*, "I would come and hear you myself." I desired he would ; said, the grace of God was as sufficient for him as for our colliers ; and who knew but he might be converted among us ?

I gave him to know, Mr. Jones was in the commission ; who then asked him on what pretence they had seized Mr. Cennick's house. He utterly denied his having had any hand in it : (his own servant, by the way, was one of the

foremost in pulling up the hedge, &c. ;) said, he should not at all concern himself, "for if what you do, you do for gain, you have your reward ; if for the sake of God, he will recompense you. I am of Gamaliel's mind : ' If this counsel or work be of men, it will come to nought.' " " ' But if it be of God,' " I proceeded, " ' ye cannot overthrow it, lest haply ye be found to fight against God.' Follow therefore Gamaliel's advice : take heed to yourselves ; ' refrain from these men, and let them alone.' "

He seemed determined so to do : and thus, through the blessing of God, we parted friends.

In our way home, I admired that hand which directs all our paths. I rejoiced at Bristol to hear that God had laid hold on poor William, Mr. Jones's man, who is under strong convictions of sin, and continually in tears. In the evening we found, under the word, that " there is none like unto the God of Jeshurun." It was a time of sweet refreshment. Just when I had concluded, my brother came in from London, as if sent on purpose to be comforted together with us. He exhorted and prayed with the congregation for another half-hour. Then we went to our friend Vigor's, and for an hour or two longer our souls were satisfied as with marrow and fatness, while our mouth praised God with joyful lips.

PART VII.

FROM JANUARY 2D, 1743, TO DECEMBER 31ST, 1743.*

SUNDAY, January 2d, 1743. I rode to Bexley, and discoursed in the church from Luke i. : " Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people." God gave me to speak in mild love ; and some of the most rebellious began to melt into convictions.

I returned to town, and expounded the barren fig-tree at the Foundery. Their hearts were bowed as the heart of one man.

Mon., January 3d. I preached at Brentford, and stirred up the little Society to " look unto Jesus, the Author and

* There is a chasm of Mr. Charles Wesley's Journal from September 22d, 1741, to January 2d, 1743.—EDIT.

Finisher of their faith." A young man came, and fell down, very innocently, on his knees to ask my blessing, because, he said, I was his spiritual father, faith having come by hearing me one of the last times I preached here.

I rode on to Eton, where I exhorted a few sincere souls to bear their Saviour's cross, and suffer patiently for his sake.

Wed., January 5th. In the evening I came with George Badiley to Bristol.

Fri., January 7th. I visited sister Edgcomb, triumphing over death, and waiting every moment for full redemption.

Sat., January 8th. I spoke with one who thinks she has already attained : I think not. The event will show.

I met Sus. Design's band, with the three Quakers, and an extraordinary presence of God among them.

Sun., January 9th. I kept a love-feast at Kingswood. As soon as we met the spirit of prayer fell upon us, and we were filled with comfort.

Tues., January 11th. I set out for London at three in the morning, and reached it, God being my helper, the next day.

Fri., January 14th. I visited the condemned malefactors in Newgate, and was locked in by the turnkey, not with them, but in the yard. However, I stood upon a bench, and they climbed up to the windows of their cells ; so that all could hear my exhortation and prayer.

The Lord was with us at our public intercession ; from which I went to visit the sick. I was much refreshed by our dying brother Milbourne, whose whole cry was, "Come, Lord Jesus, come quickly."

At night I was comforted with all the Society by an account of our sister Pike's departure in the Lord.

Sat., January 15th. I went to Newgate, and was refused admittance. One Townsend thrust me away, though I showed him the Sheriff's order. I was let in by another keeper, the only one who has a spark of humanity, and preached through the grates, as before. A Romish Priest was there, having free egress and regress ; but a Clergyman of the Church of England must not hope for the like favour.

Sun., January 16th. I communicated at St. Paul's. In

going up to the table I met one who had behaved very untowardly. He said, with the look of the publican, "I repent." My heart was filled with consolation and prayer for him. O that I might have the same joy in all who have grieved me by their backslidings!

I felt an unusual weight at our love-feast, till the death of our brother Milbourne revived me. A brother related that he had caught hold on him with his convulsed hands, and said, "I have neither doubt nor fear; but my spirit rejoices continually in God my Saviour. He has done more for my soul than tongue can utter." The like words he had said to me; whom he kissed, and could hardly part with. He was sure, he declared, that his Lord would just then receive him. Even when speechless, he showed all the tokens of happiness, and died like a lamb of Jesus's fold.

Mon., January 17th. From three till nine at night I continued reading the letters, rejoicing, and praying, and praising God.

Tues., January 18th. I buried, and spake of, our happy brother. It was with us as heretofore. A funeral is one of our greatest festivals.

Sat., January 22d. I prayed with the malefactors, and felt great pity for them, especially for a poor ignorant Papist.

Wed. and Thur., January 26th and 27th. I reproved them for their late negligence; and on

Sat., January 29th, I saw my words had not been lost. They seemed humbled, and awakened to a sense of their condition. Their lightness had been occasioned by that poor creature, the Ordinary; who is worse than no Minister at all. Six times they were forced to wake him before he got through the prayers. He might just as well read them in Latin. His life and actions are worse than even his words.

Tues., February 1st. Again Townsend refused me admittance; telling me I had forged my order from the Sheriff. Another let me in, with Mr. Piers and Bray. Scarce were we entered the cells, when the power of God fell upon us, first as a spirit of contrition, then of strong faith, and power to exhort and pray.

At night I expounded Daniel ix. ; and the Spirit of God burst in upon us like a flood. Surely the Lord will bring again Sion: the commandment is gone forth, and our Jerusalem shall be built.

Fri., February 4th, I spent in examining the classes. Before we parted, the Spirit of supplication was wonderfully poured out. We asked in faith for some who still lay at the pool ; and they received the immediate knowledge of salvation by the remission of their sins.

Sat., February 5th. One among the classes told my brother she had a constant sense of forgiveness, and he let her pass. I could not help proving her farther ; and then the justified sinner appeared full of the gall of bitterness ; said again and again of a sister present, "I do not love her ; I hate her," &c. I assured her, if an angel from heaven told me she was justified, I would not believe him ; for she was a murderer. As such we prayed for her ; and she was convinced of unbelief. I fear we have many such believers among us.

Sun., February 6th. I met a second time the Clerk of St. Luke's. In our first conference he was thoroughly convinced ; and has now experienced the truth. For three days together, he tells me, he has been ready to faint away through love to all mankind.

Fri., February 11th. Three received forgiveness this day, while we were praying among the classes.

Sat., February 12th. I showed my old order at Newgate, which was refused ; then a new one, sent me by the other Sheriff. Coming out, the keeper desired to see it again, and took it away from me. I wrote to the Sheriff, who sent me another.

Sun., February 13th. When I came to Newgate, the first question was, as I expected, "Where is your order?" I produced my new one, which so surprised them, that they durst not refuse me admittance.

I found the poor souls turned out of the way by Mr. Broughton. He told them, "There was no knowing our sins forgiven ; and, if any could expect it, not such wretches as they, but the good people, who had done so and so. As for *his* part, he had it not himself ; therefore it was plain they could not receive it." I spoke strong words to one of

them, which the Lord applied, and prayed in fervent faith. I heard the Ordinary read prayers and preach ; then spake with them all together in the chapel. All, but one, were brought back to the truth.

The god of this world was angry, and sent the head-jailer to ask me how I came hither. "I wonder, Sir," said I, "that you should ask me that question, when you have my order in your pocket. You did not do well in taking it away, and then forbidding my entrance. You have trampled upon the Sheriff's authority." He answered, "If the Sheriff suffers you to come here, he shall keep the jail himself." I talked to him till he was much softened ; but, let the world smile or frown, my work goes on.

Tues., February 22d. Weary, and through various dangers, the Lord brought me this evening to Bath.

Wed., February 23d. I preached morning and night at the Society. In the evening, at the lodgings of a sick friend, to several of the rich. They heard me patiently while I showed, "They that be whole have no need of a physician, but they that be sick."

Thur., February 24th. I met Mrs. Carr, a daughter of affliction, and found, in prayer for her, that the Lifter up of her head is near.

Sun., February 27th. I gave the sacrament to our colliers. The love of Christ was shed abroad in many of their hearts.

I expounded the pool of Bethesda at Bath. Mr. Carr, and the rest of the gentry, were very attentive.

Tues., May 17th. I set out for the north with Mr. Gurney. In the evening I walked from our brother Wynn's to Painswick. I stood in the street, and invited sinners to the Gospel-feast, in, "Come, for all things are now ready." Some, even of these dead souls, receive the word with joy.

Wed., May 18th. I admitted a dozen new members into the Society, who brought a blessing with them. I walked to Stroud, and delivered my message at the market-place to a quiet audience. I made up a difference between two of the brethren, and carried them with me to Evesham.

Here the storm of persecution is a little blown over.

He that letteth at present is a Quaker. The Mayor likewise keeps off the sons of violence.

Thur., May 19th. I read prayers in Quinton church, and exhorted several wild, staring people to repent and believe the Gospel. I could not refuse their pressing invitation to preach again. God gave me great plainness of speech. Some of the fiercest opposers were brought over. Mrs. Taylor was fully convinced of unbelief.

I hastened back to Evesham, and enforced that comprehensive promise, "Whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do." Our Lord himself applied his own words.

The Society walk as becometh the Gospel. One only person I reprov'd ; not suffering her any longer, notwithstanding her great gifts, to speak in the church, or usurp authority over the men.

Fri., May 20th. I got once more to our dear colliers of Wednesbury. Here the seed has taken root, and many are added to the church. A Society of above three hundred are seeking full redemption in the all-cleansing blood. The enemy rages exceedingly, and preaches against them. A few have returned railing for railing ; but the generality have behaved as the followers of Christ Jesus.

I preached in a garden on the first words I met, 1 Cor. ii. 1 : "And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech," &c. While I spake of His sufferings, He looked upon us, and made us look upon Him, and mourn. Many wept as one that mourneth for his first-born. I exhorted and instructed the very lively Society. Surely among this people I have not run or laboured in vain.

Sat., May 21st. At five I commended the woman of Canaan, as an example of prevalent importunity. A young man, who had been greatly vexed of the devil, was now set at liberty. I spent the morning in conference with several who have received the atonement under my brother, &c. I saw a piece of ground given us by a Dissenter to build a preaching-house upon, and consecrated it by an hymn.

I walked with many of the brethren to Walsal, singing. We were received with the old complaint, "Behold, they that turn the world upside down are come here also." I walked through the town amidst the noisy greetings of our

enemies, and stood on the steps of the market-house. An host of men was laid against us. The floods lifted up their voice, and raged horribly. I opened the book on the first-presented words, Acts xx. 24 : " But none of these things move me ; neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the Gospel of the grace of God."

The street was full of fierce Ephesian beasts, (the principal man setting them on,) who roared, and shouted, and threw stones incessantly. Many struck, without hurting, me. I besought them in calm love to be reconciled to God in Christ. While I was departing, a stream of ruffians was suffered to bear me from the steps. I rose, and, having given the blessing, was beat down again. So the third time, when we had returned thanks to the God of our salvation. I then, from the steps, bade them depart in peace, and walked quietly back through the thickest rioters. They reviled us, but had no commission to touch an hair of our heads.

Sun., May 22d. I preached to between one and two thousand peaceable people at Birmingham. I heard a miserable sermon to disprove the promise of the Father, by confining it to the Apostles. After the sacrament, I called on many, " Repent, and be converted : for the promise is unto you," &c. Several gentlemen stood in the crowd, with signs of deep attention.

I preached on the same words at Wednesbury ; and the Spirit proved them with his own demonstration.

Mon., May 23d. I took my leave in those words, Acts xiv. 22 : " Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of heaven." With many tears and blessings they sent me away, commended to the grace of God.

I preached forgiveness at Milbourne to several who seemed ready for it.

Tues., May 24th. Again I preached the Gospel to the poor at Coleorton, who heard it with the greatest eagerness.

I rode to Donington, and asked, " Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed ?"

At two I proclaimed the Saviour of all men at Nottingham-cross; and in the evening, at their request, I expounded to Mr. How's Society.

Wed., May 25th. At the Cross again, I pressed all to receive the faithful saying. There was no breath of opposition: but a storm must follow this calm. Several joined me at my inn in prayer and thanksgiving. One gave me a kind caution, for which I sincerely thanked him: "Mr. Rogers did run well, and preached the truth as you do here; but what a sad end has he made of it! Take care you do not leave the Church, like him."

In the afternoon I came to the flock in Sheffield, who are as sheep in the midst of wolves; the Ministers having so stirred up the people, that they are ready to tear them in pieces. Most of them have passed through the fire of *stillness*, which came to try them, as soon as they tasted the grace of the Lord.

At six I went to the Society-house, next door to our brother Bennet's. Hell from beneath was moved to oppose us. As soon as I was in the desk with David Taylor, the floods began to lift up their voice. An officer (Ensign Garden) contradicted and blasphemed. I took no notice of him, and sung on. The stones flew thick, hitting the desk and people. To save them and the house, I gave notice I should preach out, and look the enemy in the face.

The whole army of the aliens followed me. The Captain laid hold on me, and began reviling. I gave him for answer, "A Word in season; or, Advice to a Soldier;" then prayed, particularly for His Majesty King George, and preached the Gospel with much contention. The stones often struck me in the face. After sermon I prayed for sinners, as servants of their master, the devil; upon which the Captain ran at me with great fury, threatening revenge for my abusing, as he called it, "the King his master." He forced his way through the brethren, drew his sword, and presented it to my breast. My breast was immediately steeled. I threw it open, and, fixing mine eye on his, smiled in his face, and calmly said, "I fear God, and honour the King." His countenance fell in a moment, he fetched a deep sigh, put up his sword, and quietly left the place.

To one of the company, who afterwards informed me, he had said, "You shall see, if I do but hold my sword to his breast, he will faint away." So perhaps I should, had I had only his principles to trust to ; but if at that time I was not afraid, no thanks to my natural courage.

We returned to our brother Bennet's, and gave ourselves unto prayer. The rioters followed, and exceeded in their outrage all I have seen before. Those of Moorfields, Cardiff, and Walsal, were lambs to these. As there is no King in Israel, (no Magistrate, I mean, in Sheffield,) every man does as seems good in his own eyes. Satan now put it into their hearts to pull down the Society-house, and they set to their work, while we were praying and praising God. It was a glorious time with us. Every word of exhortation sunk deep, every prayer was sealed, and many found the Spirit of glory resting on them.

One sent for the Constable, who came up, and desired me to leave the town, "since I was the occasion of all this disturbance." I thanked him for his advice, withal assuring him "I should not go a moment the sooner for this uproar ; was sorry for *their* sakes that they had no law or justice among them : as for myself, I had my protection, and knew my business, as I supposed he did his." In proof whereof, he went from us, and encouraged the mob.

They pressed hard to break open the door. I would have gone out to them, but the brethren would not suffer me. They laboured all night for their master, and by morning had pulled down one end of the house. I could compare them to nothing but the men of Sodom, or those coming out of the tombs exceeding fierce. Their outcries often waked me in the night ; yet I believe I got more sleep than any of my neighbours.

Thur., May 26th. At five I expounded the pool of Bethesda ; and stayed, conversing with the Society, till eight. I breakfasted with several of the brethren from Yorkshire, Derbyshire, Lancashire, and Cheshire. I met a daughter of affliction, who had long mourned in Sion. God gave me immediate faith for her, which I made proof of in prayer ; and in that instant she received *the comfort*. It being agreed that I should preach in the heart of the town, I went forth, nothing doubting. We heard our enemies

shouting from afar. I stood up in the midst of them, and read the first words that offered : " If God be for us, who can be against us? He that spared not his own Son," &c. God made bare his arm in the sight of the Heathen, and so restrained the fierceness of men, that not one lifted up hand or voice against us.

I took David Taylor, and walked through the open street to our brother Bennet's, with the multitude at my heels. We passed by the spot where the house stood : they had not left one stone upon another. Nevertheless, the foundation standeth sure, as I told one of them, and our house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. The mob attended me to my lodgings with great civility ; but as soon as I was entered the house, they renewed their threatenings to pull it down. The windows were smashed in an instant ; and my poor host so frightened, that he was ready to give up his shield.

He had been for a warrant to Mr. Buck, a Justice of Peace, in Rotherham ; who refused it him, unless he would promise to forsake this way.

The house was now on the point of being taken by storm. I was writing within, when the cry of my poor friend and his family, I thought, called me out to those sons of Belial. In the midst of the rabble I found a friend of Edward's, with the Riot Act. At their desire, I took and read it, and made a suitable exhortation. One of the sturdiest rebels our Constable seized, and carried away captive into the house. I marvelled at the patience of his companions ; but the Lord overruled them. What was done with the prisoner, I know not ; for in five minutes I was fast asleep, in the room they had dismantled. I feared no cold, but dropped asleep with that word, " Scatter thou the people that delight in war." I afterwards heard that, within the hour, they had all quitted the place.

Fri., May 27th. At five I took leave of the Society in those comfortable words, " Confirming the souls," &c. I had the extraordinary blessing I expected. Our hearts were knit together, and greatly comforted. We rejoiced in hope of the glorious appearing of the great God, who had now delivered us out of the mouth of the lions.

David Taylor informed me, that the people of Thorpe,

through which we should pass, were exceeding mad against us. So we found them, as we approached the place, and were turning down the lane to Barley-hall. The ambush rose, and assaulted us with stones, eggs, and dirt. My horse flew from side to side, till he forced his way through them. David Taylor they wounded in his forehead, which bled much : his hat he lost in the fray. I returned, and asked what was the reason a Clergyman could not pass without such treatment. At first the rioters scattered ; but their Captain, rallying, answered with horrible imprecations, and stones that would have killed both man and beast, had they not been turned aside by an hand unseen. My horse took fright, and hurried away with me down a steep hill, till we came to a lane, which I turned up, and took a circuit to find our brother Johnson's. The enemy spied me from afar, and followed, shouting. Blessed be God, I got no hurt, but only the eggs and dirt. My clothes indeed abhorred me, and my arm pained me a little by a blow I received at Sheffield. David Taylor had got just before me to Barley-hall, with the sisters, whom God had hid in the hollow of his hand.

I met many sincere souls assembled to hear the word of God. Never have I known a greater power of love. All were drowned in tears ; yet very happy. The scripture I met was, "Blessed be the Lord God of Israel ; for he hath visited and redeemed his people." We rejoiced in the God of our salvation, who hath compassed us about with songs of deliverance.

By four we came to a land of rest ; for the brethren of Birstal have stopped the mouths of gainsayers, and fairly overcome evil with good. At present, peace is in all their borders. The little foxes that spoil the vineyard, or rather, the wild boars out of the wood that root it up, have no more place among them ; only the Germans still prowl about the fences, to pick up stragglers.

My mouth was opened to declare God, who spared not his own Son, &c. A great multitude were bowed down by the victorious power of his love. It was a time much to be remembered, for the gracious rain wherewith our God refreshed us.

Sat., May 28th. I preached in the morning and at noon,

with great enlargement, to this childlike people ; then at Armley, in my way to Leeds.

Sun., May 29th. Not a year ago, I walked to and fro in these streets, and could not find a man : but a spark is at last lit on this place also ; and a great fire it will kindle.

I met the infant Society, about fifty in number, most of them justified, and exhorted them to walk circumspectly, since so much depended on the first witnesses.

At seven I stood before William Shent's door, and cried to thousands, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." The word took place. They gave diligent heed to it, and seemed a people ready prepared for the Lord.

I went to the great church, and was showed to the Ministers' pew. Their whole behaviour said, "Friend, go up higher." Five Clergymen were there, who a little confounded me, by making me take place of my elders and betters. They made me help administer the sacrament ; would not let me steal into a corner, but placed me at the table, opposite to him that consecrated. I assisted with eight more Ministers, for whom my soul was much drawn out in prayer. But I dreaded their favour more than the stones in Sheffield.

At two I found a vast multitude waiting for the word. I strongly exhorted them to repent and believe, that their sins might be blotted out.

At Birstal I called the poor and maimed and halt and blind to the great supper. My Lord disposed many hearts, I doubt not, to accept the invitation. He shows me several witnesses of the truth which they have even now received in the love of it. I had a blessed parting with the Society.

Mon., May 30th. Near Ripley my horse threw, and fell upon, me. My companion thought I had broke my neck ; but my leg only was bruised, my hand sprained, and my head stunned ; which spoiled my making hymns, or thinking at all, till the next day ; when the Lord brought us safe to Newcastle.

At seven I went to the room, which will contain above two thousand. It was filled from end to end. My subject was, "He that spared not his own Son," &c. God gave testimony to the word of his grace. We rejoiced for the consolation of our mutual faith.

Wed., June 1st. I preached at Pelton to a people who seem as ignorant almost as the beasts that perish. But if the Lord hath given them a desire to know him, he can of these stones raise up children unto Abraham.

Fri., June 3d. Our room was crowded at the watchnight. Several gentry from the races stood with great attention, while I set forth Christ crucified. It was a season both of grief and love.

Sat., June 4th. I went on at five expounding the Acts. Some stumbling-blocks, with the help of God, I have removed, particularly the fits. Many, no doubt, were, at our first preaching, struck down, both soul and body, into the depth of distress. Their *outward affections* were easy to be imitated. Many counterfeits I have already detected. To-day, one who came from the alehouse, drunk, was pleased to fall into a fit for my entertainment, and beat himself heartily. I thought it a pity to hinder him; so, instead of singing over him, as had been often done, we left him to recover at his leisure. Another, a girl, as she began her cry, I ordered to be carried out. Her convulsion was so violent, as to take away the use of her limbs, till they laid and left her without the door. Then immediately she found her legs, and walked off. Some very unstill sisters, who always took care to stand near me, and tried which should cry loudest, since I had them removed out of my sight, have been as quiet as lambs. The first night I preached here, half my words were lost through their outcries. Last night, before I began, I gave public notice, that whosoever cried so as to drown my voice, should, without any man's hurting or judging them, be gently carried to the farthest corner of the room. But my porters had no employment the whole night; yet the Lord was with us, mightily convincing of sin and of righteousness.

Sun., June 5th. My soul was revived by the poor people at Chowden; and yet more at Tanfield, where I called to great numbers, "Behold the Lamb of God," &c. To the Society I spake words not my own. At Newcastle, one, just come from the sacrament, received the seal of forgiveness among us.

I preached in the crowded square, chiefly to the back-

sliders, whom I besought, with tears, to be reconciled to God. Surely Jesus looked upon some of them as he looked upon Peter.

I wrestled in prayer for them at the Society, and found it is for their sake principally that God hath brought me hither.

Mon., June 6th. I had the great comfort of recovering some of those that had drawn back. They came, confessing their sin. I trust we shall receive them again for ever.

Wed., June 8th. I spake to the bands severally, and tried if their faith could bear shaking. We have certainly been too rash and easy in allowing persons for believers on their own testimony; nay, and even persuading them into a false opinion of themselves. Some souls it is doubtless necessary to encourage; but it should be done with the utmost caution. To tell one in darkness he has faith, is to keep him in darkness still, or to make him trust in a false light, a faith that stands in the words of men, not in the power of God.

Sat., June 11th. I passed an hour with the keelmen at the hospital. Eight of our brethren there have been gathered into the garner since our parting. The love of the rest is not waxen cold.

Sun., June 12th. I preached at five in the room; at seven to the poor people in Chowden; at nine in Tanfield. After church, in the Hospital-square, to the usual congregation, whom I warmly pressed to the great supper.

Mon., June 13th. I wrote thus to a son in the Gospel:—"Be not over-sure that so many are justified. By their fruits you shall know them. You will see reason to be more and more deliberate in the judgment you pass on souls. Wait for their conversation. I do not know whether we can infallibly pronounce *at the time* that any one is justified. I once thought several in that state, who, I am now convinced, were only under the drawings of the Father. Try the spirits, therefore, lest you should lay the stumbling-block of pride in their way, and, by allowing them to have faith too soon, keep them out of it for ever."

Tues., June 14th. I preached at South-biddicks to a multitude of earnest souls, who lamented my leaving them as soon as I found them.

Wed., June 15th. I dined at Stote's-hall with Mr. Williams, and rode in the bitter weather to Plessy. Here my labour has not been in vain. They even devoured the word, while I showed them what they must do to be saved.

I observed at Newcastle that many more of the gentry come now the stumbling-block of the fits is taken out of their way ; and I am more and more convinced it was a device of Satan to stop the course of the Gospel. Since I have preached it, if I can discern anything, it never had greater success than at this time. Yet we have no fits among us, and I have done nothing to prevent them, only declared that I do not think the better of any one for crying out or interrupting my work.

Thur., June 16th. I set out for Sunderland, with strong aversion to preaching. But I am more and more convinced that *the freedom of heart* which the Moravians and Quakers so much talk of, is a rule of the devil's inventing, to supersede the written word. I dragged myself to about a thousand wild people, and cried, "O Israel, thou hast destroyed thyself ; but in me is thy help." Never have I seen greater attention in any at their first hearing.

We rode on to Shields. I went to church, and the people flocked in crowds after me. The Minister could not be heard in reading prayers ; but I heard him loud enough afterwards, calling for the Churchwardens to quiet the disturbance, which none but himself raised. I fancy he thought I should preach there, like some of the first Quakers. The Clerk came to me, bawling out, it was consecrated ground, and I had no business to preach on it ; was no Minister, &c. When he had cried himself out of breath, I whispered him in the ear, that I had no intention to preach there ; and he stumbled upon a good saying, "Sir, if you have any word of exhortation for the people, speak it to them without."

I did so, at my leisure, an huge multitude waiting in the church-yard ; many of them very fierce, and threatening—to drown me, and what not. I walked quietly through the midst of them, and discoursed in strong awakening words on the jailer's question, "What must I do to be saved?" The Churchwardens and others laboured in vain to interrupt, by throwing dirt, nay, and money, among the people.

Having delivered my message, I rode to the ferry : crossed, and met as rough friends on the other side. The mob of North-Shields waited to salute me, with the Minister at their head. He had got a man with an horn, instead of a trumpet, and bade him blow, and his companions shout. Others were almost as violent in their approbation. We went through honour and dishonour ; (but neither of them hurt us ;) and by six, with God's blessing, came safe to Newcastle.

Sat., June 18th. A woman told me she had received a great measure of the love of God in her heart, and thought it forgiveness. I thought so too, especially as it was in immediate answer to our prayer. Upon my warning her against pride, she very innocently told me, "She was never proud in all her life." Now what madness to tell this soul, so utterly ignorant of herself, that she is justified ! She may be so, for what I know ; but for me positively to determine it, would be the way, I think, to stop the work in its beginning. Several have come with the same report since I have been here. I neither receive nor reject their saying, but require their fruits, and bid them go on.

Sun., June 19th. I asked the multitudes in the square, "Will ye also go away," &c. The word prospered in the thing whereunto it was sent, namely, the bringing back the wanderers. We concluded the day with our first love-feast. Jesus was with his disciples.

I took my leave in those words, "What ye have already, hold fast till I come." It was a hard parting with the Society. Their hearts were all as melting wax ; and will, I trust, retain the impression then made by every word spoken. Some cried aloud ; others knelt down for my blessing ; most laid hold on me as I passed ; all wept and made lamentation.

I preached at Swalwell. Never were people better disposed, or more eager of instruction. And their love was such, that they would, if possible, pluck out their eyes and give them me.

Tues., June 21st. I set out between three and four ; met by several parties of the Society, who had walked before some miles to watch my passing. I travelled but slowly through them, blessing and being blest.

I rode to Sand-Hutton. The poor people filled the house where I was. I showed them the way of salvation in the creditor and two debtors. They returned me many thanks.

Wed., June 22d. I set out at three ; was met and turned back, when I had gone a mile out of my way. I thought, How could this loss be repaired ? and immediately it was suggested that I should pray, till I got into the right road. The Spirit helped my infirmity ; and I continued instant in prayer for some hours ; believing that I shall, after all, escape safe to land. I prayed on, till at ten a sailor overtook me. I set upon him ; and he rejoiced in my welcome saying. God found me more work at Selby. I dined in a mixed company, where one asked me if there was any good in confirmation. I answered, "No, nor in baptism, nor in the Lord's supper, or any outward thing, unless you are in Christ a new creature." I confounded all my hearers by relating my own experience under the law. I left them some books, and went on my way rejoicing. Still the Spirit was upon me, and I felt stronger faith *for myself* than I ever did before.

By six I came to Epworth, my native place. All who met saluted me with hearty joy. At eight I preached, in Edward Smith's yard, "He that spared not his own Son," &c. Many were present, and much affected. I laid me down in peace, after one of the happiest days I have ever known.

Thur., June 23d. Waking, I found the Lord with me, even my strong helper, the God of whom cometh salvation. I preached on, "Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek," &c. : guarded some new converts against spiritual pride, that only hinderance to the work of God. I warned another against the *poor sinners*. One of them (Parker) had frankly told her, he did not understand what we meant by talking of holiness after forgiveness ; that he has all he can have, and looks for no more.

I visited Mrs. Bernard, a widow, in affliction, whose husband is just dead suddenly ; yet called at the eleventh hour. I went thence to Mr. Maw's, who received me gladly ; being again stirred up, and resolved to seek till he finds.

I passed the afternoon with our brethren from Grimsby in mutual encouragement. At seven I went out into the streets to call those that were bidden, and cried from the cross, "Come, for all things are now ready." The Minister heard me at a distance.

I provoked the Society to love and good works ; warned them, without intending it, against those that seduce them ; and insisted with all earnestness on my constant counsel, that none of them should leave the ship till all came safe to land.

Fri., June 24th. I met them again at three, and parted with the blessing and peace of God.

I rode to Nottingham with the *best company* that earth or heaven could furnish. I found my brother in the marketplace, calling lost sinners to Him that justifieth the ungodly. He gave notice of my preaching in the evening.

From him I had the first account of our brethren's persecution at Wednesbury. Their unhappy Minister was the contriver of all.

The Lord opened my mouth at seven. Many thousands attended in deep silence. Surely the Lord hath much people in this place. We began a Society of nine members.

Sat., June 25th. I came to Birmingham with the night.

Sun., June 26th. Several of our persecuted brethren from Wednesbury came to me, whom I endeavoured to comfort. I preached at eight and one, no man forbidding me. After evening service, I expounded the prodigal son to several thousands, many of whom, I observed, by their tears, were pricked at the heart, and ready to say, "I will arise, and will go to my Father."

In the name of the Lord Jesus I began our Society. The number at present is thirteen.

Mon., June 27th. I left our brother Jones to look after the little flock, and set out for London. By six in the evening I came safe to Oxford. The Society is in a flourishing condition, chiefly by means of a discreet sister from London. I met poor, languid, dead Mr. Robson. I have trusted in this child of man : therefore is he to me as waters that fail.

Tues. night, June 28th. I slept at the Foundery.

Thur., June 30th. I buried our sister Soan. A mother

in Israel she *was* ; but she *is* a saint in paradise. We found the blessing which she has left behind.

Sun., July 3d. Mr. Hall, poor Moravianized Mr. Hall, met us at the chapel. I did him honour before the people. I expounded the Gospel as usual ; and strongly avowed my inviolable attachment to the Church of England. Mr. Meriton and Graves assisted me at the sacrament.

It was our women's love-feast ; but I turned it into mourning, by setting before them the things some of them had done, and spoken in a lying spirit against their Ministers. I challenged them, "Which of you convinceth us of sin ?" and showed at large their ingratitude to God and man. Great lamentation was among them. The stumbling-block will, I trust, be soon entirely removed.

Mon., July 4th. On our thanksgiving-day, we received power to wrestle with God for a blessing on all the church, and especially our persecuted brethren.

Wed., July 6th. I showed, from Rom. v., the marks of justification, and overturned the confidence of several. I strongly warned them against seducers ; found my heart knit to this people.

Fri., July 8th. John Bray came to persuade me not to preach, till the Bishops should bid me. They have not yet forbid me ; but, by the grace of God, I shall preach the word in season, out of season, though they and all men forbade me.

Sat., July 9th. I read my testimony to the Society ; (the letter in verse, "My more than friend, accept the warning lay," &c. ;) cautioned them against Mr. Hall, and rejoiced that I had confidence of them in all things.

Sun., July 10th. At our chapel, the galleries were filled with strangers. Many are daily added to the church.

I preached once more at the Foundery, and earnestly exhorted the Society to continue in the faith.

Mon., July 11th. I set out at two, in hard rain, which lasted all day. Yet I reached Hungerford by night, and Bristol the next day. Both my preaching and exhortation was to convince them of unbelief. I left them examining themselves whether they be in the faith.

Wed., July 13th. A brother accompanied me to Exeter, and twenty miles farther.

Fri., July 15th. I set out alone, and, by wandering, made it threescore miles to Bodmin. Both horse and rider were worked down, so that I slept till five next morning, without once waking. It cost me four hours to reach Mitchel. My colic made them seem four days. When I came in, I could not stand. I lay down, and rose with fresh strength, which carried me to Redruth. I left it at four, and wandered toward St. Ives. I passed the river Hale just before the sea came in. Two tanners met me first, and wished me good luck in the name of the Lord. My next greeting was from the devil's children; who shouted as I passed, and pursued me like the men out of the tombs. I met T. W., and then Mr. Shepherd, and rejoiced in the Lord our strength and our Redeemer.

Between seven and eight I entered St. Ives. The boys and others continued their rough salutes, for some time, at brother Nance's; but I was too weary to regard them.

Sun., July 17th. I rose, and forgot I had travelled from Newcastle. I spoke with some of this loving, simple people, who are as sheep in the midst of wolves. The Priests stir up the people, and make their minds evil affected toward the brethren.

Yet the sons of violence are much checked by the Mayor, an honest Presbyterian, whom the Lord hath raised up.

I preached in the room at eight, on, "Thou shalt call his name Jesus; for he shall," &c. I found his presence sensibly among us; so did the opposers themselves.

I heard the Rector preach from Matt. v. 20: "Except your righteousness exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees," &c. His application was downright railing at the new sect, as he calls us, those enemies to the Church, seducers, troublers, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, &c. I had prayed for a quiet heart, and a steady countenance; and my prayer was answered. My calmness was succeeded with strong consolation.

I rode to Wednock, with almost all the brethren. Mr. Hoblin, the Curate, entertained us with a curious discourse on, "Beware of false Prophets." I stood up over against him, within two yards of the pulpit, and heard such a hodge-potch of railing, foolish lies, as Satan himself might have been ashamed of. I had asked that my countenance

might not alter, and was kept in perfect peace. The poor people behaved very decently ; and all followed me to hear the true word of God.

I stayed, and mildly told the Preacher he had been misinformed. No, he answered, it was all truth. "Sir," said I, "if you believe what you preach, you believe a lie." "You are a liar," he replied ; and I put him in mind of the great day, testified my good-will, and left him for the congregation.

God opened a door of utterance to preach the Gospel of Christ Jesus. I know they found the difference between the chaff and the wheat.

I returned to St. Ives, and met the Society. The enemies of the Lord melt away like wax ; more and more being convinced that we speak as the oracles of God.

Mon., July 18th. I went forth toward the market-house. When we came to the place of battle, the enemy was ready set in array against us. I began the hundredth Psalm, and they beating their drum, and shouting. I stood still and silent for some time, finding they would not receive my testimony : then offered to speak to some of the most violent ; but they stopped their ears, and ran upon me, crying, I should not preach there, and catching at me to pull me down. They had no power to touch me. My soul was calm and fearless. I shook off the dust of my feet, and walked leisurely through the thickest of them, who followed like ramping and roaring lions : but their mouth was shut.

I met the Mayor, who saluted us, and threatened the rioters. I rejoiced at my lodgings in our Almighty Jesus.

I preached at three on Cannegy-downs, to near a thousand tinnerns, who received the seed into honest and good hearts. While I pointed them to the Lamb of God, many wept ; and particularly the captain-general of the tinnerns, a man famous in his generation for acts of valour and violence, and his usual challenge to fight any six men with his club. He is known through the west by the title of "the destroyer." This leopard will soon, I trust, lie down with the lamb.

I expounded blind Bartimeus at St. Ives. The power of

the Lord overshadowed us ; so that many of the opposers trembled, and some wept.

Tues., July 19th. From, "Surely shall one say, In the Lord have I righteousness and strength," I showed that the two inseparable marks of justification are peace, and power over all sin.

I preached at Pool, in the heart of the tinnery. A drunkard got within two or three yards, designing, I suppose, to push me down the hill. I was forced to break off my prayer, and warn him to take care of himself. He attempted to lay hold on me ; upon which a tinner cried, "Down with him !" In a moment the Philistines were upon him. I strove to rescue him, and besought them not to hurt him ; otherwise I should go away, and not preach at all. They were entreated for him, and, taking him by the legs and arms, quietly handed him down from one to another, till they had put him without the congregation ; and he was heard no more.

I published the faithful, acceptable saying, and their hearts seemed all bowed and opened to receive it. God, I nothing doubt, will call these a people who were not a people. Our prayers for the opposers also begin to be answered ; for the fiercest of them came in this evening to the room, and behaved with great decency.

Wed., July 20th. I spake with more of the Society ; most of whom have the first knowledge of salvation, as their lives show.

A. G. tells me that faith (as he thinks) came by hearing yesterday morning. He has been a sinner, above other sinners, till, within this fortnight, God called, and made him equal with those who have borne the heat and burden of the day.

I went to church, and heard that terrible chapter, Jeremiah vii. ; enough, one would think, to make even this hardened people tremble. Never were words more applicable than those : "Stand in the gate of the Lord's house, and proclaim there this word, and say, Hear ye the word of the Lord, all ye of Judah, that enter into these gates to worship the Lord. Thus saith the Lord God of hosts, the God of Israel, Amend your ways and your doings, and I will cause you to dwell in this place. Trust ye not in lying

words, saying, The temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, are these ! Behold, ye trust in lying words that cannot profit. Will ye steal, murder, commit adultery, and swear falsely, and come and stand before me in this place," &c. The Second Lesson, John viii., was as remarkable, showing the servants' treatment in that of the Master.

I preached at Zunnor, one of Mr. Symond's four parishes, which is come in, to a man, at the joyful news. Some hundreds of the poor people, with sincerity in their faces, received my saying, "The kingdom of heaven is at hand ; repent ye, and believe the Gospel."

I began at eight expounding the good Samaritan, but could not proceed for pity to the poor mockers. Many of them were present ; but their mocking was over. I urged, and besought, and with tears even compelled, them to come in. The Spirit made intercession for them, that God might grant them repentance unto life.

Fri., July 22d. I rode in the rain to Morva, a settlement of tinnors ; to whom I could preach nothing but Gospel.

I had just named my text at St. Ives, "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God," when an army of rebels broke in upon us, like those at Sheffield or Wednesbury. They began in a most outrageous manner, threatening to murder the people, if they did not go out that moment. They broke the sconces, dashed the windows in pieces, tore away the shutters, benches, poor-box, and all but the stone-walls. I stood silently looking on ; but mine eyes were unto the Lord. They swore bitterly I should not preach there again ; which I disproved, by immediately telling them Christ died for them all. Several times they lifted up their hands and clubs to strike me ; but a stronger arm restrained them. They beat and dragged the women about, particularly one of a great age, and trampled on them without mercy. The longer they stayed, and the more they raged, the more power I found from above. I bade the people stand still and see the salvation of God ; resolving to continue with them, and see the end. In about an hour the word came, "Hitherto shalt thou come, and no farther." The ruffians fell to quarrelling among them-

selves, broke the Town-Clerk's (their captain's) head, and drove one another out of the room.

Having kept the field, we gave thanks for the victory ; and in prayer the Spirit of glory rested upon us. Going home, we met the Mayor, with another Justice, and went back to show him the havoc which the gentlemen and their mob had made. He commended our people as the most quiet, inoffensive subjects, encouraged us to sue for justice, said he was no more secure from such lawless violence than we, wished us success, and left us rejoicing in our strong Helper.

Sat., July 23d. I cannot find one of this people who fears those that can kill the body only. It was next to a miracle, that no more mischief was done last night. The gentlemen had resolved to destroy all within doors. They came upon us like roaring lions, headed by the Mayor's son. He struck out the candles with his cane, and began courageously beating the women. I laid my hand upon him, and said, "Sir, you appear like a gentleman : I desire you would show it, by restraining these of the baser sort. Let them strike the men, or me, if they please, but not hurt poor helpless women and children." He was turned into a friend immediately, and laboured the whole time to quiet his associates. Some, not of the Society, were likewise provoked to stand up for us, and put themselves between : others held the ruffians, and made use of an arm of flesh. Some of our bitterest enemies were brought over by the meekness of the sufferers, and malice of the persecutors. They had sworn to drive us all out, and then take possession of our house ; but their commission did not go so far. One was overheard saying to his companions, as they were going off, "I think the desk was insured : we could not touch it, or come near it."

I proved the devil a liar, by preaching in the room at five. The words I first met were Isai. liv. : "For thou shalt break forth on the right hand and on the left. Fear not ; for thou shalt not be ashamed : neither be thou confounded ; for thou shalt not be put to shame. Behold, I have created the smith, and the waster to destroy. No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper," &c.

I preached at Gwennap to near two thousand hungry

souls, who devoured the word of reconciliation. Half my audience were tinnors from about Redruth, which, I hear, is *taken*. God has given us their hearts. If any man speak against us, say they, he deserves to be stoned. Again I expounded in the room at St. Ives, and advised the Society to possess their souls in patience, not threatening, or even mentioning the late uproar, but suffering all things for the sake of Jesus Christ.

Sun., July 24th. At Wednock many listened to my description of our Lord's sufferings from Isai. liii. After evening service I would have finished my discourse; but the Minister's mob fell upon us, threatening and striking all they came near. They swore horribly they would be revenged on us, *for our making such a disturbance on the Sabbath-day*, our taking the people from the church, and doing so much mischief continually. They assaulted us with sticks and stones, and endeavoured to pull me down. I bade them strike me, and spare the people. Many lifted up their hands and weapons, but were not permitted to touch me. My time is not yet come.

We were now encompassed with an host of men, bent on mischief, with no visible way of escape; but the Lord hath many ways. He touched the heart of one of our persecutors, who came up to me, took me by the hand, and besought me to depart in peace, assuring me he would preserve me from all violence. Another gentleman said the same. I thanked and told them I had an unseen Protector; but as I saw there was no door, I should not attempt preaching at this season.

I stayed some time to make my observation. Ten cowardly ruffians I saw upon one unarmed man, beating him with their clubs, till they felled him to the ground. Another escaped by the swiftness of his horse. My convoy they set upon for dissuading them, and forced him to fly for his life.

I walked on slowly with all the rabble behind. One of the brethren attended me. The Lord hid us in the hollow of his hand: the pillar came between the Egyptians and us. About six we rested at brother Nance's. The enemy still pursued. I went out and looked them in the face, and they pulled off their hats, and slunk away. The right

hand of the Lord hath the pre-eminence; and therewith hath he got himself the victory.

The Society came. Our hearts danced for joy, and in our song did we praise him. We all longed for his last glorious appearing, and with an eye of faith saw the Son of man, as coming in the clouds of heaven, to confess us before his Father and the holy angels.

Mon., July 25th. The Mayor told us, that the Ministers were the principal authors of all this evil, by continually representing us in their sermons as Popish emissaries, and urging the enraged multitude to take all manner of ways to stop us. Their whole preaching is cursing and lies: yet they modestly say, my fellow-labourer and I are the cause of all the disturbance. It is always the lamb that troubles the water.

Yesterday we were stoned as Popish incendiaries; to-day, it is our turn to have favour with the people.

I preached on Cannegy-downs to a multitude of simple-hearted tinnors: "Who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah?" They received the word with all gladness and gratitude; wondered at the St. Ives people, that could endeavour to hurt us for telling them such blessed truths. At St. Ives I had warning of an approaching trial, and was led to pray that the fierceness of men might be at this time restrained. I had scarce begun at the room, when news was brought that all the gentlemen were coming to pull it down. We looked for them every moment. About half a dozen came first, and threw eggs in at the windows. Others cast great stones to break what remained of the shutters. Others struck the women, and swore they would have the house down. I prayed, and dismissed our people. J. Nance was gone to the Mayor. I followed to stop him, and met the Mayor at the head of his posse. At first hearing of the tumult, he had started up, charged all he met to assist him, and was coming to the room, when I desired him to save himself the trouble of a walk in the rain. He behaved with great civility and resolution, declaring before all, that none should hurt us. This disappointed and scattered our adversaries; and I met the Society without molestation.

Glory be to God, that we are once more delivered out of

the mouth of these lions. They were sure of accomplishing their design this night ; but the Lord beheld their threatenings, and stilled the raging of the sea, the noise of its waves, and the madness of the people.

Tues., July 26th. I showed my brethren their calling, from Matt. x. 22 : "Ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake : but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved."

At the Pool one stopped and demanded my letters of orders. I marvelled at Mr. Churchwarden's ignorance, gave him my Oxford sermon, and rode on. He followed me with another gentleman, and vowed I should not preach in *his parish*. When I began he shouted, and hallooed, and put his hat to my mouth. We went to another place : he followed us like Shimei. I told him, I should surely deliver my message, unless his master was stronger than mine. After much contention I walked away, with near two thousand people, most part tinnors, to the next parish, as my wise Churchwarden supposed. He followed us another mile, and a warm walk he had of it ; but left us on the borders of the neighbouring parish. However, to take my leave of it, I preached in what he called *his*. In spite of Satan, the poor had the Gospel preached to them, and heard it joyfully. Great was their zeal and affection toward me. I marvel not that Satan should fight for his kingdom : it begins to shake in this place.

All was quiet at St. Ives, the Mayor having declared his resolution to swear twenty new Constables, and suppress the rioters by force of arms. Their drum he has sent and seized. All the time I was preaching, he stood at a little distance, to awe the rebels. He has set the whole town against him, by not giving us up to their fury : but he plainly told Mr. Hoblin, the fire-and-faggot Minister, that he would not be perjured, to gratify any man's malice. Us he informed, that he had often heard Mr. Hoblin say, "They ought to drive us away by blows, not arguments."

Wed., July 27th. We could say from our hearts in the morning Psalms, "If the Lord himself had not been on our side, when men rose up against us, they had swallowed us up quick, when they were so wrathfully displeased at us.

But, praised be the Lord, who hath not given us over for a prey unto their teeth, our soul is escaped," &c. The words also of the lesson gave us great comfort ; but we wondered Mr. Symond could read them : " If the world hate you, ye know it hated me before it hated you. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his Lord : if they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you," &c.

Thur., July 28th. I dined at our brother Mitchel's, a confessor of the faith which once he persecuted. I rode on to St. Hilary Downs. Here the careless hearers were kept away by the enemy's threatenings ; but near a thousand well-disposed tinnners listened to the joyful tidings : " Comfort ye, comfort ye my people," &c. That word of grace, " Thine iniquity is pardoned," quite melted them down into tears, on all sides.

I began explaining the beatitudes at St. Ives. None interrupted. I do not despair but some of our persecutors themselves may yet, before we depart, receive that *damnable Popish doctrine*, as Mr. Hoblin calls it, of justification by faith only.

Fri., July 29th. I rode to Morva, and invited the whole nation of tinnners to Christ. I took the names of several who were desirous of joining in a Society. The adversaries have laboured with all their might to hinder this good work : but we doubt not our seeing a glorious church in this place.

Sat., July 30th. I believed a door would be opened this day, and, in the strength of the Lord, set out for St. Just, a town of tinnners, four miles from Morva, twelve from St. Ives. My text was, " The poor have the Gospel preached unto them." I showed, the sum thereof is, " Thine iniquity is pardoned : God, for Christ's sake, hath forgiven thee." The hearts of thousands seemed moved as the trees of the forest, by that wind which bloweth as it listeth. The door stood wide open, and a multitude are just entering in. Here it is that I expect the largest harvest.

We rode four miles farther, to Zunning, and took up our lodging at an hospitable farmer's.

I walked with our brother Shepherd to the Land's-end, and sang, on the extremest point of the rocks,

"Come, Divine Immanuel, come,
Take possession of thy home ;
Now thy mercy's wings expand,
Stretch throughout the happy land.

"Carry on thy victory,
Spread thy rule from sea to sea ;
Re-convert the ransom'd race ;
Save us, save us, Lord, by grace.

"Take the purchase of thy blood,
Bring us to a pardoning God ;
Give us eyes to see our day,
Hearts the glorious truth to' obey,

"Ears to hear the Gospel sound,
'Grace doth more than sin abound ;'
God appeased, and man forgiven,
Peace on earth, and joy in heaven.

"O that every soul might be
Suddenly subdued to thee !
O that all in thee might know
Everlasting life below !

"Now thy mercy's wings expand,
Stretch throughout the happy land,
Take possession of thy home,
Come, Divine Immanuel, come."

I rode back to St. Just, and went from the evening service to a plain by the town, *made* for field-preaching. I stood on a green bank, and cried, "All we like sheep have gone astray ; we have turned every one to his own way," &c. About two thousand, mostly tinnerns, attended, no one offering to stir, or move an hand or tongue. The fields are white unto harvest : Lord, send forth labourers !

I returned to our host at Zunning. He is just entering the kingdom with the harlots and publicans. I went early to bed, having lost most of my senses through the constant fog, in which we have laboured to breathe this fortnight past.

Mon., August 1st. I saw a strange sight, the sun shining in Cornwall.

I expounded at nine the song of Simeon. Several very aged people were present, whom I left waiting for the consolation of Israel.

I took my leave of Cannegy-downs, in, "The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk," &c. ; and returned to St.

Ives in peace. I showed the blessedness of persecution ; then exhorted the Society to pray without ceasing for humility, the grace which draws all others after it.

Tues., August 2d. I carried my tanners from the Pool to the next parish. It was a glorious sight, the wide-spread multitude walking up the hill, eager for the word of life, hungry and thirsty after righteousness. I met with that, in St. Matthew, "A certain man had two sons," &c. These publicans know the time of their visitation, and bring forth fruit meet for repentance.

An elderly man pressed us to turn into his house, near Camborne. It was a large old country seat, and looked like the picture of English hospitality. When he could not prevail on us to stay longer, he would ride two or three miles on our way with us, and listened all the while to the word of reconciliation.

Wed., August 3d. I took my leave of the dear people of Zunnor, in our Lord's words, "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life." With many tears they besought us to come again, and evidently showed that our labour has not been in vain in the Lord.

Fri., August 5th. I preached my farewell sermon to our sorrowful brethren in Morva. Many from St. Just increased the lamentation. I shall think it long till I see them again : but my comfort is, that I leave them following hard after God.

We took our leave of the friendly Mayor, whom we acknowledged, under God, our deliverer from the hands of unrighteous and cruel men. He expressed the same affection for us as from the beginning ; listened to our report, for which our Lord gave us a fair opportunity ; ordered his servant to light us home ; in a word, received and sent away the messengers in peace.

Sat., August 6th. I rode to Gwennap, and with many words exhorted them to save themselves from this untoward generation. They were exceedingly moved, and very urgent with me to know when I should return ; when my brother or any other would come. Surely they are a people ready prepared for the Lord.

I began at St. Ives, before the usual time, "And now, brethren, I commend you to God," &c. I had no thought

of the rioters, though the Mayor had informed us, they were so impudent as to tell him to his face they would have a parting blow at us. As soon as we were met in the Society at brother Nance's, they came to the room, ready to pull it down. The drunken Town-Clerk led his drunken army to our lodgings; but an invisible power held them from breaking in, or hurting our brother Nance, who went out to them, and stood in the midst, till our King scattered the evil with his eyes, and turned them back by the way that they came.

The great power of God was, meantime, among us, overturning all before it, and melting our hearts into contrite, joyful love.

Sun., August 7th. At four I took my leave of the Society, with that apostolical prayer: "And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly," &c. Great grace was upon them all. Their prayers and tears of love I shall never forget. I nothing doubt, if I follow their faith, that I shall meet them in the new Jerusalem.

At six we left the lions' den, with about twenty horse. Some would have us take a back-way; but I would not go forth with haste, or by flight, and therefore rode slowly through the largest street, in the face of our enemies.

At eight I preached faith in Christ to many listening souls, in Velling-Varine: they received the word with surprising readiness. Their tears, and hearty expressions of love, convince me there is a work begun in their hearts.

I rode on rejoicing to Gwennap. As soon as I went forth, I *saw* the end of my coming to Cornwall, and of Satan's opposition. Such a company assembled, as I have not seen, excepting some few times at Kennington. By their looks I perceived they all heard, while I lifted up my voice like a trumpet, and testified, "God sent his Son to be the Saviour of the world." The convincing Spirit was in the midst, as I have seldom, if ever, known. Most of the gentry from Redruth were just before me, and so hemmed in, that they could not escape. For an hour my voice was heard by all, and reached farther than their outward ears. I am inclined to think that most present were convinced of righteousness or of sin. God hath now set before us an open door, and who shall be able to shut it?

At four we rode on to Mitchel; my brother having summoned me to London, to confer with the heads of the Moravians and predestinarians. We had near three hundred miles to ride in five days. I was willing to undertake this labour for peace, though the journey was too great for us and our weary beasts, which we have used almost every day for these three months.

Mon., August 8th. I took horse with brother Shepherd at four, and rode as far as Oakhampton.

Tues., August 9th. I breakfasted twelve miles short of Exeter, at an house where the maid and landlady's daughter were convinced, by a few words spoken, that they were lost unbelievers.

At Exeter I met F. Farley. I called to about a thousand sinners, mostly gentlemen and ladies, with some Clergy, "Behold the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world." God gave me favour in their eyes, although I did not prophesy smooth things. I found, as soon as I began to speak, that the fear of the Lord was upon them. Many followed me to my inn, to take their leave, and wished me good luck in the name of the Lord. I left one behind to keep up the awakening, and pursued my journey alone to London.

Wed., August 10th. I missed my way, and thereby met, at Bridport, a poor creature, ready for the Gospel. It was glad news indeed to her. When I said, "God sent me to you," she cried, "And did he, indeed?" and fell a trembling and weeping. We prayed together; and she seemed not far from the kingdom of God. She innocently asked me what church she should be of. I showed her the excellency of our own; and got to Blanford by night.

Thur., August 11th. My landlord was greatly moved by my discourse, and owned he had never seen a Christian in his life. I trust he will obey the call at his eleventh hour.

From ten to two I got with my sister Hall in Salisbury. She stands alone. Every soul of his [her husband's] Society has forsaken the ordinances of God; for which reason she refuses to belong to it.

I gathered up a few more scattered sheep, between this and London; not one of whom had ever before in their

lives been spoken to by any man concerning their souls. God's people perish for lack of knowledge. How can any one be so devilish as to forbid our speaking to such outcasts, that they may be saved?

Fri., August 12th. By nine at night I hardly reached the Foundery. Here I heard the Moravians would not be present at the conference. Spangenberg, indeed, *said* he would, but immediately left England. My brother was come from Newcastle, John Nelson from Yorkshire, and I from the Land's-end, to good purpose.

Sun., August 14th. At the chapel I expounded the Pharisee and Publican. The two-edged sword slew some, I am persuaded. Mr. Garden helped to administer the sacrament.

Sat., August 20th. I preached for the first time at the new chapel in Snowsfields.

Sun., August 21st. My brother set out for Cornwall. I received supernatural strength to expound, after a restless night of pain.

Tues., August 23d. The Spirit sealed those words on our hearts, while I expounded at Deptford, "The Spirit and the Bride say, Come." I rode to Bexley, and found my friend on a sick-bed, but full of peace and comfort.

Wed., August 24th. While I was exhorting them at the Foundery to constant prayer, several bore witness of the great benefit they had found therein, since our last meeting.

Thur., August 25th. I was sent for to Mr. Piers, who lay a-dying in convulsions. I prayed for him first with a friend, who said, "If he is not dead already, he will not die now." I got to Bexley by three. My brother had recovered his senses about the time we were praying for him. I was much comforted by his calm resignation; and in prayer saw, as it were, heaven opened, having seldom had greater freedom of access.

I hastened back to the Foundery, and preached without any natural strength. One testified his then receiving forgiveness.

Fri., August 26th. I met Mr. Robson, who is now quite removed from the hope of the Gospel; denying both justification and sanctification.

The Lord answered for himself at the chapel, while I

spake on the threefold office of the Spirit. His power overshadowed the Society also, and applied my exhortation to many hearts.

Sat., August 27th. I found the blessedness of mourning with them that mourn, even the penitents, whom we met this evening at the Foundery.

Sun., August 28th. At the chapel I discoursed on the good Samaritan; and we felt his oil and wine poured in. To many more he was made known in the breaking of bread. Honest Howel Harris was partaker of our joy.

At the Foundery I preached Christ, our Prophet, Priest, and King, in his own words, "The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me," &c. Strong words of consolation were given me now, and at the following love-feast.

Fri., September 2d. I visited our brother Parker near death, as was supposed, but triumphing over it, through Him that giveth us the victory.

News was brought me again, that Mr. Piers was dying. Next morning I found him more than conqueror in a mighty conflict he had had for eight hours with all the powers of darkness. "Now," he told me, "I shall not die, but live, and declare the works of the Lord."

Sun., September 4th. I baptized a woman at the chapel, before the service. She was in the spirit of heaviness; but God magnified his ordinance, and she was therein enlightened to see her sins forgiven.

Wed., September 7th. I visited one struck down on Sunday night, both soul and body, but now rejoicing in the sense of God's pardoning love.

I delivered my own soul by speaking my mind to a reviler and hater of God in his children.

I rejoiced to hear of happy Miss Cowper's release; and found my soul mounting up after her all this and the following day.

Sat., September 10th. I went to the house of our late-translated sister, and rejoiced over the breathless temple of the Holy Ghost.

Sun., September 11th. I met one of the Tabernacle, thoroughly convinced of the necessity of holiness. Many more shall follow if we tarry the Lord's leisure.

Tues., September 13th. At Mr. Watkins's I told his

pharisaical sister that she was then in a lost estate, and took my leave till she feels the wrath of God abiding on her.

Fri., September 16th. I received great power to invite poor sinners at the chapel, while enforcing, "Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord."

Sat., September 24th. I reproved one for swearing, among an army of porters and carmen. I spoke to them for some time, till all were overpowered. I carried two away with me to the Foundery. They received my saying and books, and departed with their eyes full of tears, and their hearts of good desires.

Wed., September 28th. At the chapel I preached through this man forgiveness of sins; never with greater demonstration of the Spirit.

Sat., October 1st. I rode out of town to friend Hiam's country house, and had much useful conversation with him.

Wed., October 5th. I described the Laodicean spirit, with great convincing power.

Thur., October 6th. I expounded wrestling Jacob at the Foundery, and promised the Society an extraordinary blessing, if they would seek the Lord early the next morning.

Fri., October 7th. The Foundery was full; and God confirmed the word of his servant, while I explained, "All power is given unto me." Some received *the blessing* of the Gospel, or forgiveness: and no one, I verily believe, was sent empty away. At intercession a great awe of God fell upon us, and we trembled before the presence of the Lord, before the presence of the Lord of the whole earth.

Sun., October 9th. Still He meets us in the place which he has chosen to record his name. J. Bray was one of my joyful congregation. It was a passover indeed.

Fri., October 14th. A mighty awakening power was with the word, "The blind receive their sight," &c.

Sat., October 15th. At Short's-gardens I preached, "It is of thy mercy only that we are not consumed;" and we were all melted down by the sense of His infinite patience and long-suffering.

Sun., October 16th. I administered the sacrament, and found after it the usual power in prayer.

Mon., October 17th. I set out to meet my brother at Nottingham.

Wed., October 19th. I preached twice in Markfield church, and was much comforted with my brother Ellis, and his little increasing flock. I talked with several, and took knowledge of them, that they have been with Jesus. One received the atonement under my word.

Thur., October 20th. I preached at Nottingham-cross, and met the Society we began half a year ago, increased from eleven to fifty. They have been sifted like wheat by their two potent enemies, stillness and predestination. One simple soul I was enabled to rescue. I discerned her at first sight by her form of humility and meekness: her tone and posture spoke her a poor sinner. She confessed that the Germans had taken great pains to wean her of her bigotry to the Church and ordinances; that they laughed at her reading the Scriptures; at her praying, and fasting, and mourning after Christ. When she quoted any Scripture-proof, they set it aside with, "O, that you must not mind; that is all head-knowledge." When she said she could not rest with such an evil heart, they answered, "O, you are not willing to be a poor sinner." They were always happy, they told her, always easy; without trouble, care, or temptation of any kind: but all her sorrow, and poverty, and hunger, and heaviness through manifold temptations, was bondage, and the law, and works, and because she would not be a poor sinner.

I prayed over her in faith; and the scales fell from her eyes. She saw through them in a moment, and all their pretences to humility, liberty, and faith. The tempter left her for a season, and the angels came and ministered unto her.

This people, I think, are faster asleep than ever, through their having been once awakened. Satan could not have gained a greater advantage than by Mr. Rogers's misconduct. How is the shepherd smitten, and the flock scattered! Woe unto the man who does not continue in the ship! They only shall prosper that love Jerusalem.

Fri., October 21st. My brother came, delivered out of the mouth of the lion. He *looked* like a soldier of Christ. His clothes were torn to tatters. The mob of Wednesbury,

Darlaston, and Walsal, were permitted to take him by night out of the Society-house, and carry him about several hours, with a full purpose to murder him. But his work is not finished ; or he had now been with the souls under the altar.

Sat., October 22d. The spirit of prayer was given at the Society, so that every soul was in some measure sensible of it.

Sun., October 23d. I went to church with Mr. How, (for they cannot yet wean him of that bigotry,) and found a great spirit of mourning for the captive daughter of Sion.

I met at the Cross the largest concourse of people, they told me, that had ever been seen there. They were more concerned than I had before observed them, and listened for an hour in fixed attention.

Mon., October 24th. I had a blessing at parting from the Society. I set out at five, and by night came weary and wet to Birmingham.

Tues., October 25th. I was much encouraged by the faith and patience of our brethren from Wednesbury ; who gave me some particulars of the late persecution. My brother, they told me, had been dragged about for three hours by the mob of three towns. Those of Wednesbury and Darlaston were disarmed by a few words he spoke, and thenceforward laboured to screen him from their old allies of Walsal ; till they were overpowered themselves, and most of them knocked down. Three of the brethren, and one young woman, kept near him all the time, striving to intercept the blows. Sometimes he was almost borne upon their shoulders through the violence of the multitude, who struck at him continually that he might fall. And if he had once been down, he would have rose no more. Many blows he escaped through his lowness of stature ; and his enemies were struck down by them. His feet never once slipped ; for in their hands the angels bore him up.

The ruffians ran about asking, "Which is the Minister?" and lost, and found, and lost him again. That Hand which struck the men of Sodom and the Syrians blind withheld or turned them aside. Some cried, "Drown him! throw him into a pit!" Some, "Hang him up upon the next tree:" Others, "Away with him! away with him!"

and some did him the infinite honour to cry, in express terms, "Crucify him!" One and all said, "Kill him!" but they were not agreed what death to put him to. In Walsal several said, "Carry him out of the town: don't kill him here: don't bring his blood upon us!"

To some who cried, "Strip him, tear off his clothes!" he mildly answered, "That you need not do: I will give you my clothes, if you want them." In the intervals of tumult, he spoke, the brethren assured me, with as much composure and correctness as he used to do in their Societies. The Spirit of glory rested on him. As many as he spoke to, or but laid his hand on, he turned into friends. He did not wonder (as he himself told me) that the martyrs should feel no pain in the flames; for none of their blows hurt him, although one was so violent as to make his nose and mouth gush out with blood.

At the first Justice's, whither they carried him, one of his poor accusers mentioned the only crime alleged against him: "Sir, it is a downright shame. He makes people rise at five in the morning to sing psalms." Another said, "To be plain, Sir, if I must speak the truth, all the fault I find with him is, that he preaches better than our Parsons." Mr. Justice did not care to meddle with him, or with those who were murdering an innocent man at his Worship's door. A second Justice in like manner remanded him to the mob. The Mayor of Walsal refused him protection when entering his house, for fear the mob should pull it down. Just as he was within another door, one fastened his hand in his hair, and drew him backward, almost to the ground. A brother, with the peril of his life, fell on the man's hand, and bit it, which forced him to loose his hold.

The instrument of his deliverance at last was the ring-leader of the mob, the greatest profligate in the country. He carried him through the river upon his shoulders. A sister they threw into it. Another's arm they broke. No farther hurt was done our people; but many of our enemies were sadly wounded.

The Minister of Darlaston sent my brother word, he would join with him in any measures to punish the rioters; that the meek behaviour of our people, and their con-

stancy in suffering, convinced him the counsel was of God ; and he wished all his parish Methodists.

They pressed me to come and preach to them in the midst of the town. This was the sign agreed on betwixt my brother and me : if they asked me, I was to go. Accordingly, we set out in the dark, and came to Francis Ward's, whence my brother had been carried last Thursday night. I found the brethren assembled, standing fast in one mind and spirit, in nothing terrified by their adversaries. The word given me for them was, "Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit yourselves like men, be strong." Jesus was in the midst, and covered us with a covering of his Spirit. Never was I before in so primitive an assembly. We sang praises lustily, and with a good courage ; and could all set to our seal to the truth of our Lord's saying, "Blessed are they that are persecuted for righteousness' sake."

We laid us down and slept, and rose up again ; for the Lord sustained us. We assembled before day to sing hymns to Christ as God. As soon as it was light I walked down the town, and preached boldly on Rev. ii. 10 : "Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer. Behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried ; and ye shall have tribulation ten days. Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life." It was a most glorious time. Our souls were satisfied as with marrow and fatness, and we longed for our Lord's coming to confess us before his Father and his holy angels.

We now understood what it was to receive the word in much affliction, and yet with joy in the Holy Ghost.

I took several new members into the Society ; and, among them, the young man whose arm was broke, and (upon trial) Munchin, the late captain of the mob. He has been constantly under the word since he rescued my brother. I asked him what he thought of him. "Think of him !" said he : "That he is a mon of God ; and God was on his side, when so many of us could not kill one mon."

We rode through the town, unmolested, to Birmingham ; where I preached, and one received faith. I rode on to

Evesham, and found John Nelson preaching. I confirmed his word, and prayed in the Spirit.

Thur., October 27th. I preached at five ; then read prayers, and preached twice, at Quinton ; and the fourth time in Evesham, with much life and liberty.

Fri., October 28th. I called on the eager, loving souls at Gutherton, "Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world !" Again at Cirencester, and slept at a well-disposed widow's.

Sat., October 29th. I came once more to Bristol, where I have spent but one day these six months.

Sun., October 30th. I rejoiced among our colliers, who receive the word as at the beginning, "with power, and the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance."

I preached in the Horse-fair on, "The Spirit and the bride say, Come ;" and gave the Society an account of the late persecution. God sent a gracious rain upon his inheritance, and refreshed our weary souls.

Mon., October 31st. I set out at five for Wales, commended to the grace of God. I preached in the way at farmer Whitchurch's. When we came to the Passage, the boatmen refused to venture over in such a storm. We waited till four ; then committed ourselves to Him whom the winds and seas obey ; and embarked with Mr. Ashton and faithful Felix Farley. The rest of the passengers stayed on the safe side.

The waves of the sea were mighty, and raged horribly. When, with much toiling, we were come near the opposite shore, the storm caught the vessel ; our sails were backed, and we driving full on the Black-rock, where thirty-two persons lost their lives a few weeks since. But the answer of prayer, after much fatigue, brought us to the haven. O that men would therefore praise the Lord for his goodness, and declare the wonders which he doeth for the children of men !

It was dark when we landed : however, we had a good Guide, (the darkness is no darkness to Him,) who conducted us, through the heavy rain, to the rock and fountain. I spoke a word in season to the poor young women-servants, who dwell as in the confines of hell, and in the midst of human devils.

Tues., November 1st. I took horse some hours before day, and by ten reached Cardiff. The gentlemen had threatened great things, if I ever came here again. I called, in the midst of them, "Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by," &c. The love of Christ constrained me to speak, and them to hear. The word was irresistible. After it, one of our most violent opposers took me by the hand, and pressed me to come to see him. The rest were equally civil all the time I stayed. Only one drunkard made some disturbance, but, when sober, sent to ask my pardon.

The voice of praise and thanksgiving was in the Society. Many are grown in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus.

I passed an hour with the wife and daughter of the Chief Bailiff, who are waiting as little children for the kingdom of God.

Wed., November 2d. I declared, in the Castle-yard, "The Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost." At noon my commission was still, "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people." I find the truth of Mr. Hodges's observation, "The Gospel makes way for the law."

Thur., November 3d. I read prayers and preached at Wenvo; then in our old chapel at the Castle; and rejoiced with my dear friends in sure and steadfast hope of the glory of God.

Fri., November 4th. I prayed with the Society at five; preached at seven; rode back to Cardiff, and joined in fervent intercession. I preached faith in the blood of Christ to the poor weeping prisoners; made a collection for them, and distributed books; besought them at the room to be reconciled to God; and the power of the Lord bore all before it.

Sat., November 5th. I took a sweet leave of the brethren, and got to the Passage by ten; but the boatmen, notwithstanding our entreaties, could not be persuaded to pass in that weather.

Sun., November 6th. I took boat at nine, nothing doubting. The floods lifted up their voice; but faith saw Jesus walking on the water, and heard his voice, "It is I, be not afraid." In eight minutes we were brought safe to land, by Him who rides in the whirlwind.

At two I preached to the colliers, from, "Said I not unto thee, If thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?" Their spirit bore me up, as on eagles' wings. We all rejoiced in our strong salvation.

Sun., November 13th. In the word, and sacrament, and love-feast, the Lord showed that the efficacy of his ministration doth not depend on the life or holiness of the Minister.

Wed., November 16th. I preached in Bath, on my way to Cirencester. There the Lord gave testimony to his word, "I have blotted out as a thick cloud thy transgressions." I preached at Gutherton, Evesham, Quinton, Oxford; and on Thursday, November 24th, at the Foundery.

Sun., November 27th. I gave the sacrament to about a thousand of the Society; and we poured out our souls in prayer.

Wed., November 30th. I was greatly assisted to declare, "The Son of man came to seek and to save that which was lost."

Thur., December 8th. I called on Mr. Witham, given over by his Physicians; trembling at the approach of the King of terrors, and catching at every word that might flatter his hopes of life.

Fri., December 9th. I prayed with him again, and found him somewhat more resigned.

Mon., December 19th. I was mostly employed for some days past in comforting an afflicted friend, whose son lay dying of the small-pox.

Tues., December 20th. I prayed in great faith for Mr. Witham; the time of whose departure draws nigher and nigher.

Fri., December 23d. At half-hour past seven in the evening he broke out, "Now I am delivered! I have found the thing I sought. I know what the blood of sprinkling means." He called his family and friends to rejoice with him. Some of his last words were, "Why tarry the wheels of his chariot? I know that my Redeemer liveth. Just at twelve this night my spirit will return to Him." While the clock was striking twelve, he died like a lamb, with that word, "Come, Lord Jesus!"

Sat., December 24th. I called on friend Keen's son, just as his wife had told her dream, that I should come that morning. They both seem truly simple of heart

Our meeting was not in vain. I rode in the afternoon to Bexley.

Christmas-day. I heard that one of our fiercest persecutors, who had cut his throat, and lay for dead some hours, was miraculously revived, as a monument of divine mercy. Many of his companions have been hurried into eternity, while fighting against God. He is now seeking Him whom once he persecuted ; was confounded at the sight of me, much more by my comfortable words, and a small alms. He could only thank me with his tears.

I read prayers, and preached, "Glory be to God in the highest," to a people who now have ears to hear.

Mon., December 26th. I spent four days between Wilmington, Welling, and Bexley, preaching the Gospel.

Fri., December 30th. I called on a friend, near death, yet unprepared for it ; and faithfully, not fashionably, told him his condition.

Sat., December 31st. I visited, at his desire, an opposer of the truth, till softened by the approach of death, and showed him his want of a Saviour. He now expresses incredible eagerness for redemption in the blood of Jesus.

PART VIII.

FROM JANUARY 1ST, 1744, TO DECEMBER 30TH, 1744.

SUNDAY, January 1st, 1744. I rode to Bexley, and expounded the character of wisdom. (Prov. iii.) God, as it seems, is turning the heart of this people back again. A surprising change I find in walking the streets. Nothing but kind salutations, instead of my usual reception with stones and curses.

Tues., January 3d. I triumphed with an old disciple of fourscore, dying in the faith.

Thur., January 5th. I finished H.'s account of the iniquitous Synod of Dort ; iniquitous even in the judgment of a predestinarian. God deliver me from their tender mercies !

Sun., January 8th. At the chapel I explained and applied the barren fig-tree. The convincing Spirit was present. A company of players roared mightily for their master ; but could not stop the course of the word.

Sun., January 15th. My text was, "Rejoice, O daughter of Sion ; behold, thy King cometh." His near approach did gladden our hearts ; and in the sacrament our joy was increased.

Sat., January 21st. I preached the Gospel in Snowsfields, with much contention ; and continued in prayer and thanksgiving, till our enemies quitted the field.

Sun., January 22d. I expounded the parable of the sower, God applying his own word. I exhorted the bands to join in the great work which God is working in our days.

Sun., January 29th. I assisted my brother and Mr. Gordon in administering the sacrament to almost our whole Society, of above two thousand.

Mon., January 30th. I set out with our brother Webb for Newcastle, commended to the grace of God by all the brethren. By Wednesday afternoon we found our brother Jones at Birmingham.

Wed., February 1st. A great door is opened in this country, but there are many adversaries. At Dudley, our Preacher was cruelly abused by a mob of Papists and Dissenters ; the latter stirred up by Mr. Whirting, their Minister. Probably he would have been murdered, but for an honest Quaker, who helped him to escape, disguised with his broad hat and coat. Staffordshire, at present, seems the seat of war.

Thur., February 2d. I set out with brother Webb for Wednesbury, the field of battle. I met with variety of greetings on the road. I cried, in the street, "Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world." Several of our persecutors stood at a distance ; but none offered to make the least disturbance.

I walked through the blessings and curses of the people, (but the blessings exceeded,) to visit Mr. Egginton's widow. Never have I observed such bitterness as in these opposers ; yet they had no power to touch us.

Fri., February 3d. I preached and prayed with the Society, and beat down the fiery, self-avenging spirit of resistance, which was rising in some, to disgrace, if not destroy, the work of God.

I preached, unmolested, within sight of Dudley. Many *Shineis called* after me, and that was all. I waited on the

friendly Captain Dudley, who has stood in the gap at Tip-ton-green, and kept off persecution, while it raged all around. I returned in peace through the enemy's country.

On Tuesday next, they have given it out, that they will come with all the rabble of the country, and pull down the houses, and destroy all the goods of our poor brethren. One would think there was no King in Israel. There is certainly no Magistrate, who will put them to shame in anything. Mr. Constable offered to make oath of their lives being in danger ; but the Justice refused it, saying, he could do nothing. Others of our complaining brethren met with the same redress, being driven away with revilings. The Magistrates do not themselves tear off their clothes, and beat them ; they only stand by, and see others do it. One of them told Mr. Jones, it was the best thing the mob ever did, so to treat the Methodists ; and he would himself give £5 to drive them out of the country. Another, when our brother Ward begged his protection, himself delivered him up to the mercy of the mob, (who had half murdered him before,) threw his hat round his head, and cried, "Huzza, boys ! Well done ! Stand up for the Church !"

No wonder that the mob, so encouraged, should say and believe that there is no law for Methodists. Accordingly, like outlaws they treat them, breaking their houses, and taking away their goods at pleasure ; extorting money from those that have it, and cruelly beating those that have not.

The poor people from Darlaston are the greatest sufferers. The rioters lately summoned them, by proclamation of the crier, to come to such a public house, and set to their hands that they would never hear the Methodist Preachers, or they should have their houses pulled down. About a hundred they compelled by blows. Notwithstanding which, both then and at other times, they have broken into their houses, robbing and destroying. And still if they hear any of them singing or reading the Scripture, they force open their doors by day and by night, and spoil and beat them with all impunity. They watch their houses, that none may go to Wednesbury ; and scarce a man or woman but has been knocked down in attempting it.

Their enemies are the basest of the people, who will not

work themselves, but live, more to their inclination, on the labours of others. I wonder the gentlemen who set them on, are so short-sighted as not to see that the little all of our poor colliers will soon be devoured ; and then these sons of rapine will turn upon their foolish masters, who have raised a devil they cannot lay.

Sat., February 4th. I discoursed from Isai. liv. 17 : “ No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper.” This promise shall be fulfilled in our day. I spoke with those of our brethren who have this world’s goods, and found them entirely resigned to the will of God. All thoughts of resistance are over, blessed be the Lord ; and the chief of them said unto me, “ Naked came I into the world, and I can but go naked out of it.” They are resolved by the grace of God to follow my advice, and suffer all things. Only I would have had them go round again to the Justices, and make information of their danger. Mr. Constable said, he had just been with one of them, who redressed him with bitter reproaches ; that the rest are of the same mind, and cannot plead ignorance of the intended riot, because the rioters have had the boldness to set up papers in the towns, particularly Walsal, inviting all the *country to rise with them, and destroy the Methodists.*

At noon I returned to Birmingham, having continued two days in the lions’ den, unhurt.

Sun., February 5th. I preached in the Bull-ring, close to the church, where they rang the bells, threw dirt and stones all the time. None struck me, till I had finished my discourse. Then I got several blows from the mob that followed me, till we took shelter at a sister’s. I received much strength and comfort with the sacrament.

I preached again in Wednesbury, to a large congregation, many of whom come to hear the word at the peril of their lives. I encouraged them from Isai. li. : “ Awake, awake, put on strength, O arm of the Lord,” &c. Here, and in the Society, our Captain, we found, doth not send us a warfare at our own charge.

Mon., February 6th. We commended each other to the divine protection, and at five I set out for Nottingham. Our way lay through Walsal, the enemy’s head-quarters. I would rather have gone a mile another way. Entering

the place, we heard one hallooing with might and main ; and a great noise followed, as if the town had taken the alarm. I cannot say the sound was very musical in my ears ; but I looked up, and rode onward. The noise was made by a gentleman huntsman, a bitter enemy of ours. We fell in with him and his dogs, it being just day-break, and passed for very good sportsmen. Brother Webb would needs ride through the market-place, to see the flag and paper our enemies had set up,—and to show his courage. Had he returned with a broken head, I should not have greatly pitied him. By six our Lord brought us safe to Nottingham.

I met the Society, on whom He laid the burden of our persecuted brethren.

Here also the storm is begun. Our brethren are violently driven from their place of meeting ; pelted in the streets, &c. ; and mocked with vain promises of justice by the very men who underhand encourage the rioters. An honest Quaker has hardly restrained some of the brethren from resisting evil ; but henceforth, I hope, they will meekly turn the other cheek.

Shrove-Tuesday, February 7th. I waked in great heaviness, which continued all day, for our poor suffering brethren ; yet with strong confidence that the Lord will appear in their behalf. I joined the Society, at five, in fervent intercession for them ; and, in preaching, both administered and received comfort.

I sent my humble thanks to the Mayor for his *offer* of assistance. He pities our brethren, and *would* defend them ; but who dares do justice to a Christian ? We are content to wait for it, till the great day of retribution.

At church, the psalms began, “ Plead thou my cause, O Lord, with them that strive with me, and fight thou against them that fight against me. Lay hand upon the shield and buckler, and stand up to help me. Bring forth the spear, and stop the way against them that persecute me : say unto my soul, I am thy salvation.” We continued in this prayer with the Society, and had great fellowship with the sufferers.

At the brethren’s desire, I began preaching in the market-place. The holiday folk broke in among the hearers.

I gave notice I should preach at the Cross, just by the Mayor's. In the way, the mob assaulted us with dirt and stones, making us as the filth and offscouring of all things. My soul was caught up, and kept in calm recollection. I knocked at the Mayor's door: he let me in himself, gave us good words, threatened the rabble, and led me to his fore-door, where the people were waiting. I walked up to the Cross, and called them to repent. They would not receive my testimony; were very outrageous, yet not permitted to hurt me. The Mayor at the same time passed by us laughing. Just such protection I expected!

After fighting with wild beasts for near half-an-hour, I went down into the thickest of them; who started back, and left an open way for me to the Mayor's house. Mrs. Mayoress led us through her house with great courtesy and compassion. The mob pursued us with stones as before. J. Webb and I were strangers to the town, but went straight forward, and entered an house prepared for us. The woman received us, and shut the door, and spoke with authority to the mob, so that they began to melt away. There the brethren found and conducted us to our friendly Quaker's. We betook ourselves to prayer for our fellow-sufferers in Staffordshire; who have not been out of our thoughts the whole day.

I expounded the beatitudes, and dwelt upon the last: never have I been more assisted. I rejoiced with our brethren in the fires.

Wed., February 8th. I cannot help observing, from what passed yesterday, that we ought to wait upon God for direction when and where to preach, much more than we do: a false courage, which is fear of shame, may otherwise betray us into unnecessary dangers. Farther, we may learn not to lean on that broken reed, human protection. To seek redress by law, unless we are very sure of obtaining it, is only to discover our own weakness, and irritate our opposers. What justice can be expected from the chief men of this place, if, as I am informed, they are mostly Arian Presbyterians?

I exhorted the brethren to continue in the faith, and, through much persecution, to enter the kingdom. Four were missing; the rest strengthened by their sufferings.

I called at brother Sant's, and found him just brought home for dead. The mob had knocked him down, and would probably have murdered him, but for a little child, who, being shut out of doors, alarmed the family by his cries.

It was some time before he came to himself, having been struck on the temples by a large log of wood. We gave thanks to God for his deliverance, and continued in prayer and conference till midnight.

Thur., February 9th. Our messenger returned from Lichfield, with such an account as I looked for. He had met our brother Ward, fled thither for refuge. The enemy had gone to the length of his chain. All the rabble of the county was gathered together yesterday, and laid waste all before them. A note I received from two of the sufferers, whose loss amounts to about £200. My heart rejoiced in the great grace which was given them ; for not one resisted evil ; but they took joyfully the spoiling of their goods. We gave God the glory, that Satan was not suffered to touch their lives. They have lost all besides, and rejoice with joy unspeakable.

By five in the evening we came to Sheffield. I marvelled what was come to them, that we had not one stone in riding through all the town. Peace was in all their borders, and has been for some time. The brethren are not slack during this rest, but walk in the fear of God. I preached on, "Ye are come to Mount Sion." The power of the Lord was remarkably present, but the power of the adversary quite restrained.

At nine I passed through Thorpe. I asked my companion, "Where are the pretty wild creatures that were for braining me and my horse, the last time I came this way?" He told me they had lost their spirit with their Captain, a woman, the bitterest of them all, who died lately in horrible despair. This quite terrified our enemies. Her daughter is now a believer, and several others in the place : nay, they have even got a Society among them.

I preached at Barley-hall, and found the great power and blessing of God with the church in that house. One of my host's sons attended me to Birstal.

Sat., February 11th. I preached at five, from, "I am

come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly." We were greatly comforted by our mutual faith. The little flock increases both in grace and number. The Lord fights for Israel, this day, against the deceitful workers. I was glad to hear of one of our English brethren, lately brought back by a little child, who told his father something came and disturbed him, so that he could not sleep at nights, since they left off family-prayer.

I preached at Adwalton, on our Lord's final coming. It was a glorious season of rejoicing and love. In the afternoon I preached at Armley. Arthur Bates, of Wakefield, who showed me the way, informed me, that his Minister, Mr. Arnett, repelled him from the sacrament, and said he had orders from the Archbishop so to treat all that are called Methodists. The time, we know, will come, when they shall put us out of their synagogues; but I much suspect Mr. Arnett has slandered the good Archbishop. In Leeds, also, some begin to abuse their authority, and to exclude the true (yea, the *truest*) members of the Church from her communion.

Sun., February 12th. I preached at Leeds, to many serious hearers, "Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom," &c. I went to Mr. M.'s church, and heard him explain away the promise of the Father. But he stopped at the application to the Methodists; perhaps out of tenderness for me, whom he may still have some hopes of.

I called on a larger, and equally quiet, congregation, "Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by?" &c. It was a blessed season. Many looked upon Him whom they have pierced.

I found John Nelson's hill quite covered with hearers. In the midst of my discourse, a gentleman came riding up, and almost over the people. Speaking of temperance and judgment to come, I turned, and applied to him, "Thou art the man." His countenance fell, and he fled before the sword of the Spirit. The power of God burst forth, and a cry was heard throughout the congregation. I continued my discourse, or rather prayer, till night.

Mon., February 13th. I preached in the evening at Sike-house, to the hearts of many.

Tues., February 14th. I rode to Epworth, and dined at Mr. Maw's, whose disputing is quite over ; and he is waiting to receive the kingdom as a little child. The Lord gave his blessing to my word in the Cross. At the Society the Spirit came down as in the ancient days. My voice was lost in the mournings and rejoicings on every side. All present, I believe, were either comforted or wounded.

Wed., February 15th. I explained the new covenant in the market-place, and many seemed desirous to enter into it.

Thur., February 16th. I rode to Selby : the next day, at Darlington, my horse fell with me from an high causeway, and threw me unhurt into deep mud.

Sat., February 18th. I got to Newcastle by two, and preached at night from 1 Thess. i. 5 : " For our Gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance." The people received me with that joy and love which the world knoweth not of.

Sun., February 19th. I sent away J. Healey, that he might not be torn to pieces by the mob, some of whom he has struck. It was so at Nottingham, where they brought persecution upon themselves, a little sooner than needed, by striking a butcher. The man who struck him was the first that fell away. Not that all their meekness and wisdom could have kept it off long.

I breakfasted at Mr. Watson's, who now professes the faith which he persecuted in his daughters. I heard of a remarkable providence. A poor drunkard, who has left us for some time, was moved this morning to rise, and come to the preaching ; by which he escaped being crushed to death by the fall of his house. He had no sooner left it, than it was blown down (the greatest part of it). Just before it fell, his wife took one with her to the window, to sing an hymn, and so escaped. A sister was overwhelmed with the ruins. Yet the rafters fell endways, and a cavity was made archwise over her head. She stayed there some hours before they could dig her out, rejoicing in God her Saviour.

I told an huge multitude in the square, " Ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake." I stood at the door of the Orphan-house, and took in many of the disturbers ;

to whom I then preached without opposition ; and exhorted the brethren to prepare for the fiery trial.

Mon., February 20th. I heard, without any surprise, the news of the French invasion ; which only quickened us in our prayers, especially for His Majesty, King George.

In the evening I expounded what the Spirit saith to the church of Ephesus, and received extraordinary power to warn them of the sword that is coming, and to wrestle with God in prayer for the King.

Sun., February 26th. I preached at Tanfield on Luke xxi. 34, &c. : “ And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and the cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares,” &c. My mouth and heart were opened to this people, who seem now to have got the start of those at Newcastle.

I called at the square, with greater utterance than ever, “ Wash ye, make you clean,” &c. I urged them earnestly to repent ; to fear God, and honour the King ; and had the clearest testimony of my own conscience, that I had now delivered my own soul.

I found a great mob about our house, and bestowed an hour in taming them. An hundred or more I admitted into the room, and, when I had got them together, for two hours exhorted them to repent, in the power of love. The rocks were melted on every side, and the very ringleaders of the rebels declared they would make a disturbance no more.

Mon., February 27th. I warned them at Horsley, also, from Luke xxi. 34, to prepare for suffering times.

Tues., February 28th. I rode in the high wind to Biddicks, and preached, to many unawakened sinners, “ Wash ye, make you clean : put away the evil of your doings,” &c. All seemed affected, especially our host, a poor drunkard that was, and his wife, a virtuous Pharisee. Both are now willing to be found in Christ, not having their own righteousness.

It was as much as I could do, in returning, to sit my horse, the storm was so violent. At the room I preached, “ The word of God—quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword.”

Wed., February 29th. I rode, with much difficulty, to Plessy, and preached the Gospel to a poor people ready prepared for the Lord.

Thur., March 1st. I preached at Spen to a weeping audience.

Fri., March 2d. I visited a brother on his death-bed, who soon after departed in the Lord.

I preached at Wickham, on, "He that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved." We had sweet fellowship with our Lord in his word.

Sun., March 4th. The people of Newcastle were in an uproar, through their expectation of a victory. They got their candles ready, and gave thanks, that is, got drunk, beforehand, and then came down to make a riot among us. Some of the brethren they struck, and threatened to pull down the desk.

We were sensible that the powers of darkness were abroad, and prayed, in faith, against them. God heard, and scattered the armies of the aliens here. Afterwards, news came that, at this very hour, they were pulling down the house in St. Ives.

Mon., March 5th. I crossed the water, and preached at the Glass-houses on the one thing needful. In our return, one, at the head of a mob, railed and cursed us so bitterly, that I concluded he must be a Roman Catholic. I found, upon inquiry, that he was son to a neighbouring Squire, a zealous Papist.

I passed an hour with Mr. Watson, one of the Town-Sergeants, and lately the greatest swearer in Newcastle. Now God has touched his heart, both his fellows, and his masters, the Aldermen, are set against him, as one man. The Mayor, he tells me, asked him publicly, "What, Mr. Watson, do you go to hear these men?" He answered, "Yes, at every proper opportunity ; and I wish you would hear them too." One of the Aldermen expressed his impatience by cursing "that fellow, Watson ! we can neither make him drink nor swear."

Tues., March 6th. I wrote to my brother : "My objection to your address in the name of the Methodists is, that it would constitute us a sect ; at least it would *seem to allow* that we are a body distinct from the national Church ;

whereas we are only a sound part of that Church. Guard against this ; and in the name of the Lord address to-morrow.”*

Thur., March 8th. The Society, at parting, were all in tears. I lodged that night at Darlington.

Sat., March 10th. I came with John Downs to Epworth. On the common Thomas Westal overtook us, being driven out of Nottingham by the mob and Mayor. I called on Mrs. Maw, and found her in a sweet waiting way : her sickness has been a great blessing.

I preached at the Cross, on, “Enter into the rock, and hide yourselves,” &c., to a people willing to take warning.

I took John Healey’s account of their treatment at Nottingham. The Mayor sent for Thomas Westal. John went with him. Thomas desired time to read the oath, which they offered him ; upon which Mr. Mayor threatened to send him to prison. While he was making his mittimus, John Healey asked, “Does not the law allow a man three hours to consider of it?” This checked their haste ; and they permitted him to hear first what he should swear to. He said, it was all very good, and what he had often heard Mr. Wesleys say, that King George was our rightful King, and no other ; and he would take this oath with all his heart.

They had first asked John Healey if he would take the oaths. He answered, “I will take them now ; but I would not before I heard Mr. Wesleys ; for I was a Jacobite till they convinced me of the truth, and of His Majesty’s right.” “See the old Jesuit,” cries one of the venerable Aldermen : “he has all his paces, I warrant you !” Another, on Thomas Westal’s holding his hand to his eyes, cried, “See, see ! he is confessing his sins !” They treated them like Faithful and Christian at Vanity-fair, only they did not burn them yet, or even put them in the cage. They demanded their horses for the King’s service, and would not believe them that they had none, till they sent and searched.

Not finding any cause to punish, they were forced to dis-

* See Mr. John Wesley’s Journal, under the date of March 5th, 1744.—EDIT.

miss them ; but soon after the Mayor sent for Thomas Westal, and commanded him to depart the town. He answered, he should obey his orders, and accordingly came to Epworth. Here he told me he had found out who the Pretender was, for Mr. Gurney told him, many years ago there was one King James, who was turned out, and one King William taken in his place, and that then the Parliament made a law that no Papist should ever be King, by which law King James's son, whom he had now discovered to be the Pretender, was justly kept out.

Sun., March 11th. I warned the people at the Cross, and then our children, to meet God in the way of his judgments. I rode the next day to Birstal.

Tues., March 13th. I spent the day in visiting the brethren from house to house.

Wed., March 14th. Setting out for J. B.'s Societies, one told me, there was a Constable with a warrant, in which my name was mentioned. I sent for him, and he showed it me. It was "to summon witnesses to some treasonable words said to be spoken by one Westley." The poor man trembled ; said he had no business with me, and was right glad to get out of my hands. He was afterwards of my audience, and wept, as did most. I was then taking horse, but found such a bar or burden crossing me, that I could not proceed. At the same time, the brethren besought me to stay, lest the enemies should say I durst not stand trial. I knew not how to determine but by a lot. We prayed ; and the lot came for my stay.

It was much upon my mind that I should be called to bear my testimony, and vindicate the loyalty of God's people. By the order of Providence, several Justices are now at Wakefield. A woman stands to it, that she heard me talk treason ; but there is an overruling Providence. I found it hard not to pre-meditate or think of to-morrow.

I met the brethren at Leeds, and many others in an old upper-room. After singing, I shifted my place, to draw them to the upper end. One desired me to come nearer the door, that they might hear without. I removed again, and drew the weight of the people after me. In that instant the floor sunk. I lost my senses, but recovered them in a moment, and was filled with power from above. I lifted

up my head first, and saw the people under me heaps upon heaps. I cried out, "Fear not: the Lord is with us; our lives are all safe!" and then,—

"Praise God, from whom all blessings flow."

I lifted up the fallen as fast as I could, and perceived by their countenances which were our children; several of whom were hurt, but none killed.

We found, when the dust and tumult was a little settled, that the rafters had broke off short, close to the main beam. A woman lay dangerously ill in the room below on the opposite side, and a child in the cradle just under the ruins. But the sick woman calling the nurse a minute before, she carried the child with her to the standing side, and all three were preserved.

Another of the Society was moved, she knew not why, to go out with her child, just before the room fell. Above one hundred lay with me among the wounded; though I did not properly fall, but slid softly down, and lit on my feet. My hand was bruised, and part of the skin rubbed off my head. One sister had her arm broke, and set immediately; rejoicing with joy unspeakable. Another, strong in faith, was so crushed that she expected instant death. I asked her, when got to bed, whether she was not afraid to die. She answered, that she was without fear, even when she thought her soul was departing, and only said in calm faith, "Jesus, receive my spirit!" Her body continues full of pain, and her soul of love.

A boy of eighteen was taken up roaring, "I will be good, I will be good." They got his leg set, which was broke in two places. He had come, as usual, to make a disturbance, and struck several of the women going in, till one took him up stairs for Providence to teach him better.

After the hurry, I opened my book on those remarkable words: "Therefore this iniquity shall be to you as a breach ready to fall, swelling out in a high wall, whose breaking cometh suddenly at an instant."

The news was soon spread through the town, and drew many to the place, who expressed their compassion by wishing all our necks had been broke. I preached out of the town, in weariness and painfulness. The Lord was our

strong consolation. Never did I more clearly see that not a hair of our head can fall to the ground, without our heavenly Father.

Thur., March 15th. I baptized a Quaker, who received forgiveness in that hour.

I rode to Wakefield, and at eleven waited upon Justice Burton at his inn, with two other Justices, Sir Rowland Wynn, and the Rev. Mr. Zouch. I told him, I had seen a warrant of his, to summon witnesses to some treasonable words, "said to be spoken by one Westley ;" that I had put off my journey to London to wait upon him, and answer whatever should be laid to my charge.

He answered, he had nothing to say against me, and I might depart. I replied, that was not sufficient, without clearing my character, and that of many innocent people, whom their enemies were pleased to call Methodists. "Vindicate them!" said my brother Clergyman: "that you will find a very hard task." I answered, "As hard as you may think it, I will engage to prove that they all, to a man, are true members of the Church of England, and loyal subjects of His Majesty King George." I then desired they would administer to me the oaths, and added, "If it was not too much trouble, I could wish, gentlemen, you would send for every Methodist in England, and give them the same opportunity you do me, of declaring their loyalty upon oath."

Justice Burton said, he was informed that we constantly prayed for the Pretender in all our Societies, or *nocturnal meetings*, as Mr. Zouch called them. I answered, "The very reverse is true. We constantly pray for His Majesty King George by name. These are such hymns as we sing in our Societies, a sermon I preached before the University, another my brother preached there, his Appeals, and a few more treatises, containing our principles and practice." Here I gave them our books, and was bold to say, "I am as true a Church-of-England man, and as loyal a subject, as any man in the kingdom." "That is impossible," they cried all; but as it was not my business to dispute, and as I could not answer till the witnesses appeared, I withdrew without farther reply.

While I waited at a neighbouring house, one of the

brethren brought me the Constable of Birstal, whose heart God hath touched. He told me, he had summoned the principal witness, Mary Castle, on whose information the warrant was granted, and who was setting out on horseback, when the news came to Birstal that I was not gone forward to London, as they expected, but round to Wakefield. Hearing this, she turned back, and declared to him, that she did not hear the treasonable words herself; but another woman told her so. Three more witnesses, who were to swear to my words, retracted likewise, and knew nothing of the matter: the fifth, good Mr. Woods, the alehouse-keeper, is forthcoming, it seems, in the afternoon.

Now I plainly see the consequence of my not appearing here to look my enemies in the face. Had I gone on my journey, here would have been witnesses enough, and oaths enough, to stir up a persecution against the Methodists. I took the witnesses' names,—Mary Castle, W. Walker, Lionel Knowls, Arthur Furth, Joseph Woods; and a copy of the warrant, as follows:—

“West-riding of Yorkshire.—To the Constable of Birstal, in the said Riding, or Deputy.

“These are, in His Majesty's name, to require and command you to summon Mary Castle of Birstal aforesaid, and all other such persons as you are informed can give any information against one Westley, or any other of the Methodist speakers, for speaking any treasonable words or exhortations, as praying for the banished, or for the Pretender, &c., to appear before me, and other His Majesty's Justices of the Peace for the said Riding, at the White Hart in Wakefield, on the 15th of March instant, by ten of the clock in the forenoon, to be examined, and to declare the truth of what they, and each of them, know, touching the premises; and that you likewise make a return hereof before us on the same day. Fail not. Given under my hand the 10th of March, 1744.

“E. BURTON.”

Between two and three honest Mr. Woods came, and started back at sight of me, as if he had trod upon a serpent. One of our brothers took hold on him, and told me he trembled every joint of him. The Justice's Clerk had bid the Constable bring him to him as soon as ever he came; but

notwithstanding all the Clerk's instructions, Woods frankly confessed, now he was come, he had nothing to say ; and would not have come at all, had they not forced him.

I waited at the door, where the Justices were examining the disaffected, till seven. I took public notice of Mr. Oherhausen, the Moravian Teacher ; but not of Mr. Kendrick. When all their business was over, and I had been insulted at their door from eleven in the morning till seven at night, I was sent for, and asked, "What would Mr. Wesley desire?" Wesley. "I desire nothing, but to know what is alleged against me." Justice Burton said, "What hope of truth from him? he is another of them." Then addressing to me, "Here are two of your brethren ; one so silly, it is a shame he should ever set up for a teacher ; and the other has told us a thousand lies and equivocations upon oath. He has not wit enough, or he would make a complete Jesuit." I looked round, and said, "I see none of my brethren here, but this gentleman," pointing to the Reverend Justice, who looked as if he did not thank me for claiming him. Burton. "Why, do you not know this man?" (showing me Kendrick.) Wesley. "Yes, Sir, very well ; for two years ago I expelled him our Society in London, for setting up for a Preacher." To this poor Kendrick assented ; which put a stop to farther reflections on the Methodists.

Justice Burton then said I might depart, for they had nothing against me. Wesley. "Sir, that is not sufficient : I cannot depart till my character is fully cleared. It is no trifling matter. Even my life is concerned in the charge." Burton. "I did not summon you to appear." Wesley. "I was the person meant by 'one Westley,' and my supposed words were the occasion of your order, which I read, signed with your name." Burton. "I will not deny my order. I did send to summon the witnesses." Wesley. "Yes ; and I took down their names from the Constable's paper. The principal witness, Mary Castle, was setting out, but, hearing I was here, she turned back, and declared to the Constable she only heard another say that I spoke treason. Three more of the witnesses recanted for the same reason ; and Mr. Woods, who is here, says he has nothing to say, and should not have come neither, had he not been

forced by the Minister. Had I not been here, he would have had enough to say ; and ye would have had witnesses and oaths enough ; but I suppose my coming has prevented theirs." One of the Justices added, "I suppose so too."

They all seemed fully satisfied, and would have had me so too ; but I insisted on their hearing Mr. Woods. Burton. "Do you desire he may be called as an evidence for you?" Wesley. "I desire he may be heard as an evidence against me, if he has aught to lay to my charge." Then Mr. Zouch asked Woods what he had to say, what were the words I spoke. Woods was as backward to speak as they to hear him, but was at last compelled to say, "I have nothing to say against the gentleman ; I only heard him pray that the Lord would call home his banished." Zouch. "But were there no words before or after, which pointed to these troublesome times?" Woods. "No, none at all." Wesley. "It was on February 12th, before the earliest news of the invasion. But if folly and malice may be interpreters, any words which any of you gentlemen speak may be construed into treason." Zouch. "It is very true." Wesley. "Now, gentlemen, give me leave to explain my own words. I had no thoughts of praying for the Pretender, but for those that confess themselves strangers and pilgrims upon earth, who seek a country, knowing this is not their place. The Scriptures, you, Sir, know," (to the Clergyman,) "speak of us as captive exiles, who are absent from the Lord while in the body. We are not at home till we are in heaven." Zouch. "I thought you would so explain the words ; and it is a fair interpretation." I asked if they were all satisfied. They said they were, and cleared me as fully as I desired.

I then asked them again to administer to me the oaths. Mr. Zouch looked on my sermon ; asked who ordained me, (the Archbishop and Bishop of London the same week,) and said, with the rest, it was quite unnecessary, since I was a Clergyman, and Student of Christ-church, and had preached before the University, and taken the oaths before. Yet I motioned it again, till they acknowledged in explicit terms "my loyalty unquestionable." I then presented Sir Rowland and Mr. Zouch with the Appeal, and took my leave.

Half hour after seven we set out for Birstal, and a joyful journey we had. Our brethren met us on the road, and we gathered together on the hill, and sang praises lustily, with a good courage. Their enemies were rising at Birstal, full of the Wednesbury devil, on presumption of my not finding justice at Wakefield: wherein they were more confirmed by my delay. They had begun pulling down John Nelson's house, when our singing damped and put them to flight. Now I see, if I had not gone to confront my enemies, or had been evil intreated at Wakefield, it might have occasioned a general persecution here, which the Lord hath now crushed in the birth. No weapon that is formed against us shall prosper, and every tongue that shall arise against us in judgment we shall condemn.

Fri., March 16th. I set out for Derby; preached at a Society of David Taylor's, whose immoderate warnings against us have made them ten times more eager to hear us. A plain proof that his *poor sinners* are still under the law.

Sat., March 17th. I preached at Woodhouse at noon, and in the evening a little beyond Stockport. I observed some go out, upon my recommending prayer; but did not wonder, when I heard they were *still*.

Sun., March 18th. I was much assisted to explain our Lord's words, concerning himself, to a great multitude, "The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me," &c. I preached at John Bennet's father's. One only woman I saw remarkably unconcerned; who was wife to a *still* speaker.

I invited a much larger company in the evening to draw nigh with a true heart, in full assurance of faith. I bestowed two hours more in warning the Society against the devices of the *still* devil.

Mon., March 19th. I cried, in the heart of the Peak, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." In the evening I preached at Sheffield; and read the Society the account of our brethren's sufferings, which seemed to quicken them much.

At Barley-hall I expounded Luke xxi. 34; and we were all broken down by the power of love. I received fresh strength to pursue my journey. While passing Rotherham, where I had never been before, the mob rose upon us; but could not keep pace with our horses.

By night we came to Nottingham ; and well for us that it was night. The mob are come to a great height through the encouragement of the Mayor. We knew not the way to brother Sant's, and could not inquire : but our horses carried us straight to his door. The house was immediately beset as usual. I was troubled for these few sheep in the wilderness. The wolf has made havoc of them : the Magistrates being the persecutors, not only refusing them justice, but cruelly abusing them as rioters. They presented a petition to Judge Abdy, as he passed through the town. He spake kindly to them, and bade them, if they were farther molested, present the Corporation. He chid the Mayor, and made him send his officers through the town, forbidding any one to injure the Methodists. He told him, "If you will begin, why don't you put down the assemblies contrary to law ? Instead of that, if there be one religious Society, you must set upon that, to destroy it."

As soon as the Judge was out of the town, they returned to persecute the Methodists more than ever ; and when they complained to the Mayor, he insulted them, "Why don't you go to my Lord Judge ?" He threatens, when the press-warrants come out, to take Daniel Sant, an industrious founder, with four children ; whose crime is, that he suffers the poor people to pray in his house.

Wed., March 21st. I exhorted the few remaining snep to keep together ; and rode to Northampton ; and the next day to the Foundery. The Society helped me to give hearty thanks to God, for the multitude of his mercies.

Mon., March 26th. My brother set out for Cornwall, where persecution rages. I rode to see Mrs. Sparrow, of Lewisham, a martyr to worldly civility.

Tues., March 27th. I called, at the Foundery, "Wash ye, make you clean," &c. The word had great effect. I met the Leaders in the solemn presence of God.

Thur., March 29th. My mouth was opened to denounce judgments against this nation, except they repent.

Fri., March 30th. At the time of intercession, we were enabled to wrestle for the nation with strong cries and tears. At the chapel the Spirit of supplication fell upon us more abundantly still.

Sun., April 1st. I expounded part of Isai. i., and had

power given me to warn them of God's approaching judgments. Our hearts were filled with joy in the evening.

Wed., April 4th. In speaking on, "The whole creation groaneth," &c., we felt the truth, and joined in the universal travail.

Wed., April 11th. The Foundery was filled by four with those who came to keep the national fast. I preached at the chapel in great weakness both of soul and body. In the midst of my discourse, the floor began to sink, with our people on it; but none of them cried out, or made the least disturbance, while they got off it.

Sat., April 14th. We were alarmed by news of a second invasion. The French, we hear, are now in the Channel. Yet this infatuated people will not believe there is any danger till they are swallowed up by it. But he that taketh warning shall deliver his soul.

Thur., April 19th. I sent T. Butts to Wednesbury, with £60, which I have collected for the sufferers.

Wed., April 25th. I prevented a weak brother of Wednesbury making affidavit against the Justices; and wrote to the brethren to suffer all things. At night I declared, "He that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved."

Fri., April 27th. I preached on, "Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity?" All our hearts were enlarged and comforted. It was a time much to be remembered.

Sun., April 29th. The whole congregation was in tears, under the word. Old Mr. Erskine, in particular, was quite broken down. The same, or greater, utterance I had in the afternoon.

Mon., April 30th. I overtook, in the street, a well-dressed person, and found an unusual desire to look back upon her. However, I walked on, till she called me by my name. I turned back, and found it to be an old intimate friend, delivered to me, that I might make her a first and last offer of the Gospel.

Wed., May 2d. Passing through the Mews, an heap of stones was cast down within a quarter of a yard of me, which, had they fallen upon me, must have dashed my brains out.

Mr. W. told me he had been with the Archbishop for

orders ; and, upon my blaming his hastiness, flew out of the house, as possessed by Legion.

I overtook my old friend Appee, in a ragged red waistcoat. He would not answer to his name ; but followed and spoke with me. He has been a soldier some time, having run through the last stages of sin and misery.

Thur., May 3d. I set out for Bristol ; and reached it the next day.

I left London with an heavy heart, quite weighed down by poor W.'s burden. He answers the character one of his intimates gave me of him : " I never thought him more than a mere speaker. I can see no grace he has. His conversation is quite contrary to the Gospel ; all light and vain. He is haughty, revengeful, headlong, and unmanageable."

Sun., May 6th. At Kingswood I expounded the good Samaritan ; and saw their tears with joy.

Tues., May 8th. I gave the sacrament to our brother Jones, a dying believer, therefore above all fear, or doubt, or desire. Sarah Perrin was one of the communicants, and found the Lord, in what she had been taught to call a carnal ordinance.

Wed., May 9th. I preached at Bath, and saw them fall under the word, broken or melted. Miss H., in particular, was as the woman in tears at the feet of Jesus.

I returned to Bristol, and finished my discourse on Simon and the woman that was a sinner. A general cry was heard throughout the congregation. We knew not how to part ; being so closely united in the love that never faileth.

Thur., May 10th. I dined at Felix Farley's with Mr. Meriton, longing to escape to us out of the hands of Calvin.

Fri., May 11th. I took horse at three, and got to London by one the next day.

Sat., May 12th. My brother gave me a melancholy account of Mr. W. Disappointed of orders, he rages and rails on us, as Papists, tyrants, enemies of the Church, &c. ; declares he has found us out, and runs about, scattering firebrands, and vowing revenge.

Whitsunday, May 13th. The root of bitterness is sprung up, and thereby many are defiled. Offences abound, mostly

among the young women, who are ready to tear me to pieces for "my cruelty to poor dear Mr. W., and hindering him from getting orders."

I exhorted the Society to peace and charity, while my strength lasted.

Mon., May 14th. I could not sleep last night for thinking of the young man, Absalom.

We prayed mightily for our dear brother Nelson, pressed for a soldier, and a prisoner in York.

Tues., May 15th. I enforced the example of the woman of Canaan ; and many cried after Him who was come into their coasts.

I spoke with all kindness to T. W., but could not in any measure humble him.

Sat., May 19th. I was waked this morning by the horrid blasphemies of one who did run well, and *was* plainly justified, but, through the spirit of offence, left the Society ; then fell from one wickedness to another, such as drunkenness, adultery ; and was now come to defy the living God. Him that thinketh he standeth, let him take heed lest he fall. In vain hath God forgiven the whole debt, if the evil and wicked servant will not have mercy on his fellow-servant.

Once more I besought poor T. W. to return, and recover himself out of the snare of the devil. The Lord touched his proud heart ; he burst into tears, and confessed the devil's devices to separate him from his best and only friends ; and promised obedience for the time to come. I wept over him, and felt that, with all my heart, I could both forgive and forget.

Wed., May 23d. I took up my cross, to oblige my brother, and began examining the classes, after earnest prayer for meekness and discernment. This day I only left out one, an incorrigible, unconvincible, bitter scold.

Tues., May 29th. We have not had so great blessing in the word for a long time, as while I was explaining, "I will allure her, and bring her into the wilderness, and speak comfortably unto her."

Sat., June 2d Mr. Larwood discovered to me Mr. W.'s real intention, "to set up for himself." Above five hundred of the Society, he told Larwood, would follow him.

Wed., June 6th. I visited poor Appee, in the Tower, ready for transportation.

Toward the end of my discourse at the chapel, Mr. Erskine was sent to receive a soldier brought by William Shent, to redeem John Nelson. He immediately took him to Lord Stairs, and got a discharge for John Nelson. Our brother Downes also we received out of the mouth of the lion. Our prayers return thick upon us.

Fri., June 8th. I took my last leave of my old friend Appee, who embarks to-day for America. I gave him books and advice, which perhaps may not be finally lost upon him.

Tues., June 12th. I preached on wrestling Jacob ; and a glorious time it was. Many wept with the angel, and made supplication, and were encouraged to wait upon the Lord continually.

Fri., June 15th. I was grieved to hear more and more of W.'s ingratitude. A lying spirit seems to have taken full possession of him. There is nothing so gross or improbable which he does not say.

Mon., June 18th. I wrote to a friend, "Be not you weary of well-doing, or overcome of evil. You see your calling, to suffer all things. Pray for me, that I also may endure unto the end ; for a thousand times I cry out, 'The burden of this people is more than I am able to bear.' O my good friend, you do not know them. Such depth of ingratitude I did not think was in the devils of hell."

At night I was informed, that a friend had entertained the deepest prejudice against me, on supposition that I meant her in a late discourse. Lord, what is man ? What is friendship ?

Wed., June 20th. By losing my way, I found, at a wavering brother's house, five stray sheep, whom I received back into the fold.

Sun., June 24th. Our brethren, Hodges, Taylor, and Meriton, assisted us at the sacrament. I received it with the whole Society, to our mutual comfort. At our love-feast we were six ordained Ministers.

Mon., June 25th. We opened our Conference with solemn prayer, and the divine blessing. I preached with much assistance, and baptized Samuel Holloway ; who felt in

that moment the great burden taken off. We continued in Conference the rest of the week, settling our doctrines, practice, and discipline, with great love and unanimity.

Mon., July 2d. At night I was drawn out in prayer, with strong cryings and tears. I received my poor prodigal W. with open arms.

Sun., July 8th. I preached on our Lord's multiplying the loaves ; neither did he send us empty away. I exhorted a large audience at the Foundery to take to them the whole armour of God ; and continued my discourse for two hours, the Lord comforting us on every side.

Mon., July 9th. I took horse at two, with my friend and companion, Meriton ; and acknowledged, the next day, in Bristol, "Hitherto the Lord hath helped us."

I was strengthened to preach on, "Let not your heart be troubled ;" and the Lord made me a son of consolation. A cry of distress first, and then of joy, ran through the congregation. Miss Bair, with many others, received the word into their hearts, and sorrow and sighing fled away before it.

Wed., July 11th. That I might ascribe nothing to my speaking, before I opened my mouth this morning, my heart was constrained, and filled with godly fear. I then expounded, "If any man *sin*, we have an Advocate with the Father : " and many found the benefit of his intercession.

I passed two hours in Christian conference and prayer with Dr. M., and the church in his house.

Thur., July 12th. I enforced our Lord's most seasonable saying, "He that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved ;" and set out with Mr. Meriton for Cornwall.

At Middlesea I called the weary and heavy-laden to Christ. He gave testimony to the word of his grace, and bowed the hearts of all present. It was a sweet mourning indeed !

Fri., July 13th. I set out with our guide, John Slocum, a poor baker's boy, whom God has raised up to help these sincere souls, and not only to labour, but also to suffer, for them. When the press-warrants came out, the world would not lose the opportunity of oppressing the Christians. He was taken, and, by his own uncle, dragged away to

prison. They kept him a week, and then brought him before the Commissioners, who could find no cause to punish or detain him ; being of Zaccheus's stature, and nothing terrified by his adversaries. They were obliged at last, notwithstanding all their threatenings, to let him go.

I called on Hannah Bidgood, at Sticklepath, and some others, mostly Quakers. My heart was drawn out toward them in prayer and love ; and I felt, "He that doeth the will of my Father, the same is my brother and my sister and my mother."

I met an aged Clergyman, whom Mr. Thompson had sent to meet us, and found, in conversing, that he had been an acquaintance and cotemporary with my father. Upon Mr. Thompson's preaching salvation by faith, he had received the kingdom as a little child ; and has ever since owned the truth and its followers. He conducted us to his house near Trewint.

Sun., July 15th. He carried us to St. Ginnys, where our loving host and brother Thompson received us with open arms. I made proof of my ministry in his church from, "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people," &c. ; and again, from blind Bartimeus. The word took place in some hearts, I cannot doubt, though I am nothing.

Mon., July 16th. He read prayers in Mr. Bennet's church : I preached on, "Fear not, little flock : it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom," &c.

Tues., July 17th. I came, by nine at night, with Mr. Bennet and Meriton, through the pits and shafts, to our host near Gwennap.

Here a little one is become a thousand. What an amazing work hath God done in one year ! The whole country is alarmed, and gone forth after the sound of the Gospel. In vain do the pulpits ring of "Poper, madness, enthusiasm." Our Preachers are daily pressed to new places ; and enabled to preach five or six times a day. Persecution is kept off till the seed takes root. Societies are springing up everywhere ; and still the cry from all sides is, "Come and help us."

I preached near Gwennap to about a thousand followers of Christ, on, "Fear not, little flock." Great love and joy appeared in their faces, such as the world knoweth not of.

When I came to meet the Society, I found almost the whole congregation waiting quietly without the door, longing to be admitted with the rest. I stood at the window, so as to be heard of all. I felt what manner of spirit they were of; and had sweet fellowship with them, and strong consolation.

Thur., July 19th. I found the same congregation at five, and pointed them to the Son of man lifted up as the serpent in the wilderness. I spake to each of the Society, as their state required.

I breakfasted with one who was a fierce persecutor when I was last in the country; but is now a witness of the truth she so bitterly opposed.

I preached at Crowen, to between one and two thousand tinnerns, who seemed started out of the earth. Several hid their faces, and mourned inwardly, being too deeply affected to cry out. I concluded with a strong exhortation to continue in the ship, the shattered sinking Church of England; and my brother Meriton, whose heart I spake, seconded and confirmed my saying. The poor people were ready to eat us up, and sent us away with many an hearty blessing.

We then set our faces against the world, and rode to St. Ives. Here the mob and Ministers together have pulled down the preaching-house; and but a fortnight ago went round in the dead of the night, and broke the windows of all that were only suspected of Christianity.

We entered John Nance's house without molestation. Four of our sisters there, on sight of me, sunk down, unable to utter a word through joy and love; but they welcomed me with their tears. It was a solemn, silent meeting. In some time we recovered our speech for prayer and thanksgiving. I got an hour by myself in the garden, and was suffered to feel my own great weakness. Without were fightings, within fears; but my fears were all scattered by the sight of my dear brethren and children. I rejoiced over them with singing; but their joy and love exceeded. We all rejoiced in hope of meeting Him in the air. The Spirit of glory rested on the sufferers for Christ's sake. My brother Meriton added a few words to mine; and their hearts clave to him. Such a feast I have not had for many

months. Even our Father's hired servants had at this time bread enough and to spare.

We laid us down in peace, and took our rest; for the Lord only made us dwell in safety.

Fri., July 20th. While I applied our Lord's most comfortable words, John xiv. 1, we were all dissolved in tears of joy, desire, love; and seemed on the wing to our heavenly Father's house.

I walked through the town to church with Mr. Meriton. Our warm friend the Curate saluted us courteously; and none opened their mouth against us. Mr. Meriton's stature and band kept them in awe; or rather the fear of God was upon them, restraining them, though they knew it not.

We met at one, in obedience to our Church, and lifted up our voice for the remnant that is left. We tasted the blessedness of mourning; and doubt not, however God may deal with this sinful nation, but our prayers for Jerusalem will one day be answered.

Sat., July 21st. While we were walking near the quay, our friend the mob set up a shout against us, and gave plain marks of their Cainish disposition, if permitted. Only one stone was cast at us. We passed through the midst of them, and set out for St. Just.

I preached on the plain, and brother Meriton after me. Our Lord rides on triumphant through this place. Upward of two hundred are settled in classes, most of whom have tasted the pardoning grace of God.

Sun., July 22d. At nine I cried in the street, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters!" The word ran very swiftly. When God gives it, who can hinder its course? I had an opportunity of communicating with a sick brother; whence we all went to church. It was crowded with these schismatical Methodists, who have not all, it seems, left it through our means. The Curate is looked upon by his brethren as half a Methodist, only because he does not rail at us like them.

I preached at Morva, without, since I might not within, the church-walls. I told a man who contradicted me, that I would talk with him by and by. A visible blessing confirmed the word. Afterwards I took my rough friend by the hand, carried him to the house, and begged him to

accept of a book. He was won ; excused his rudeness, and left me hugely pleased.

I preached at Zunnor, where very few hold out against the truth, notwithstanding the Minister's pains to pervert the ways of the Lord. None are of his, but who are evidently on Satan's, side, even his drunken companions, whom he secures against the Methodists, and warns at the alehouse not to forsake the Church. I hastened back to Morva, and rejoiced over many who were lost, and are found. One hundred and fifty are joined in Society, and continue steadfastly in the Apostles' doctrine, and in fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

Mon., July 23d. I breakfasted at Mr. L.'s, a poor slave of Satan, till, at the sound of the Gospel, his chains fell off, and left him waiting for the seal of his pardon. I pointed many sinners to the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world. All were in tears at the remembrance of His sufferings.

Tues., July 24th. I preached near Penzance, to the little flock encompassed by ravening wolves. Their Minister rages above measure against this new sect, who are spread throughout his four livings. His Reverend brethren follow his example. The grossest lies which are brought them they swallow without examination, and retail the following Sunday. One of the Society (James Dale) went lately to the Worshipful and Rev. Dr. Borlase for justice against a rioter, who had broke open his house, and stole his goods. The Doctor's answer was, "Thou conceited fellow, art thou too turned religious? They may burn thy house if they will: thou shalt have no justice." With these words he drove him from the judgment-seat.

I preached at St. Just to the largest company that had ever been seen there; and strongly warned the Society against spiritual pride.

Wed., July 25th. I enforced that most seasonable caution, "Him that thinketh he standeth, let him take heed lest he fall;" two hours after expounded the pool of Bethesda, and dwelt upon our Lord's admonition to every justified sinner, "Go, and sin no more, lest a worse thing happen unto thee."

I found the brethren at Morva beginning to build a

Society-house. We knelt down upon the place, and prayed for a blessing.

Before preaching at St. Ives I was so weighed down, that I would gladly have sunk into the earth or sea, to escape my own burden. But God lifted me up by the word I preached, and filled us all with an hope full of immortality. We looked through the veil of things temporal, to things eternal, and the mount of God, where we trust shortly to stand before the Lamb. Every soul did then, I believe, taste the powers of the world to come, in some measure, and longed for the appearing of Jesus Christ.

One of our sisters complained to the Mayor of some who had thrown into her house stones of many pounds' weight, which fell on the pillow within a few inches of her sucking child. The Magistrate damned her, and said, "You shall have no justice here. You see there is none for you at London, or you would have got it before now." With this saying he drove her out of his house.

Fri., July 27th. I preached at Gulval, and admitted some new members, particularly one who had been the greatest persecutor in all this country.

Sat., July 28th. The last midnight assault upon our brethren, I am now informed, was made by the townsmen, and a crew that are here fitting out for privateers; who thought it prudent to make the first proof of their courage upon their own unarmed countrymen. They made their regular approaches with beat of drum, to take the poor people's houses by storm. But they were only permitted to batter them with stones, and endanger the lives of a few women and children. Woe be to the first French or Spaniards, who fall into the hands of men so flushed with victory! They only want the Captain who drew upon me to head them, and then they would carry the world before them!

Sun., July 29th. I expounded Isai. xxxv. at St. Just; and many hands that hung down were lifted up. From church I hasted to Morva, and preached to a vast congregation, on, "Blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it." At Zunnor I explained the parable of the sower.

My brother Meriton added a few words, much to the pur-

pose. I concluded with exhorting them to meet God in the way of his judgments.

We had our first love-feast at St. Ives. The cloud stayed the whole time on the assembly. Several were so overpowered with love and joy that the vessel was ready to break. I endeavoured to moderate their joy, by speaking of the sufferings which shall follow ; and they who were then with Him as on Mount Tabor appeared all ready to follow Him to Mount Calvary.

Mon., July 30th. I cried to a mixed multitude of wakened and unawakened sinners near Penzance, "Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by?" I prayed with the still-increasing flock, whose greatest persecutor is their Minister. He and the Clergy of these parts are much enraged at our people's being so ready in the Scriptures. One fairly told Jonathan Reeves, he wished the Bible were in Latin only, that none of the vulgar might be able to read it. Yet these are the men that rail at us as Papists!

Tues., July 31st. I expounded the woman of Canaan, to an house-full of sincere souls, who had sat up all night to hear the word in the morning. I spake with some who have tasted the good word of grace, though they live in Penzance, where Satan keeps his seat.

I visited a second time a poor dying sinner, who now gives up his own filthy rags for the best robe. His daughter, upon her request, I admitted into the Society.

I rode to St. Just. I climbed up and down Cape-Cornwall with my brother Meriton, to the needless hazard of our necks. I preached in the afternoon to a larger congregation than ever, and continued my discourse till night, from Luke xxi. 34. The Spirit of love was poured out abundantly, and great grace was upon all. I walked to the Society ; stood upon the hill, and sang, and prayed, and rejoiced with exceeding great joy. I concluded the day and month as I would wish to conclude my life.

Wed., August 1st. I preached in a new place, to near two thousand listening strangers, "Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever."

I returned to St. Ives, and found our beloved brother Thompson, who was come to see us, and the children whom God had given us. Our enemies were alarmed by his

coming, and the brethren strengthened. At night I set before them the example of the first Christians, who "continued steadfast in the Apostles' doctrine," &c. For two hours we rejoiced as men that divide the spoil.

Thur., August 2d. I rode with Mr. Thompson and Meriton to a large gentleman's seat near Penryn. We saw the people come pouring in from Falmouth, and all parts. The court-yard, which might contain two thousand, was quickly full. I stood in a gallery above the people, and called, "Wash ye, make you clean," &c. They eagerly listened to the word of life: even the gentlemen and ladies listened, while I preached repentance towards God, and faith in Jesus Christ. I exhorted them in many words to attend all the ordinances of the Church; to submit to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake; to stop the mouth of gainsayers, by fearing God and honouring the King; and to prevent the judgments hanging over our heads by a general reformation.

Sat., August 4th. I preached at Gwennap, where the awakening is general. Very many who have not courage to enter into the Society have yet broke off their sins by repentance, and are waiting for forgiveness. The whole county is sensible of the change; for last Assizes there was a jail-delivery,—not one felon to be found in their prisons, which has not been known before in the memory of man. At their last revel they had not men enough to make a wrestling-match, all the Gwennap men being struck off the devil's list, and found wrestling against him, not for him.

Sun., August 5th. I preached my farewell sermon at Gwennap, to an innumerable multitude. They stood mostly on the green plain before me, and on the hill that surrounded it. Many scoffers from Redruth placed themselves on the opposite hill, which looked like Mount Ebal. O that none of them may be found among the goats in that day! I warned and invited all by threatenings and promises. The adversary was wonderfully restrained, and I hope disturbed in many of his children. My Father's children were comforted on every side. They hung upon the word of life; and they shall find it able to save their souls. I spoke on for two hours; yet knew not how to let

them go. Such sorrow and love as they then expressed, the world will not believe, though a man declare it unto them. My brother Thompson was astonished, and confessed he had never seen the like among Germans, predestinarians, or any others. With great difficulty we got through them at last, and set out on our journey. Several men and women kept pace with our horses for two or three miles; then parted, in body, not in spirit. We lodged three miles short of Mitchel.

Mon., August 6th. Between five and six in the evening I got to Mr. Bennet's, and preached in his church, on, "Repent, and be converted." Upon my speaking against their drunken revels, one contradicted and blasphemed. I asked, "Who is he that pleads for the devil?" and one answered in those very words, "I am he that pleads for the devil." I took occasion from hence to show the revelers their champion, and the whole congregation their state by nature. Much good I saw immediately brought out of Satan's evil. Then I set myself against his avowed advocate, and drove him out of the Christian assembly. I concluded with earnest prayer for him.

Tues., August 7th. In the afternoon Mr. Meriton read prayers in Trismere church, and I expounded the good Samaritan to a thronged audience. Some gentry were come eighteen miles to hear the word, and received it with joy. We have not had a more gracious season since we came into the country.

Wed., August 8th. I read prayers and preached at St. Ginnys. One of my audience was a neighbouring Clergyman, my cotemporary at Christ-Church, who came in much love to invite me to his house.

It should not be forgot,—the concurrent testimony which my brethren bore with me last Monday night, in Mr. Bennet's church, against harmless diversions, on my declaring that I was, by them, kept dead to God, asleep in the devil's arms, secure in a state of damnation for eighteen years; Mr. Meriton added, aloud, "And I for twenty-five;" "And I," cried Mr. Thompson, "for thirty-five;" "And I," said Mr. Bennet, "for above seventy."

Thur., August 9th. I rode by Brinsworthy, Mr. Thompson's house, near Barnstaple, to Minehead; where I be-

sought near a thousand sinners to repent, and believe the Gospel. I found it possible to preach the law in its rigour, with such apparent good-will, as shall convince without exasperating. But not unto me, O Lord, not unto me !

Sat., August 11th. At six I set sail in a sloop our sister Jones had sent to fetch me to Fonmon. We had a delightful passage ; landed at noon, near Aberthaw, and were received by our dear friend, and three of her little ones, with some sisters from Cardiff. We went on our way singing and rejoicing to the Castle.

Here I received the melancholy news of the miscarriage of one, whom I loved as my own soul. I was sensibly wounded by his ingratitude. He has verified all my warnings and fears. But that he should attempt to justify himself by blackening me, was beyond all that I could have imagined. Lord, humble him ; but do him good in his latter end.

At night I met many faithful children whom the Lord hath given us, and discoursed to them on my favourite subject, "These are they that came out of great tribulation," &c. The God of all consolation was mightily with us, even the God who comforteth us in all our temptations. O how delightfully did we mourn after Him whom our soul loveth ! not with the noisy, turbulent sorrow of newly-awakened souls, which most times passes away as a morning-cloud, but with the deep contrition of love. All the congregation was in tears, in silent tears of desire or joy. This is the mourning wherewith I pray the Lord to bless me, till he wipes away all tears from my eyes.

Sun., August 12th. Mr. Hodges read prayers at Wenvo. I preached convincing words, and, after the sacrament, prayed ; the Spirit sealing the answer on our hearts.

I preached, in the Castle-yard at Cardiff, "Enter into the rock, and into the clefts of the rock," &c. I visited two sick brethren, one waiting for the salvation of God, the other in good measure possessed of it.

Mon., August 13th. I called on the brethren again, assembled in their room, "Be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises." I was much revived by our dying brother, who is now ready to be offered up. I asked him whether he had

rather die or live. He answered, "To depart and to be with Christ is far better." He has been, both before and since his illness, a pattern for all Christian graces ; was the first in this place who received the Gospel of full salvation. Now he only waits that most welcome word, "Come up hither."

I prayed with him again some hours after, and rejoiced over him with strong triumphant faith. He said, there was something near him which would make him doubt, but could not, for he knew his Saviour stood ready to receive his spirit. I desired his prayers, kissed him, and took my last leave. He looked up, like my Hannah Richardson, and broke out, "Lord Jesus, give him a double portion of thy Spirit." We were all in tears. Mine, I fear, flowed from envy and impatience of life,—where briers and thorns are with me, and I dwell in the midst of scorpions. I felt throughout my soul, that I would rather be in his condition, than enjoy the whole of created good.

I enlarged in the Castle on our Lord's lamentation over Jerusalem ; and many wept, because they knew the time of *their* visitation. In the Society I was borne as on eagles' wings. All were partakers of my faith and joy. We wrestled in prayer for my son A'salom, (surely all their prayers and tears will not be lost,) for the flock in London, and for the whole church.

I now experienced the truth of a strange saying I once heard from a servant of Christ, that she could know when any were speaking evil of her, by the Spirit of God, then especially resting upon her. I could not help telling it the brethren, yet with a fear lest they should think of me above what they ought to think. It is far better to be thought and spoke evil of. We continued rejoicing before God with reverence, and such deep solid comfort as I have rarely felt before. How then shall we triumph, when we are made the filth and offscouring of all things !

Tues., August 14th. We had prayed last night with joy full of glory for our departing brother, just while he gave up his spirit,—as I pray God I may give up mine. This morning I expounded that last best triumph of faith, "I have fought a good fight," &c. The Lord administered strong consolation to those that love his appearing. We

sang a song of victory for our deceased friend ; then went to the house, and rejoiced, and gave thanks ; and rejoiced again with singing over him. The spirit, at its departure, had left marks of its happiness on the clay. No sight upon earth, in my eyes, is half so lovely.

Wed., August 15th. I preached near Cowbridge to many awakening sinners ; and again in the Castle-yard on those solemn words, "The Spirit and the Bride say, Come."

Thur., August 16th. I preached to the prisoners, with the greatest presence of my Master that I have known in Wales : yet afterwards, in the room, confessed he had kept the greatest blessing till the last.

Fri., August 17th. I took horse at three ; crossed the water in a quarter of an hour ; and at two gave thanks in Bristol, for our success in all things.

I wrote to T. B. as follows :—

"The things which have happened I know shall be for the furtherance of the Gospel : but can a mother forget her sucking child ? My love to those that hate me passeth the love of nature. Would to God I had died for thee, O Absalom, my son, my son !

"O, Tommy ! could you be to me what he is ? Indeed you could : such is the nature of man, although at present you and I should say, 'Is thy servant a dog, that he should do this ?' I am persuaded God will never so abandon us ; but we are capable of such ingratitude ; indeed, my brother, we are ; therefore ought not to be angry at poor T. W. O that his name and sin may be buried in oblivion ; or that all would think of him as I do !"

Sun., August 19th. I heard one of our sons in the Gospel at Kingswood. He spake sound words, which could not be reproved.

My brother Meriton assisted me to administer the sacrament to our whole Society. The Spirit helped our infirmity. I asked, in an accepted time, life for my poor rebellious son, if he has not sinned the sin unto death.

I related in the Society all that has lately passed at London. They received the mournful account as they ought, —with tenderest pity and just abhorrence. Could they help lamenting over one, who so often ministered grace to their souls ? No more than they could help cleaving to

their old shepherds, who first brought them the glad tidings, and cherished them since, as a nurse her children. "Though many teachers, yet not many fathers." This their hearts and tears abundantly confessed. Great confidence I had in them, that if not only any one, but all, our Preachers forsook us, they should draw no disciples after them.

Tues., August 21st. I preached at Cirencester ; and the next day found my brother, with a large company of our friends, at Oxford.

Thur., August 23d. I went to Christ-Church prayers, with several of the brethren, who thought it strange to see men in surplices talking, laughing, and pointing, as in a play-house, the whole time of service.

I got two or three hours' conference with my brother ; and found the spirit which had drawn us formerly in this place. I preached to a multitude of the brethren, gownsmen, and gentry from the races, who filled our inn and yard. The strangers that intermeddled not with our joy seemed struck and astonished with it, while we admonished one another in psalms, and hymns, &c. O that all the world had a taste for *our* diversion !

Fri., August 24th. I joined my brother in stirring up the Society. They did run well, till the Moravians turned them out of the way of God's ordinances.

At ten I walked with my brother, and Mr. Piers and Meriton, to St. Mary's, where my brother bore his testimony before a crowded audience, much increased by the racers. Never have I seen a more attentive congregation. They did not let a word slip them. Some of the Heads stood up the whole time, and fixed their eyes on him. If they can endure sound doctrine like his, he will surely leave a blessing behind him.*

The Vice-Chancellor sent after him, and desired his notes ; which he sealed up, and sent immediately.

We walked back in form, the little band of us four, for of the rest durst none join himself to us. I was a little diverted at the coyness of an old friend, Mr. Wells, who sat just before me, but took great care to turn his back

* The sermon which Mr. John Wesley preached on this occasion is entitled, "Scriptural Christianity," and is numbered IV. in his collected Works.—EDIT.

upon me all the time, which did not hinder my seeing through him. At noon my brother set out for London, and I for Bristol.

Sun., August 26th. I gave the sacrament at Kingswood. In the afternoon I expounded the woman of Canaan. Great was the cry after Jesus. Many a soul fell at his feet, and said, "Lord, help me."

Mon., August 27th. I administered the sacrament to our sister B., triumphing over death. We were all partakers of her joy.

I was comforted with three of our brethren from Wednesday, who brought us news that God has given them rest from all their enemies round about them. When it is most for His glory and their good, they shall be tried again by persecution, and again praise God in the fires.

Fri., August 31st. I passed a blessed hour in intercession for the Church of England. Surely they that mourn for her shall rejoice with her, when the Lord doth bring again Sion.

I rode to Bath, and preached Jesus Christ to our own Society, and many strangers. For two hours after, I was comforted with our children, and found how good a thing it is for brethren to dwell together in unity.

Sun., September 2d. I received the sacrament at the college. I met the Society, and Jesus in the midst. Scarce a soul among us but was moved, as their tears or rejoicings witnessed. Many could truly say, "Our fellowship is with the Father, and with the Son."

Tues., September 4th. I waited most of the day at the Passage for our sister Jones, and her little ones. They reached our side at last, through perils of water.

Sun., September 9th. I rode, in heavy rain, to Church-hill, with Mr. Sh. The Justice threatened him with terrible things, in case I preached. Many poor people ventured to hear, while I cried, "Behold the Lamb of God, that taketh away the sin of the world." Out of the abundance of my heart my mouth spake. When I had ended, Mr. Justice called out, and bade them pull me down. He had stood at a distance, striving to raise a mob; but not a man would stir at his bidding. Only one behind struck me with a stone. While I was in my prayer, he

cried again, "Pull him down." I told him, I had nothing now to do but to pray for him. He answered, "I have nothing to do with prayer." "So I suppose, Sir," said I; "but we have." He came up, and laid hold on my gown; but I stepped down, to save him trouble. He told me he was a Justice of Peace. "Then, Sir," said I, "I reverence you for your office's sake; but must not neglect my own, which is, to preach the Gospel." "I say," said the Justice and Captain, "it is an unlawful assembly." "Be so good, then," I replied, "as to name the law or Act of Parliament we break." He answered, (unhappily enough,) "The Waltham Act." "How so, Sir?" I asked: "I am in my proper habit, and you see none here in disguise." He insisted I should not preach there. I told him I had licence to preach throughout England and Ireland, by virtue of my Master's degree. "That I know, Sir," said he; "and am sorry for it. I think you are Fellow of a college, too." "Yes, Sir," I answered, "and a gentleman too; and as such should be glad to wait upon you, and to have a little conversation with you yourself." He answered, "he should be glad of it too; for I had behaved more like a gentleman than any of them." I had charged the people to say nothing, but go quietly home: so Mr. Justice and I parted tolerable friends.

I rode three miles farther to Mr. Star's, where I preached the next morning to many listening sinners, who pressed me much to come again.

Thur., September 13th. I rejoiced to hear of the triumphant death of our sister Marsh, in London, whose last breath was spent in prayer for me. None of our children die without leaving us a legacy. I received it this evening in the answer of her prayer. The word was as a fire, and as a hammer. The rocks were broken in pieces, particularly an hardened sinner, who withstood me some time before he was struck down. Many were melted down: some testified their then receiving the atonement.

Sun., September 16th. I displayed, from Isai. xxxv., to our colliers, the glorious privileges of the Gospel; and the wilderness and solitary place was glad for them. My brother Thompson assisted in administering; and was, as he expressed it, on the highest round of Jacob's ladder.

I preached again at Churchill, and called, to above two thousand souls, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." They expressed much satisfaction in the joyful tidings of a Saviour *from* sin.

Mon., September 17th. It being our thanksgiving-day, I read John Nelson's case, a plain accomplishment of the promise, "I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which none of your adversaries shall be able to resist."

Fri., September 21st. I read the Society my brother's account of poor Mr. W.; and the Lord was much among us, humbling and comforting our hearts.

Sun., September 23d. I preached at five in the Horse-fair; gave the sacrament at Kingswood; baptized a child of Felix Farley's; preached again in the wood; rode and preached in Bristol; returned to our love-feast among the colliers; and, near midnight, slept with my brother Thompson, in the Horse-fair.

Mon., September 24th. I set out for London; blundered in the dark night to a little village beyond Malmsbury. It was no great inconvenience that we found neither bed nor victuals.

Tues., September 25th. I preached at Wycombe; and the next day at our chapel by the Seven-Dials. The first scripture I met was Jer. xx. 7—10, &c.; and never have I more felt the power of God's word. Prayer is made for me by my friends, I know and feel; for I have not enjoyed so great liberty for years past. This is to prepare me for farther work, and farther sufferings.

I talked with a serious brother, who desired my answer to the many horrid scandals T. W. has raised on me. I simply denied them all, which was all the satisfaction I could give him till that day; and he desired no more.

I preached to a thronged audience on, "These are they that came out of great tribulation." The Lord greatly comforted our hearts; and again at the Society; where I forbore mentioning Mr. W., but appointed all who had been troubled by any reports concerning me or my brother, to call on me the next day.

Fri., September 28th. I expounded Paul's shipwreck; and had great faith that the Lord will give us all that sail in the ship with us.

I gave the sacrament to several sick.

At the time of conference, among others, a poor back-sliding child came to me, who had been led away by the lies of T. W. She fell at my feet, asking pardon of God and me. O how easy and delightful is it to forgive one that says, "I repent!" Lord, grant me power as freely to forgive them who persist to injure me!

Sat., September 29th. I administered the sacrament to our sick but happy sister Burnet, with great envy of her condition.

Sun., September 30th. I assisted my brother in giving it to the whole Society. I gathered another stray sheep.

Wed., October 10th. I took horse with N. Salthouse, and came with the next night to Markfield, half dead through pain and fatigue.

Fri., October 12th. I preached in the church, convincingly, as I afterwards heard; and rode in great pain to D. I met my old friend Dr. Byrom, and lost an hour in dispute about his sacred mystics. I lay down at eleven in my clothes, as usual, but could not rest.

I talked with a friend concerning the conspiracy hatching against me at London; who advised me to keep silence, and leave the matter to God.

Mon., October 15th. I proclaimed liberty to the captives, and deeply offended some pleaders for German, instead of Christian, liberty. But whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear, I have spoken the truth, I have paid my debt, and delivered my own soul. A woman confessed she then received the sense of her pardon.

Wed., October 17th. I hardly held out to Nottingham, and the next day to Sheffield. I lay down for an hour, and recovered strength to preach, "That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection." The word was not bound, or weak, like me.

Fri., October 19th. I had a woful journey to Epworth.

Sun., October 21st. I met the Society twice, and preached thrice, in spite of my body.

Mon., October 22d. I preached at Ferry in the room whence John Downes had been dragged away for a soldier. I found a great blessing in the cluster there. I lodged at Sikehouse; and the next day, Tues., October 23d, rejoiced

among my brethren in Birstal. Here they have been sifted like wheat by Mr. Viney. They received him upon my brother's recommendation, (whose unhappiness it is still to set the wolf to keep the sheep,) and he has served them a trick : bringing them off their *animal love* for their Pastors, their prayers, fastings, works, holiness. He had well-nigh destroyed the work of God, when John Nelson returned from his captivity.

Wed., October 24th. I preached at Leeds, from, "As for thee, by the blood of thy covenant I have sent up thy prisoners out of the pit." Here the great blessing is. One, as far as can yet be discerned, received forgiveness : all were comforted or convinced.

Thur., October 25th. I preached at Bradford, on, "This is he that came by water and by blood." The whole congregation was in a flame. Surely God hath a great work to do among this people.

I met the Birstal Society, whom Mr. Viney had almost quite perverted ; so that they laughed at all fasting, and self-denial, and family prayer, and such-like works of the law. They were so alienated by that cunning supplanter, that they took no notice of John Nelson when he came back ; for all that, Viney taught them, was animal love.

Sun., October 28th. I preached in the street at Leeds, no man disturbing me, on, "He that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved."

I preached on Birstal-hill to a great multitude, "Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit yourselves like men, be strong." I rebuked them sharply who had walked contrary ; and the spirit of contrition fell upon them. It was a blessed mourning, and continued at the Society. Then first my heart was enlarged, and my faith returned for these poor shattered sheep. They confessed their sin, and God showed himself faithful and just. Our lovefeast began with sorrow, but ended with joy. The Lord received our petitions, and assured us in prayer that the plague was stayed.

Mon., October 29th. I took leave in those words, "Finally, brethren, farewell : be perfect," &c.

Tues., October 30th. After much wandering, I came by

night half starved to our inn; and the next day to Newcastle.

Tues., November 6th. I expounded Acts iii. at Biddicks, and found much life among this poor people. Many of them have received forgiveness, chiefly under the prayer of one of the brethren raised up to serve them.

I rebuked the Society at Newcastle for their slackness, and offences of various kinds. I gave notice that I should begin next morning to examine them, and put out every disorderly walker.

Thur. evening, November 8th. I took my leave of Tanfield in Rev. vii. : "These are they that came out of great tribulation," &c. ; and the Lord was greatly with us. I could not finish my discourse in less than two hours.

Fri., November 9th. I proceeded with the classes. It was high time to purge them. Through their own negligence, and that of their late teachers, many were turning back into Egypt.

I spent the night in watching and prayer; found the Lord returning to his people.

I retired to read my letters from London. I offered up myself to the divine disposal. I met with Psalm cxliv. ; then with Balak's hiring Balaam to curse Israel. I went down to the congregation, where the Lord answered for himself. I sent an account to the brethren at London :—

"My dearest Brethren,—Last night I was informed that the Philistines shouted against me, and the Spirit of the Lord came mightily upon us. To Him give all the glory, that I find my heart so enlarged toward you, as never before. Now I can truly say, 'Ye are not straitened in me.' All my pining desires after rest are vanished, and I am at last content to do what is more than dying for you, even to live for you, and suffer out my time. Here, then, I give up myself your servant for Christ's sake, to wait upon you till all are gathered home. Where ye go I will go; and where ye lodge I will lodge; where ye die will I die, and there will I be buried. Neither shall death itself part you and me.

"Such a night of consolation as the last I have seldom known. Our souls were filled with faith and prayer, and knit to yours in love unchangeable. Lift up holy hands,

that I may approve myself a true Minister of Jesus Christ in all things."

Sun., November 11th. This evening I heard of poor Mr. Broughton's zeal; but shall not prosecute, after his example.

Mon., November 12th. I preached, "The Lord hath said unto my Lord, Sit down on my right hand;" and triumphed in his kingly power. At Wickham I spake of the length, and breadth, and depth, and height of the love of Christ which passes knowledge. He extended peace to us as a river. The word was with equal power at Newcastle.

Thur., November 15th. I passed an hour with my dear keelmen at the hospital, who are cruelly treated by their masters for the Gospel's sake.

In the evening I preached at Burnup-Field, between Tanfield and Spen, on, "Behold the Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world." I met the flourishing Society, and was much refreshed a second time. I returned to Newcastle, and strongly pressed them to constant prayer. I see plainly it is—pray, or perish.

Sat., November 17th. Now, indeed, the rains descend, and the floods come, and the winds blow and beat upon the house. I received a letter from C. G., at D., half staggered by the boldness of my accusers. God reigneth over the Heathen,—this is my comfort; and beneath me are the everlasting arms.

At noon I set out for Biddicks. The snow had made the roads almost impassable for horses. I followed N. Salthouse on foot. I dwelt on my old subject, "These are they that came out of great tribulation." For above an hour all were in tears. Another blessed hour was spent in like manner with the Society.

Sun., November 18th. I enlarged on that word, "A soldier pierced his side," &c. We looked upon Him, and could have continued looking and mourning till He appeared in the air.

I walked to Sunderland, and back again. The storm of hail and snow was so violent, that I was often going to lay me down in the road, unable either to walk or stand.

Mon., November 19th. I brought back a wandering sheep, who had forfeited her pardon by unforgivingness. I

received comfort, and wept for joy at the prosperity of our Bristol children, which I heard of in several letters. I walked over the fields to Wickham : the snow was in most places above our knees. After preaching I set out for Horsley, in most bitter weather. I rode and walked, till I could do neither, yet got to Horsley by night ; but my jaw was quite stiffened and disabled by the snow. I lay down, and got a little strength to preach.

Tues., November 20th. I waded back to Newcastle by one ; oftentimes up to my middle in snow.

I rode, or rather walked, to Plessy, and preached, "It is finished."

Thur., November 22d. I got back to Newcastle, and thence to Wickham, where I spoke of that great and terrible day of the Lord. Many trembled, and some rejoiced in hope of the glory of God. I rode thence to Spen, being so feeble that I could not walk ; yet I was forced to it the last mile, being almost starved to death in the next to impassable ways. I was led, I know not how, by the brethren, up to the knees in snow, the horses oftentimes sinking up to their shoulders.

I was surprised at the great number got together in such a season. They did not come in vain ; for the Lord comforted their hearts abundantly, and mine also. These were all gathered by John Brown, a simple man whom the Lord has wonderfully raised up for his work.

Sun., November 25th. The devil's children made a great disturbance in the time of preaching. I stood on the stairs, and took up the Society one by one ; while the mob were ready to tear them in pieces. Satan, one would think, foresaw the blessing we should have together.

Tues., November 27th. At Biddicks we had close fellowship with Him in his sufferings, while He cried, "Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by?"

I returned, praying, to Newcastle, but almost perished with cold. In the word the Spirit was poured out upon us from on high, and bore down all before it as a mighty flood.

Wed., November 28th. The whole congregation were again broken down by prayer. I put out of the Society all the disorderly walkers ; who are, consequently, ready to

make affidavit of whatever Mr. Broughton pleases. I prayed without ceasing most of this day.

Mr. Erskine called on me. I preached, "In the world ye shall have tribulation : but be of good cheer," &c. We had peace in Him, in spite of the disturbance of Satan's children.

Thur., November 29th. I preached by one of our children dying in the Lord, with tears, and strong desires of going in her place.

Fri., November 30th. Mr. Erskine left me, but not before he had much strengthened my hands in the Lord. In the evening the waves so lifted up their voice, that we could only sing for half an hour. The most violent of the rioters had been two of our own Society.

Tues., December 4th. An hour before preaching-time the mob were so violent, that we thought there could be no preaching that night. They came nigh to break the door. I began speaking abruptly without a text ; and God gave me strong words, that stilled the madness of the people. Neither was there any breath of opposition during the Society.

Fri., December 7th. My subject at our watchnight was, "Christ also suffered, leaving us an example." Toward the end, the power of the Lord dissolved us all into tears.

Sun., December 9th. I preached on, "Awake, awake, put on strength, O arm of the Lord ;" and he did wonderfully answer us in that same hour. I was forced to walk to Burnup-Field with my sprained leg, through the extreme cold. I expounded Isai. xxxv. In the evening our enemies at Newcastle were restrained while I besought them to repent, and believe the Gospel.

Tues., December 11th. I had asked, that at midnight I might rise and praise Him, because of his righteous judgments ; and was waked exactly at twelve : prayed a few minutes, and slept again in peace. I rose again at four ; prayed earnestly, and almost rejoiced : without light or fire, yet felt no cold. At five I preached on, "Whatsoever things ye ask in prayer, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them." We were carried out in fervent prayer for ourselves and the whole nation.

I visited Walter Brass, on a bed of sickness. He was

once of the Society, but lately turned scoffer and disturber of the word. The Lord hath now set his misdeeds before him, and he cries out vehemently for mercy. Another rioter, J. Wilson, is humbled in like manner ; in immediate answer to our prayer last night.

I conferred with a sincere person, who had been turned out of the way by the vain boastings of some whose life contradicted their profession.

In the evening we found a mighty spirit of prayer among the hands, and earnestly cried for the blotting out of all our sins against love.

Wed., December 12th. I rose again at midnight, and prayed with more life than before. John Nelson came.

Thur., December 13th. I admitted twenty new members. I took my leave in Acts xx. It was a solemn time of prayer and love.

Fri., December 14th. I set out, with N. Salthouse, in the severe frost ; and on Sun., December 16th, arrived safe at Epworth.

Mon., December 17th. I wrote thus to a friend :—

“My greatest trouble is, that I have innocently brought such a burden upon my friends, especially one : neither can I conceive it possible that this trouble should be wholly removed *here*. The joint may perhaps be set, but the halting will continue till I come to the land where all things are forgotten.

“God, who hath known my soul in adversity, causes me also to know it. That He loves me, I can no more doubt than of his being. He has likewise given me to love others with a pure love ; particularly one person, from whom I never expect or desire any farther communication of good, than I do from my mother, or other spirits of just men made perfect. And, however Providence may work, I mean never more to see *that person* (if without sin I may forbear) till we stand together at the judgment-seat.” *

* The following hymn, it would appear, was written upon this occasion :—

“O my Galilean King,
Can I glory in *this* shame ?
Can I *this* dishonour bring
As a suffering for thy Name ?

Tues., December 18th. I expounded Rev. vii. All were in tears : all were comforted.

Wed., December 19th. I rode to Sikehouse ; and thence to our brother Pindar's : Thursday, December 20th, to Birstal.

Sun., December 23d. I parted with our brethren in

Lord, thou know'st, and thou alone,
All our hearts to thee are known.

“ Naked, and without disguise,
In thy sight my spirit stands ;
Have I not from outward vice
Wash'd in innocence my hands,
From the great transgression free ?
Lord, I dare appeal to thee.

“ Inwardly, like other men,
Wholly born in sin I am ;
Only thou didst still restrain
For the honour of thy Name ;
Kept by thine Almighty grace,
Thee I render all the praise.

“ Nought have I whereof to boast,
Only sin to me belongs,
Scorn of the Philistine host,
Subject of the drunkard's songs,
Mark of Pharisaic zeal,
All the virtuous rage of hell.

“ Master, is it not for thee ?
If I suffer for thy cause,
Bless the sacred infamy,
Crown the scandal of thy cross ;
Now the peaceful answer give,
Let me now thy love receive.

“ Me if thou hadst never sent,
Satan's strongest holds to' o'erthrow,
Would he thus his malice vent,
Stir up all his powers below,
Make me as his children black ?
Would he his own kingdom shake ?

“ Lord, my time is in thy hand :
Judged in man's unrighteous day,
Let me in thy judgment stand ;
When the wicked melt away,
Vindicate thy servant there,
Clear me at the last great bar.”

Leeds, commending them to God, and to the word of his grace. There was a general mourning, as if I was taking my last leave. The blessing of the Lord still followed us, both at Morley and at Birstal.

Fri., December 28th. I preached at Sheffield and Nottingham on my journey; and this evening was refreshed by our brother Hogg and Butts, who met me at St. Alban's.

Sat., December 29th. We continued in prayer from three to four; then took horse, with joyful confidence and desire, to see London. By seven we entered the Foundry. I read prayers at the chapel, and preached from Isai. li., with great enlargement. I received much spiritual strength and comfort in the sacrament.

Sun., December 30th. My brother read prayers; I preached on, "He shall save his people from their sins." At night on, "How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth glad tidings!" God gave testimony to his word, and endued my soul with more strength and boldness than ever.

PART IX.

FROM JANUARY 4TH, 1745, TO DECEMBER 31ST, 1746.

FRIDAY, January 4th, 1745. All were melted into gracious tears at the sacrament. I heard of one who had lately received the seal of forgiveness under me, when I was more than usually dead. I expounded John i. at Short's-gardens, and the power of the Lord was present: our old friend Keen was broken to pieces by it.

Sun., January 13th. I visited a sister, who walks through the valley of the shadow of death, and fears no evil. I tasted the sweet consolation and blessedness of tears. I have found these few last days more comfort, both in preaching and prayer, than for some years. Is not our God a very present help in time of trouble?

In much distress at the altar, I cast mine eye on that word, "It is good for me to have been in trouble." My heart was full of prayer. At last I broke out into tears and strong cries, and all with me. It was indeed a glorious time of visitation.

Sat., January 19th. I prayed with our brother Grey, ready for the Bridegroom, and rejoicing in hope of a speedy dissolution. I preached at the chapel, on, "A wake, awake, put on strength, O arm of the Lord ;" and found, both in the word, and in prayer, and at the altar, the double blessing which now continually attends us.

Sat., January 26th. Mr. Erskine came to me at Short's-gardens with a message which the Bishop of London had sent to L. H.,* "that, if I would come to him, and declare my innocency, touching the scandals, and take the sacrament upon it, he would desire no farther satisfaction, but himself clear me." I immediately consented, and sent my brother advice of it.

Sun., January 27th. I paid my last visit to our poor unstable brother Cowper ; who is now so *holy in Christ*, as to say, "I renounce the doctrine which your brother preaches, and trample it under my feet, as a doctrine of devils."

I discoursed on, "These are they that came out of great tribulation." Both by the word and at the sacrament the Lord answered for himself.

I buried a sister, who departed in the Lord. I called the multitude at the Foundery, "Come, for all things are now ready." I met the bands ; and a solemn, mournful assembly it was. I could speak, sing, pray for nothing but death. We mixed our tears and souls together in that love which death cannot violate.

Fri., February 1st. At our watchnight I described the new Jerusalem ; (Rev. xxi. ;) and great was our rejoicing before the Lord.

Sun., February 3d. At the sacrament and among the bands I was enabled to pour out my soul in prayer, and carried them all with me to the throne of grace.

Sun., February 10th. I received the never-failing blessing at the sacrament. Our prayer, after it, always opens heaven.

Sun., February 17th. I was strengthened by a zealous Quaker, who informed me he had received the Spirit of adoption in hearing me a year ago, and has walked in the light from that time to this.

Wed., February 20th. In asking, at the chapel, "Is

* Probably Lady Huntingdon.—EDIT.

there no balm in Gilead?" I found, with many others, that there was; and a good Physician too, whose power was even then present to heal.

Sun., February 24th. We had the spirit of prayer in the sacrament, as usual. The word at night had great effect. My subject was, the returning prodigal.

Tues., February 26th. I gave the sacrament to one on Saffron-hill; and found faith that the Lord was at work. Going down, they asked me to see another dying in the room below. As I entered, I heard her make confession of the faith which she received that moment, as she had told those about her she should; and that she could not die in peace till she saw me. She was full of triumphant joy, and said to me, "I am going to paradise: it will not be long before you follow me." My soul was filled with *her* consolation.

Sat., March 2d. At the chapel I expounded, "Thus saith the high and lofty One, that inhabiteth eternity;" and He covered us with a covering of his Spirit.

Sun., March 3d. Our hearts were bowed down before the Lord, both in the word and sacrament.

Sat., March 9th. I dined at our brother Arvin's, just after his wife had taken her flight to paradise.

Sun., March 10th. I expounded the woman of Canaan; and was carried out after the sacrament in strong intercession for my departed friends. One of them was there, unknown to me, but went out before my prayer.

Wed., March 13th. God gave me strong words at the chapel, against the Antinomian delusion.

Sat., March 16th. I spake with one of the Society, lately a Papist, who is much haunted by her old friends, especially her confessor, who thunders out anathemas against her; and threatens to burn me,—if he could catch me at Rome. I sent my respects to the gentleman, and offered to talk with him before her, at my own lodgings, or wherever he pleased; but received no answer.

Thur., March 21st. I expounded Isai. xxxv. Many of our brethren from the Tabernacle were present. Our Lord did not send us empty away; but applied the word of his grace to our hearts.

Sun. evening, March 24th. I set out for Bristol with T.

Butts. We lodged on Monday night in Newbury ; on Tuesday, March 26th, came to Mrs. Gotley's, at Avon, and the next day to Bristol.

My subject was, "Thy sun shall no more go down by day," &c. The Lord sanctified our meeting ; and we were comforted by our mutual faith.

Sun., March 31st. At five I preached in the room ; at eight in Kingswood, on the new Jerusalem. I administered the sacrament to all the Society ; and the God, the consolation of Israel, visited us. The whole congregation were moved to cry after him, either through sorrow or through joy.

I rode to Conham. Mr. Graves read prayers in Mr. Wane's chapel. I bade them "lift up the hands that hung down, and strengthen the feeble knees." The word did not return void. I walked back to the colliers, and exhorted them to adorn the Gospel ; then to Baptist-mills, where the children of the devil fled before the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

At our love-feast in Bristol, I spoke of the fruits of faith, in strong scriptural words. Sarah Goslin, the mother of our Antinomians, was forced to fly for her life. It was a blessed opportunity. The Lord mightily confirmed his word ; and thereby ministered his consolations.

Wed., April 3d. I preached at Wrexal, and found the bread I had cast upon the water, after many days. Several of my old hearers from Bradford were present. One caught hold of me, and cried, "Blessed be the day that ever I saw your face. This was the man, under God, that first opened my eyes." Another (Mrs. Taylor) now declared, she had received forgiveness in hearing me five years ago. I preached Christ crucified ; and we rejoiced as in the days that are past. I returned, with joy and comfort, to Bath, and exhorted them, "Hold fast that ye have already till I come."

Thur., April 4th. I rode to Coleford, a place of colliers, lately discovered ; and preached in the church-yard, on a tomb-stone. The church would not have contained a quarter of the congregation. I pointed them to "the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world." The poor people followed me to Mr. Flower's, where we wrestled

two or three hours in prayer, and would not let Him go, except He blessed us.

Fri., April 5th. I read prayers and preached in the church, crowded within and without. Many followed me to Chilcompton. There I called, on above a thousand gasping souls, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." I began again and again, after I had, as I thought, concluded.

I returned to Bristol ; was informed that one, lately of our Society, has declared, he will "make affidavit he himself saw my brother administer extreme unction to a woman, and give her a wafer, and say, that was her passport to heaven."

Sun., April 7th. I found the great blessing after the sacrament, an ordinance which God always magnifies, and honours with his special presence. I prayed by our sister Rogers, just on the wing for paradise. It was a solemn season at the Society, while I spake of death, and the glory which shall follow.

Tues., April 9th. I rode to town, and preached at the Foundery, with an enlarged heart, "Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon."

Fri., April 12th. At the chapel, all the congregation looked upon Him they have pierced, and mourned.

Easter-day, April 14th. With the word, the Spirit of Him that raised Jesus from the dead came mightily upon us. For more than half an hour He cried in our hearts. At the sacrament, also, which the whole Society partook of, we all found, more or less, the power of his resurrection. So again at our love-feast, we rejoiced together, and felt that the Lord was risen indeed.

Tues., April 16th. I baptized a woman among the Leaders ; who received the justifying baptismal grace.

We kept the octave, communicating every day ; and the Lord never sent us away without a blessing.

Sat., April 20th. The power of the Highest overshadowed us, when met in the evening to bewail our sins against light, and pray for a fresh pardon. Most of this week I have spent in confirming the wavering ; and God hath blessed me in my deed.

Sun., April 21st. While I was declaring, "This is he

that came by water and by blood," the Spirit bore strong witness with many hearts. One testified her then receiving the atonement. At the sacrament we prayed in faith, that the sins of the revolting children might be retained, that is, that, while the guilt and power lasted, the misery might last, and they might not be suffered to soothe themselves with a fancied happiness.* The Lord was with us in the great power of his love.

The cloud stayed upon us when met in band ; and they received my solemn warning of the approaching judgments.

Mon., April 22d. I gave the sacrament yesterday to two prisoners of hope ; and twice to-day, to two dying believers, who can never die.

Wed., April 24th. I recovered one out of the paw of the Antinomian lion. This whole week I have gone on treading him under my feet, through the power of the serpent-bruise.

Sun., April 28th. I expounded Matt. xxv., that flail of Antinomianism.

Sun., May 5th. I preached from 1 Peter ii. 12 : " Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles, that whereas they speak against you as evil-doers, they may, by your good works which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation." I warned them of that day, already begun, and of that fiery trial approaching.

At the Foundery I expounded Ezek. ix. A great cry followed. Surely there were many present who have the mark in their foreheads. The Lord increase their number !

Wed., May 8th. The fast-day. I expounded Zeph. i. 2,

* The same sentiment Mr. Charles Wesley expressed in the following stanzas :—

" O wouldst thou break the fatal snare
Of carnal self-security,
And let them feel the wrath they bear,
And let them groan their want of thee,
Robb'd of their false pernicious peace,
Stripp'd of their fancied righteousness.

" Long as the guilt of sin shall last,
Them in its misery detain ;
Hold their licentious spirits fast,
Bind them with their own nature's chain,
Nor ever let the wanderers rest,
Till lodged again in Jesu's breast."

then Joel ii., and lastly those awful words of God to Ezekiel : “ Though Noah, Daniel, and Job were in it, as I live, saith the Lord, they should but deliver their own souls.”

Tues., May 21st. I began examining the classes with my brother, and rejoiced in the success of our past labours. Amidst all the rage and havoc of Satan at the Tabernacle, the plague has not come nigh our dwelling.

Fri., May 31st. I visited, at her own desire, a Roman Catholic gentlewoman, at Islington, who had refused her Priest, and would have none but my brother or me. She readily gave up her own merits, (which she owned was hell,) and the merits of all the saints, for those of Jesus Christ, her only hope, Mediator, and Saviour. I prayed in faith, and left her not far from the kingdom of heaven.

We kept a watchnight. Dear Howel Harris I carried into the desk : and we sang together, and shouted for joy, till morning.

Tues., June 4th. I baptized three adults ; who all confessed the ordinance a seal of the covenant of forgiveness.

Tues., June 11th. I was much revived by the sight of M. Davis's mother, departing in peace. For seventy years she lived, if it may be called life, a stranger to the covenant of promise. For these two last years, since faith came by hearing, she has never had a doubt or fear ; but walked with Christ, and adorned the Gospel. Now she longs to go see him face to face.

Wed., June 12th. Going to bed at M. Witham's, I could not rest, but must needs go to the other end of the town. In Holborn I found the reason,—a poor man, and countryman, challenged me, who had been converted by occasional hearing us, but, through neglect of the means, had fallen from his first love, and into poverty. I exhorted him to return to God, gave him somewhat, and parted. The next day he spent in seeking me every where, to restore a guinea I had given him by mistake.

Sun., June 16th. I expounded Elijah's flight, and pining desire to die : we were strengthened by his weakness. My brother Taylor read prayers, and assisted at the truly blessed sacrament. In the evening also, we had the shout of a King in the midst of us, as at the beginning.

Mon., June 17th. I preached at Brentford in our way to

Bristol. The moment our Society met, Jesus appeared in the midst, and we lay an happy hour, weeping and rejoicing, at his feet.

Wed., June 19th. Three miles on this side Salisbury, a still sister came out to meet, and try her skill upon, me. But, alas! it was labour lost! I knew the *happy sinner*, and all her paces.

I found my sister as a rock in the midst of the waves. Mr. Hall's Society had all left the Church, and mocked and persecuted her for not leaving it. Many pressed me to preach; but I answered them, "My heart was not *free* to it." At four I set out with my sister; and reached Bristol in the afternoon of the next day.

Fri., June 21st. I sent an account of our affairs here to a friend:—"The work of God goes on successfully. Great is the constancy of them that believe. Neither error nor sin can shake them. Several, since I left this place, have witnessed a good confession in death, particularly a girl of thirteen, and an old sinner of threescore. We had expelled him the Society for drunkenness; and he went on sinning, and repenting, and sinning again, till God laid his chastening hand upon him. After a great agony, he found redemption in the blood of Jesus. He lay some time rejoicing, and testifying the grace of Christ to the chief of sinners. When one said, 'Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord,' he replied, interrupting him, 'Even so, saith the Spirit in me.' To another, 'I am just entering the haven on a broken piece of the ship.'

"I am just come from giving the sacrament to a young woman, rejoicing in death, with joy unspeakable. The day before my first visit, the Lord revealed himself in her. Her soul seemed all desire and love, 'ready to go this moment,' as she often testified, yet willing to tarry the Lord's leisure, or even to recover, if it were his will.

"I have observed that all our people, without exception, be they ever so dark or weak before, when they come to die, recover their confidence. Would to God every soul, of every Christian denomination, might witness the same confession of eternal life in them, when they turn their faces to the wall!"

Sun., June 23d, was a day much to be remembered. I

preached to our colliers on Jer. xxxi. 1; and received strong faith for the desolate Church of England.

In the sacrament, the spirit of grace and supplication came down, and we prayed after God, that it might reach all our absent brethren. The backsliders we never forget at such gracious opportunities. Near four hours we were employed in *doing this*; and not one soul, I am persuaded, thought it long.

I had just time to reach Conham chapel by two. From those words, "I will that they may behold my glory," while I was speaking of our Lord's appearing, we were alarmed with the loudest clap of thunder I ever heard. I thought it must have cleft the house. Most of the congregation shrieked out, as if the day of the Lord were come. A thought darted into my heart as quick as the lightning, "What, if it should be the day of judgment?" I was filled immediately with faith, stronger than death, and rejoiced in hope of the glory of God. The same spirit rested on all the faithful, while I broke out into singing,—

"So shall the Lord the Saviour come,
And lightnings round his chariot play:
Ye lightnings, fly to make him room,
Ye glorious storms, prepare his way!"

I went on for half an hour describing that final scene. The heart of every person present, I believe, either rejoiced or trembled. A mixed cry of horror and triumph was heard, till I dismissed them with the blessing.

Afterwards we heard that an house, on one side our chapel, was almost demolished, both roof and walls, by the thunder-clap; the lead of the windows melted, and six persons struck down to the ground. On the other side of us, a gibbet was split into a thousand pieces.

Sun., June 30th. I preached our sister Rogers's funeral sermon; whose blessed life and death were of a piece.

Wed., July 3d. I took horse for London. The first night I preached at Cirencester; the two next at Evesham, where I found the Society increased both in grace and number. I was welcomed to London, on Saturday evening, with the joyful news of T. Maxfield's deliverance.

Sun., July 7th. I preached on Luke xxii. 34; and many, I would hope, were stirred up to watch and pray.

Sun., July 14th. The Lord set to his seal while I explained, "Who art thou, O great mountain? before Zerubabel thou shalt become a plain." We rejoiced in steadfast hope of the precious sanctifying promises.

Mon., July 15th. The Lord comforted our hearts by the letters, and confirmed our faith, that the work he is now reviving shall never be destroyed.

Sun., July 21st. In our prayer after the sacrament, the heavens dropped down from above, nay, and the skies seemed even to pour down righteousness.

Mon., July 22d. I gave the sacrament to our sister H., who is coming to the grave as a ripe shock of corn. A poor trembling, tempted soul she has been; but, at the approach of death, all her fears are vanished; and she lies gasping for the fulness of eternal life.

Thur., July 25th. I strongly exhorted the Society to constancy in the faith, and fervency in prayer. Their hearts were melted much, if one may judge by their tears.

Sun. evening, July 28th. I took leave of the Foundery in those words, which I vehemently wished accomplished, "The redeemed of the Lord shall return, and come with singing unto Sion."

Wed., July 31st. I joined with my brother to examine the Society at Bristol. Mr. Gwynne, of Garth, accompanied us, and rejoiced greatly in the grace given them.

Thur., August 1st. We began our Conference with Mr. Hodges, four of our own Assistants, Herbert Jenkins, and Mr. Gwynne. We continued it five days, and parted in great harmony and love.

Fri., August 2d. At the watchnight our souls were satisfied as with marrow and fatness, while our mouth praised God with joyful lips.

Wed., August 7th. While I was speaking from those words, "The end of all things is at hand," the Lord applied them to our hearts, and we felt the solemn weight of things eternal.

He passed by us again in the bands, and showed us his goodness. For near two hours we tasted the powers of the world to come, in solid, serious joy.

Sat., August 10th. I preached at Shepton-Mallet, where

a great door is opening, and there are many adversaries. One of the devil's drunken champions attempted to disturb us ; but my voice prevailed.

They desired me to meet their little Society at an unusual place, to disappoint the mob. I walked forward toward the town, then turned back over the field, to drop the people, and, springing up a rising ground, sprained or broke my leg, I knew not which ; but I fell down when I offered to set my foot to the ground. The brethren carried me to an hut, which was quickly filled with the poor people. It was soon noised about the town that I had broke my leg ; some said my neck, and that it was a judgment upon me. The principal man of the place, Mr. P., sent me a kind message, and his bath-chair to bring me to his house. I thanked him, but declined his offer, on account of my pain, which unfitted me for any company, except that of my best friends,—the poor. With these I continued praying, singing, and rejoicing for two hours. Their love quite delighted me. Happiest they that could come near to do anything for me. When my strength was exhausted, they laid me on their bed, the best they had ; but I could not sleep for pain.

Sun., August 11th. I met the Society at six, and took in twenty new members. About eight the Surgeon from Oakhill came, and found, in dressing my leg, that it was not broke, but violently sprained. Many being come from far to hear the word, I got the brethren to carry me out in a chair, which they set on a table, and I preached, kneeling. I thought of Halyburton's *best pulpit*, which alone seemed preferable to this. For near an hour I forgot my main ; and appointed to preach again at Oakhill.

The brethren carried me thither by noon in Mr. P.'s chair. My congregation was mostly Dissenters, not wise and rich, but poor and simple, and longing to be taught the first elements of Christ's doctrine. They stood listening in the hard rain, while I showed them "the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world." The word was not bound, but ran very swiftly through their hearts. For an hour I preached kneeling as before, and felt no pain or weariness till it was over : then my flesh shrunk at the twenty measured miles to Bristol. They set me on the

horse, and by night I performed the journey, but in such extreme pain as I have not known, with all my broken bones and sicknesses.

Tues., August 13th. I preached from, "They that wait on the Lord shall renew their strength;" and then, confiding in the promise, went in my chair, and lay at Mr. Wigginton's, by the water-side.

Between four and five next morning I was carried to Captain Philips's vessel, which was filled with our own people chiefly. We spent the day in singing and reading; and by six on Thursday morning, August 15th, landed at Cardiff.

At night, most of the gentry of the town were at the room. I laboured to trouble the careless, as well as comfort the troubled, hearts.

Sun., August 18th. Our greatest persecutor lent his chair to carry me to Wenvo. Indeed, the whole place at present seems turned towards us. But we do not depend on this peace as lasting. I preached at Wenvo, from Heb. xii. 1, to a weeping audience. My brothers Thomas and Hodges administered the sacrament.

The room at Cardiff was crowded with high and low. I invited them to come thirsty to the waters. The same spirit was with us, as in the months that are past. Our love-feast was a feast indeed!

Tues., August 20th. At the request of the prisoners, I had promised to preach in the jail; but Mr. Michael Richards came first, and threatened and forbade the jailer. If these souls perish for lack of knowledge, Mr. Michael Richards, not I, must answer it in that day.

I was carried to Fommon, with Mr. Hodges and Mrs. Jones. I once more met the church in her house. We were all melted down by the fire of the word.

Wed., August 21st. This and every evening I got down to the chapel on my crutches, and preached to the family, with fifty harvesters and others that came from far.

Fri., August 23d. I wrote thus to my brother:—

"Once more hear my raven's note,—and despise it. I look most assuredly, unless general repentance prevent it, for the day of visitation. Whether my apprehensions have aught divine in them, I never presume to say; neither am I concerned for the credit of my prophecy, or conjecture;

but none of you all will more rejoice at my proving what you may call a false Prophet than I. For should I prove a true one, I expect Balaam's fate. In great weariness of flesh and spirit I conclude.

“Your Μάντις κακῶν.”

Sun., August 25th. Mr. Gwynne's servant came to show me the way to Garth ; but returned without me ; my lameness still continuing, or rather increasing, by the use of the British oil, which inflamed and swelled my foot exceedingly. Probably it was the counterfeit sort.

Mon., August 26th. I admitted several into the Society. I continued preaching twice a day the rest of the month.

Sun., September 1st. I ventured to ride to church, where the Minister invited us all to the sacrament next Sunday ; and afterwards made proclamation in the church-yard, that no stranger should be admitted. He might as well have excepted me by name. But though I could not be admitted, a notorious drunkard was, as Mrs. Jones and other eye-witnesses told me next Sunday. He made much disturbance in the time of service, and was actually drunk when the Minister gave him the sacrament.

Tues., September 3d. Mr. Gwynne and Mr. Philips, of Maesmynis, came to pay us a Christian visit. We had sweet fellowship till the 6th instant ; when they departed without me, whom they came to fetch.

Fri., September 6th. At the hour of intercession we found an extraordinary power of God upon us, and close communion with our absent brethren. Afterwards I found, by letters from London, that it was their solemn fast-day. The night we passed in prayer. I read them my heavy tidings out of the north.

“The lion is come up from his thicket, and the destroyer of the Gentiles is on his way.”

Sun., September 8th. The spirit of supplication was given us in the Society for His Majesty, King George ; and, in strong faith, we asked his deliverance from all his enemies and troubles.

Mon., September 9th. My three weeks' delightful confinement ended, and I returned to Cardiff.

Wed., September 11th. I rose, after a restless night, with a fever upon me ; but was forced to take my bed again.

How gladly would I have been taken from the evil to come ; but, alas ! my sufferings are scarce begun.

Sat., September 14th. My fever left me, and my strength so far returned, that I could sit an horse with one behind me. Almost as soon as we set out, my supporter and I were thrown over the horse's head ; but neither hurt. My lameness was much mended by three or four days' rest.

Sun., September 22d. I met the poor shattered bands ; and found the cause of their decay. One of them had drunk into the Quakers' spirit, and got all their form, which he laboured to bring into the Society.

I preached at Wenvo, "That ye may be found of him in peace ;" then at Fommon, on that great and terrible day of the Lord. His fear was mightily upon us ; but at the Society his love constrained and quite overpowered us. For two hours we wept before the Lord, and wrestled for our Sodom. We shall hear of these prayers another day.

Mon., September 23d. Having been often importuned to preach at Cowbridge, this morning I set out with sister Jones and others. The gentleman who had invited and promised me the church, took care to be out of town ; but left word that the church-doors were open, and, if I pleased to preach there, no man would forbid me. I did not choose to go in a clandestine manner ; but sent to the Church-wardens, who durst neither deny or grant leave. I therefore preached in a large hall, over against the place where my brother had been stoned. Many attended, and, I believe, were pricked at the heart.

Wed., September 25th. After a tedious and dangerous passage, I got to shore, and soon after to Bristol. I heard the news confirmed, of Edinburgh being taken by the rebels. I saw all around in deep sleep and security. I warned our children with great affection. Our comforts, we expect, will increase with our danger.

Thur., September 26th. Tidings came that General Cope was cut off with all his army. The room was crowded in the evening. I warned them, with all authority, to flee to the mountains, escape to the strong tower, even the name of Jesus. We seemed to have strong faith, that the Romish Antichrist shall never finally prevail in these kingdoms.

Sun., September 29th. My subject at Kingswood was,

“Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I will also keep thee in the hour of temptation,” &c. ; at Bristol, “Fear God, and honour the King.”

Tues., October 8th. Having left the Society fully warned, I rode to Bath, and exhorted them also to meet God in the way of his judgments. At noon I preached repentance and faith, at the Cross, to the people of Road. They drank in every word. When I said, “Put away the evil of your doings,” several cried out, “We will, we will !” When I said, “Be drunk no more, swear no more,” &c., they answered, “I will not swear : I will not be drunk again, as long as I live.” The ale-house keepers and profligate young men are the most exemplary in their repentance. I dined at the Squire’s, who seemed amazed, and half converted, at *their* change.

I preached at four to a barn full of simple, hungry, seeking souls. They sunk under the hammer, and melted before the fire of the word.

Wed., October 9th. I met them again in the barn, and wept with them that wept. All were stirred up, and made haste to escape into the ark, because of the stormy wind and tempest.

I preached at Bearfield, after five years’ absence, to many of my old hearers. They received the word with all readiness of mind, and will be, I doubt not, a people fearing God, and working righteousness.

After preaching in Bath, a woman desired to speak with me. She had been in our Society, and in Christ ; but lost her grace through the spirit of offence ; left the fellowship, and fell by little and little into the depth of vice and misery. I called M. Naylor to hear her mournful account. She had lived some time at a wicked house in Avon-street ; confessed it was hell to her, to see our people pass by to the preaching ; knew not what to do, or how to escape. We bade her fly for her life, and not once look behind her. M. Naylor kept her with herself till the morning ; and then I carried her with us in the coach to London ; and delivered her to the care of our sister Davey. Is not this a brand plucked out of the fire ?

Sun., October 13th. I warned them earnestly, both at the chapel and the Foundery, of the impending storm.

Thur., October 17th. We had twenty of our brethren from Flanders to dine with us at the Foundery, and rejoiced in the distinguishing grace of God toward them.

Fri., October 18th. I expounded Jer. iii. at the chapel. Some endeavoured to disturb us, by throwing in a cracker; which many took for a gun discharged. In one minute the people recovered their hurry, and I went on for another half hour with double assistance.

Sat., October 26th. I dined at Mrs. R's.* The family concealed their fright tolerably well. Mr. R. behaved with great civility. I foresee the storm my visit will bring upon him.

Sun., November 3d. I found much life and solemn comfort among the bands.

Mon., November 4th. At M. Sparrow's I waited some days, to renew my strength.

Fri., November 8th. I preached first in Bexley church, then in the front of the camp near Dartford. Many of the poor soldiers gave diligent heed to the word. One of the most reprobate was pricked at the heart, and entered the Society.

Sat., November 9th. A regiment passing by our door, I took the opportunity of giving each soldier a book. All, excepting one, received them thankfully.

Sun., November 10th. I expounded Psalm xlvii., with great enlargement. An officer was present, and by his tears confessed the emotion of his heart. The same power attended the word in the evening. (Zeph. ii.) It was a solemn assembly, while we rejoiced in the release of an happy brother.

Mon., November 11th. We had some of our brethren of the army at the select Society, and solemnly commended them to the grace of God, before they set out to meet the rebels. They were without fear or disturbance, knowing the hairs of their head are all numbered, and nothing can happen but by the determinate counsel of God.

Sat., November 16th. I prayed with the penitents, all in tears.

Sun., November 17th. I brought back (with the extra-

* Probably Mrs. Rich, the actress, whose husband was a proprietor of Covent-garden theatre.—EDIT.

ordinary blessing of God) two wandering sheep from the Germans.

Sat., November 23d. I finished examining the classes with my brother, and rejoiced in their steadfastness.

Sat., November 30th. I prayed by Bridget Armstead, full of desire to be dissolved. She sent for me some hours after. I found her in a great agony of temptation. We prayed, and God arose, and all his enemies were scattered.

Sun., December 1st. It was a season of love, a time of great refreshing, at the sacrament.

Fri., December 6th. In reading my brother's last Appeal, I was drawn out into fervent prayer for him, myself, and all the children whom God hath given us.

Mon., December 23d. I met my old friend J. G.* at my printer's, and appointed to meet him to-morrow at Dr. Newton's. I brought my brother with me. I found the Germans had quite estranged and stole away his heart; which, nevertheless, relented, while we talked over the passages of our former friendship: but he hardened himself against the weakness of gratitude. We could not prevail upon him to meet us again.

Fri., December 27th. While I discoursed on that word, "The Spirit and the Bride say, Come," the whole congregation seemed to hear and answer the divine call.

Sun., December 29th. I explained my commission, "To open their eyes, to turn them from darkness to light," &c. An extraordinary power and blessing sealed the word. One of my audience was the famous Mr. Chambers, the honest Attorney!

Wed., January 1st, 1746. The Lord strengthened me at the chapel to stir up many by that word of his, "Let it alone this year also."

Tues., January 7th. I found a blessing in the cluster at Deptford.

Fri., January 9th. I filled a coach with our friends; and, in spite of the toothache, had a pleasant journey to Bristol.

Sun., January 12th. I gave the sacrament at Kings-

* Probably the Rev. John Gambold, who renounced his connexion with the Church of England, and became a Bishop in the Moravian Church.—EDIT.

wood, and expressed the vehement desires of our souls in mighty prayer. The word at night was blessed to the quickening of many.

Tues., January 14th. I was much assisted in expounding Job xxiii. ; and yet more next morning, in those words, "It is of thy mercy that we are not consumed." I found the old blessing and power at Weaver's-hall, while I put them in remembrance of their first love, from Psalm cxxvi.

Sun., January 19th. At Baptist-Mills there was a great awakening of those that had fallen asleep again ; but in the Society the Lord stirred up his power in a wonderful manner, and came to his house. While I was reproving them He gave weight to the words ; and for an hour and an half nothing was to be heard but cries and tears, and strong resolutions to return unto the Lord.

Mon., January 20th. The same blessing we found at Bath, while the Spirit applied the word, "He that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved."

Tues., January 21st. I preached from Isai. xxxv. at Road, and took the names of near seventy of the Society.

Wed., January 22d. I preached at Bearfield, and Wrexal, in the barn, where we never miss of our Lord's presence. Many women of Canaan cried after him, and seemed resolved to take no denial.

Thur., January 23d. While I unfolded those precious promises of grace and glory, John xvii., our Lord came down among us, and filled us with his consolations.

Wed., January 29th. The power of the Highest overshadowed us. All were dissolved into that blessed mourning, so that we wept with the angel, and made supplication, such as the Lord will hear.

Sun., February 2d. I had a blessed meeting with our London children at the Lord's table.

Mon., February 3d. I opened our new chapel in Wapping, by preaching to a numerous audience, from 1 Cor. xv. 1.

Tues., February 4th. I wrote my thoughts to a friend as follows :—

"I cannot help expecting the sorest judgments to be poured out upon this land, and that suddenly. You allow us 'one hundred years to fill up the measure of our iniquity.'

You cannot more laugh at my vain fear, than I at your vain confidence. Now is the axe laid to the root of the tree ; now is the decree gone forth ; now is the day of visitation. It comes so strongly and continually upon me, that I almost think there is God in my prospect of war, famine, pestilence, and all the vials of wrath bursting on our heads."

Wed., February 5th. I visited our sister Webb, dying in child-bed : prayed with earnest faith for her. At hearing the child cry, she had broke out into vehement thanksgiving, and soon after fell into convulsions, which set her soul at liberty from all pain and suffering.

Thur., February 6th. We sang that hymn over her corpse, "Ah, lovely appearance of death," and shed a few tears of joy and envy.

Sun., February 16th. I buried our late sister Adams, who has finished her course with joy ; and preached on, "Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord," with great consolation, and desire of following her.

Fri., February 28th. I invited the weary and heavy laden to Him who hath promised them rest. Many found it then.

Mon., March 3d, was a day of visitation. God put into my heart good desires, which lasted, with power to pray, best part of the day.

Sun., March 9th. I got abroad again after my painful confinement through the toothache, and officiated at the chapel.

Thur., March 13th. God confirmed the word, while I enforced the necessity of a single eye.

Sun., March 16th. He fulfilled that promise at the Foundery, "Him that cometh unto me, I will in no wise cast out."

Tues., March 18th. I rejoiced exceedingly to hear of the death of our sister Molly Godwin. Let my latter end be like hers !

Sun., March 23d. I explained that best of prayers, if rightly used, "His blood be upon us, and upon our children." All present, I believe, received then some benefit from His passion.

Mon., March 24th. In riding to Brentford with our sisters

Davey, Alcroft, and Rich, our coach broke down. The only courageous person among us was the only person afraid. I prayed in our return by a dying prisoner of hope ; and felt an humble confidence that his eyes shall see the salvation of God.

Good-Friday, March 28th. Every morning of this great and holy week the Lord was at his own feast ; but especially this. The word, "Let us also go, and die with Him," was written on our hearts. We passed from two to three in solemn prayer at Short's-gardens. I drank tea at my sister Wright's, with Mrs. Rich and her two youngest daughters ; one the greatest miracle of all accomplishments, both of mind and body, that I have ever seen.

Sat., March 29th. I administered the sacrament to a dying sinner, who did run well, but was now groaning out her last breath under the guilt of sin, and curse of God. I preached to her the sinner's Advocate. She received the faithful saying, and believed the Lord would save her at the last hour.

I passed the afternoon at Mrs. Rich's, where we caught a Physician by the ear, through the help of Mr. Lampe and some of our sisters. This is the true use of music.

Easter-day, March 30th. My text was, "If ye be risen with Christ, seek the things which are above." The Lord was present, convincing or comforting. We had another blessed opportunity in the evening.

Mon., March 31st. I preached and administered, notwithstanding a violent purging, which forced me to lie down all day. In the evening I rose, and, not being able to stand, preached sitting, with supernatural strength.

Thur., April 3d. I prayed by a dying relation, (Mrs. Richardson,) to our mutual comfort.

Mon., April 7th. My cousin Wilson brought me the joyful news of her mother's release, and last warning words to me.

I set out with Mr. Waller in a chaise for Bristol, Monday, April 14th. On Thursday afternoon I saluted our friends in the Horse-fair. I found the spirit of supplication as soon as I entered the house. I preached on, "Hosanna to the Son of David."

Sun., April 20th, was a day of salvation. We had a

comfortable sacrament in Kingswood. I preached with great severity at Conham. The stones cried out on every side, and the Pharisees were offended. At night I expounded Heb. ix. 12 : "Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood, he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us." God stood in the midst of the congregation ; but in the Society he was still more sensibly present. A loud cry was heard at first ; but it sunk lower and lower, into the groans that could not be uttered. This joyful mourning continued two hours. The Spirit of the Lord was upon me as a Spirit of power and love. I thought I could at that time have laid down my life for their salvation. The backsliders were most upon my heart. One such caught hold of my hand in departing, and cried with great earnestness, "I have found my Saviour again : he has wrote forgiveness on my heart."

Mon., April 21st. I expounded Rev. iii. 2, 3 : "Be watchful, and strengthen the things that remain," &c. Again the power of the Lord was present both to wound and heal. One who had fallen from grace, and lay in the pit of despair three years, was lifted up again, and a new song put in her mouth.

Wed., April 23d. I passed an hour with some of our first children, and found the Spirit of God as in the former days. It continued at Weaver's-hall ; but in meeting the women-hands I was carried above things temporal. The cloud rested on the tabernacle : the spirit of supplication was poured forth. I broke out again and again into effectual prayer, their faith bearing me up. In the midst of strong cryings one was suddenly brought to me, whom I offered up to the throne of grace. It was one who had often strengthened my hands in the Lord. Immediately followed such a burst of divine power as broke all our hearts. All the members suffered with that one member ; and God, who knoweth what is the mind of his Spirit, will surely bring back that wanderer to his fold.

Thur., April 24th. I declared the promises made to backsliders ; and many rejoiced for the consolation. Mary Gee in particular was released, and once more laid hold on eternal life.

Sun., April 27th. "This is the day which the Lord hath made; we will rejoice and be glad in it." He vouchsafed us at the sacrament the never-failing Spirit of intercession. At Conham, likewise, he refreshed us in his own house. A vast, quiet congregation attended at Baptist-Mills, to "Wisdom crying without, uttering her voice in the streets." The Society was with Him again on the mount.

Tues., April 29th. Through many perils I came at last to Road. I showed them at the Cross the end of Christ's coming; namely, "that they might have life," &c.

Wed., April 30th. I preached with double effect. A poor mourner had been crying for mercy all night in the Society-house. I conferred with several who have tasted the love of Christ, mostly under the preaching or prayers of our lay-helpers. How can anyone dare deny that they are sent of God? O that all who have the outward call, were as inwardly moved by the Holy Ghost to preach! O that they would make full proof of their ministry, and take the cause out of our weak hands!

I set out in our chaise; broke it in a slough, and made an hard shift to reach Bradford by noon. I preached close and searching on, "If any man enter by me, he shall be saved."

Thur., May 1st. I endeavoured to strengthen the weak hands. Many rejoiced in sure and steadfast hope that their God will come, and save them. The disconsolate soul (that was, at Road) here found peace and pardon, and rejoiced with joy unspeakable.

Fri., May 2d. I rode back to Bristol, and was met with the news of our victory in Scotland. I spoke at night on the first words that presented, "He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord." We rejoiced unto him with reverence, and thankfully observed the remarkable answer of that petition,

"All their strength o'erturn, o'erthrow,
Snap their spears, and break their swords,
Let the daring rebels know
The battle is the Lord's!"

O that, in this reprieve, before the sword return, we may know the time of our visitation!

Sun., May 4th. From preaching to the Conham stocks and stones, I hastened to Baptist-Mills, and called, "Come now, and let us return unto the Lord; for he hath torn, and he will heal us." In the Society I exhorted the backsliders to return. We heard a general cry of fear, and grief, and joy, in answer to our prayer, and sweetly felt the most sensible presence of God.

Sun., May 11th. He showered down blessings upon us at His table. We were carried out in prayer, especially for the Clergy.

Mon., May 12th. We had a Conference four days with Mr. Hodges, Mr. Taylor, and our own sons in the Gospel.

Whitsunday, May 18th. We had asked in prayer last night a double blessing for this day; and the answer came. I rejoiced from four to six. The second time I preached in the wood. In the sacrament the skies poured down righteousness. Mr. Hodges read prayers at Conham. I preached a fourth time to a quiet multitude at the Mills; and then exhorted the Society to walk worthy their holy calling. This might properly be called the Lord's day.

Thur., May 22d. Many heard His voice who stood at the door and knocked; but in the Society they all seemed ready to open the door.

Fri., May 23d. I passed two hours with a young Clergyman, who is determined to know nothing but Christ crucified. His name is already cast out as evil in his own parish, for endeavouring to do them all the good he can. Our Lord, it seems, is answering our long-continued prayers for labourers.

Sun., May 25th. Our Lord was made known to us, as he always is, in the breaking of bread. Let the Quaker and orthodox *dispute* about the ordinance: our Saviour satisfies us a shorter way.

Wed., May 28th. I reasoned at Bearfield, on "righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come." The Judge stood at the door, and applied his own awful words, "The trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised."

Thur., May 29th. In conference I found many of our children in a thriving condition. Not one of those that are justified dreams that he is sanctified at once, and wants nothing more.

Fri., May 30th. In great deadness I was revived by praying with one of a fearful heart.

I rode to Wick, and preached forgiveness of sins to the simple-hearted poor. Mr. H. and his family were present, and carried me home with them. The large house and garden, the five little children, and sweet behaviour of their mother, and, above all, the open generous temper of Mr. H., made me fancy I was got to Fonmon-castle, and conversing again with our friend come back from Paradise.

Sun., June 1st. It rained most part of the day. At Baptist-Mills I was told, the child of a Papist had much displeased his father by saying, "I believe it will be fair, because Mr. Wesley is to preach here." But so it was: about five the clouds dispersed, the rain ceased, and we had a blessed opportunity.

Mon., June 2d. I set out with my charioteer, Mr. Waller; baited an hour at Publow, where the wickedness of one, and the enthusiasm of another, has quite destroyed the work of God. Mr. Meriton administered private baptism to a child of our host's, who is escaped once more out of bad hands, and no longer makes the Spirit swallow up the letter. By night we got to Coleford.

Tues., June 3d. My morning's congregation drank in every word. I spake with the Society severally. When I saw them last there was scarce a justified person among them: now fourscore testify their having experienced the pardoning love of God.

I baptized an Anabaptist; and all her fears and troubles fled away in a moment.

I preached at one in the shell of their house. The hearers without were as many as those within, though it rained hard. They are hungry souls; and therefore they shall be filled.

I rode and preached in Shepton-Mallet. I spent an hour with the principal man of the town; met the classes at my host Stone's, and slept in peace.

Wed., June 4th. Driving down a steep hill in our way to Sherburn, the horse stumbled, and threw me out of the seat. I fell on my back upon the wheel, my feet were entangled in the chaise; but the beast stood stock still, so

I received no harm, but was only stunned and dirtied. We were four hours going five miles. It rained incessantly, and blew an hurricane, this and the day following. By nine at night we were glad to reach W. Nelson's house in Portland.

Fri., June 6th. I preached to an houseful of staring, loving people, from Jer. l. 20. Some wept, but most looked quite unawakened. At noon and night I preached on an hill in the midst of the island. Most of the inhabitants came to hear, but few as yet feel the burden of sin, or the want of a Saviour.

Sun., June 8th. After evening service we had all the islanders that were able to come. I asked, "Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by?" About half a dozen answered, "It is nothing to us," by turning their backs; but the rest hearkened with greater signs of emotion than I had before observed. I found faith at this time that our labour would not be in vain.

Mon., June 9th. At Southwell, the farthest village, I expounded the song of Simeon. Some very old men attended. I distributed a few books among them, rode round the island, and returned by noon to preach on the hill, and by night at my lodgings. Now the power and blessing came. My mouth and their hearts were opened. The rocks were broken in pieces, and melted into tears on every side. I continued exhorting them from seven till ten, to save themselves from this untoward generation. We could hardly part. I left the little Society of twenty members confirmed and comforted.

Tues., June 10th. I came to Axminster, and preached next morning in the bowling-green to above one thousand well-behaved people, on, "Come unto me, all that travail," &c. I got to Exeter by night.

Sat., June 14th. I went forth at Tavistock, to call sinners to repentance. A large herd of wild beasts were got together, and very noisy and tumultuous they were. At first I stood on a wall, but their violence forced me thence. I walked to the middle of the field, and began calling, "Wash ye, make you clean," &c. The waves of the sea raged so horribly, that few could hear; but all might see the restraining hand of God. I continued in prayer mostly

for half an hour, and walked quietly to my lodgings through the thickest of the King's enemies.

Sun., June 15th. I offered Christ once more to a larger audience, who did not seem like the same people. The power of the Lord was present to convince. I endeavoured to strip them of all pretensions to good, insisting that the natural man has absolutely nothing of his own but pure evil, no will or desire to good, till it be supernaturally infused, any more than the devils in hell.

After church I expounded the prodigal son ; and many listened to their own history.

Mr. Kinsman's Society complained of a brother who had made a division, and carried away fifteen of their members. I went to him and his company. They told me they were convinced, by reading my brother's books, of universal redemption ; and therefore met by themselves to avoid dispute, and confirm one another in the truth. I persuaded, and carried them back to their brethren.

Mon., June 16th. Some of Mr. Whitefield's Society importuned me to go to Plymouth. I went, resolving to preach only in the streets or fields. A confused multitude were got together, and tolerably quiet, while I showed them the necessity of conversion.

Tues., June 17th. While I preached from Isai. i. 16, an whole army of soldiers and sailors stood behind me shouting and blaspheming. A wall of brass was betwixt us. They raged, but could not pass their bounds, or stop the course of the Gospel.

The Society were now so exceeding urgent with me, that I could not refuse praying with them in their room, and provoking them to love, and to good works. I found no difference between them and our children at Kingswood, or the Foundery.

Wed., June 18th. At five I expounded in the Tabernacle Zech. xiii. 6 : "What are these wounds in thy hands ?" &c. Then at the Dock, to above one thousand artless souls, who even devoured the word.

Thur., June 19th. Many of the rich heard, or seemed to hear, me in the evening. In much love I warned the Society against the Antinomian errors, which they were blindly running into.

Fri., June 20th. I urged that legal saying of our Lord, (as some would call it,) "If ye love me, keep my commandments."

I preached Christ crucified to a multitude at the Dock. The word was as a fire, and melted down all it touched. We mourned and rejoiced together in Him that loved us. I have not known such a refreshing time since I left Bristol.

I spake with several in private who had received benefit by the word. One who had found forgiveness clave to me, and would have gone to any of our Societies which I should advise. But I advised her to stay for a plainer direction.

Sun., June 22d. I preached on an hill in Stoke church-yard. It was covered with the surrounding multitude, upward of four thousand, by computation. I expounded the good Samaritan. Some reviled at first, on whom I turned, and with a few words silenced them. The generality behaved as men fearing God. They followed me with their blessings. One only cursed, and called me Whitefield the second.

I took my leave of Mrs. Wheatly and others, whom I greatly love for their love to my brethren Graves, Grinfill, Maxfield, whose bonds they had compassion on. The Lord recompense them in that day!

Our own children could not have expressed greater affection to us at parting. They could have plucked out their eyes and given them us. Several offered me money; but I told them I never accepted any. Others would have persuaded Mr. Waller to take it; but he walked in the same steps, and said their love was sufficient.

Tues., June 24th. I got to Mr. Bennet's.

Wed., June 25th. I read prayers and preached in Trismere church. They seemed to *feel* the word of reconciliation.

Thur., June 26th. I came to Gwennap, and encouraged the poor persecuted sheep by that promise, Zech. xiii. 7—9. The Lord smiled upon our first meeting.

Sun., June 29th. Upon examination of each separately, I found the Society in a prosperous way. Their sufferings have been for their furtherance, and the Gospel's. The opposers behold and wonder at their steadfastness, and

godly conversation. I preached the Gospel to the poor at Stithian ; the poor received it with tears of joy.

My evening congregation was computed upward of five thousand. I preached the pardoning God from the returning prodigal ; and felt, as it were, the people sink under the power of Him that sent me. They all stood uncovered, knelt at the prayers, and hung *narrantis ab ore*. For an hour and an half I invited them back to their Father, and felt no hoarseness or weariness afterwards. I spent an hour and an half more with the Society, warning them against pride, and the love of the creature, and stirring them up to universal obedience.

Mon., June 30th. Both sheep and shepherds had been scattered in the late cloudy day of persecution, but the Lord gathered them again, and kept them together by their own brethren ; who began to exhort their companions, one or more in every Society. No less than four have sprung up in Gwennap. I talked closely with each, and find no reason to doubt their having been used by God thus far. I advised and charged them not to stretch themselves beyond their line, by speaking out of the Society, or fancying themselves public teachers. If they keep within their bounds as they promise, they may be useful in the church : and I would to God that all the Lord's people were Prophets, like these !

In the evening I preached to our dearest children at St. Ives, from Isai. xxxv. 10 : "The redeemed of the Lord shall return," &c. He brought us some steps forward on our journey by that meeting.

Thur., July 3d. At Lidgeon I preached Christ crucified. I spake with the classes, who seem much in earnest. I showed above one thousand sinners at Sithney the love and compassion of Jesus towards them. Many who came from Helstone, a town of rebels and persecutors, were struck, and confessed their sin, and declared they would never more be found fighting against God.

Fri., July 4th. At Wendron an huge multitude listened to the invitation, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." I explained to the infant Society the design of their meeting.

Sun., July 6th. At Stithian I rebuked the Society

sharply, and gave them a fortnight to know their own mind, whether they will serve God or Mammon.

At Gwennap near two thousand listened to those gracious words that proceeded out of His mouth, "Come unto me, all that travail, and are," &c. Half of them were from Redruth, which seems on the point of surrendering to the Prince of peace.

The whole country finds the benefit of the Gospel. Hundreds who follow not with us, have broke off their sins, and are outwardly reformed, and, though persecutors once, will not now suffer a word to be spoken against this way. Some of those who fell off in the late persecution, desired to be present at the Society. I addressed myself chiefly to the backsliders. God touched their hearts. Several followed me to my lodgings, and desired to be admitted again. I received them back upon trial.

Sat., July 12th. I showed them at Morva (who were growing rich) the farther rest for the people of God, and inculcated the first great lesson of humility.

Sun., July 13th. Most of St. Just Society were present. I applied those seasonable words, "Will ye also go away?" with great severity and love; besought them to cast up the stumbling-block of sin; to turn unto the Lord with weeping, and fasting, and mourning, that the Gospel-door might be again opened among them. I urged the same thing upon them in the Society-room; and with many tears they promised amendment, and requested me to come to them again.

I went to church at Zunnor, and thence to my congregation, whom I showed the twofold rest of pardon and holiness. I talked with their young exhorter, Madern, and advised him to practise, before he preached, the Gospel.

At St. Ives no one offered to make the least disturbance. Indeed, the whole place is outwardly changed in this respect. I walk the streets with astonishment, scarce believing it St. Ives. It is the same throughout all the county. All opposition falls before us, or rather is fallen, and not yet suffered to lift up its head again. This, also, hath the Lord wrought.

I put a disorderly walker, the first of the kind, out of the Society.

Fri., July 18th. I preached with much freedom at Wendron. A poor drunkard exclaimed for a few moments, and turned his back. I did not wonder when I heard he was an alehouse-keeper.

*Una cum gente tot annos
Bella gero.*

Men of his craft are generally our sworn enemies.

Sat., July 19th. I had a visit from Captain Trounce, the man who last year hindered my brother from preaching, and threw him over the wall.

I rode to Sithney, where the word begins to take root. The rebels of Helstone threatened hard. All manner of evil they say of us. Papists we are, that is certain; and are for bringing in the Pretender. Nay, the vulgar are persuaded I have brought him with me, and James Waller is the man. But a law is to come from London to-night, to put us all down, and set £100 upon my head. We had, notwithstanding, a numerous congregation, and several of the persecutors. I declared my commission, "to open their eyes, to turn them from darkness to light," &c. Many appeared convinced, and caught in the Gospel net.

Sun., July 20th. Near one hundred of the fiercest rioters were present, who a few months since had cruelly beat the sincere hearers, not sparing the women and children. They were hired by the pious Minister for that purpose. Now these very men, expecting a disturbance, came to fight for me, and said they would lose their lives in my defence. But there was no occasion for their service; all was quiet, as it generally is when Satan threatens most.

I crossed the country to Redruth. I walked through the town a mile to church, and was surprised by the general civility.

I drew the congregation after me to the field, more than eight thousand, as was supposed. I expounded the good Samaritan. Surely He has a multitude of patients here.

Mon., July 21st. I had heard sad accounts of St. Just people; that, being scattered by persecution, they had wandered into by-paths of error and sin, and been confirmed therein by their covetous, proud exhorter, J. Bennet. From St. Ives I came, on Wednesday noon, July 23d, to

his house in Trewallard, a village belonging to St. Just. I found about a dozen of the shattered Society, which quickly increased to fifty or sixty. I perceived as soon as we kneeled down, that there was a blessing in the remnant. We wrestled with God in his own strength from one till nine, with only the preaching between. I acknowledged, God was with them of a truth. My faith for them returned, and I asked, nothing doubting, that the door might again be opened, and that he who hinders might be taken out of the way, as God knew best. This man was once a gentleman of fortune, but is now a poor drunken spendthrift, brother to Dr. Borlase, and retained by that dispenser of justice to supply the defect of the laws. This champion they send forth drunk on all occasions. It was he that pressed my brother for a soldier; dragged away Edward Grinfill, though past age, from his business and family, for a soldier and sailor; assaulted Mr. Meriton, to serve him the same way; seized on Mr. Graves, the third Clergyman, in bed, and hurried him on board a man-of-war. In a word, he seems raised up by Satan to support his tottering kingdom, and swears continually, there shall never be any more preaching at St. Just. For a year and an half Satan has seemed to triumph in his success: so much good may one sinner hinder, if armed with the sins of God's people. In praying for this poor soul I thought heaven and earth would meet. The Spirit of prayer bowed down all before him. We believed the door would be opened for preaching at this time. Between six and seven I cried in the street to about one thousand hearers, "If God be for us, who can be against us?" The wall of brass surrounded us. None opened his mouth, or appeared on Satan's side. The little flock were comforted and refreshed abundantly.

I spake with each of the Society, and was amazed to find them just the reverse of what they had been represented. Most of them had kept their first love, even while men were riding over their heads, and they passed through fire and water. Their Exhorter appeared a solid, humble Christian, raised up to stand in the gap, and keep the trembling sheep together.

I was ready for rest, but none could I find all night,

through the multitude of my small bed-fellows. At four I talked with more of the Society, and adored the miracle of grace, which has kept these sheep in the midst of wolves. Well may the despisers behold and wonder. Here is a bush in the fire, burning, yet not consumed! What have they not done to crush this rising sect? but, lo! they prevail nothing!

*Non hydra secto corpore firmior
Vires dolentem crevit in Herculem.*

For one Preacher they cut off, twenty spring up. Neither persuasions nor threatening, flattery nor violence, dungeons, or sufferings of various kinds, can conquer them. Many waters cannot quench this little spark which the Lord hath kindled, neither shall the floods of persecution drown it.

Thur., July 24th. I rode with a merry heart to Lidgeon, and called many sin-sick souls to their Physician. I met the Society at Zunnor: how unlike those of St. Just! I rebuked them sharply; silenced one of their Exhorters; and returned to Trewallard by Friday noon.

Fri., July 25th. From one to three we poured out our souls in prayer for a nation laden with iniquity. I was led undesignedly to pray for our drunken persecutor; and the Spirit came pouring down like a river. We were filled with the divine presence. I had left my Hymn-book in my chamber, and stepped up for it. One came after me with news that Mr. Eustick was just coming to take me up. I went down to the congregation; but my friend Eustick was gone, without beating man, woman, or child. He only asked if Mr. Wesley was there, for he had a warrant to apprehend him; went out at the other door, and told those he met he had been searching all the house for Wesley, but could not find him. We supposed he had not got sufficient courage, that is, drink, for his purpose, and expected his return. To make the devil a liar, I began preaching an hour before the appointed time. The flame was kindled in a moment. I had only to speak, and leave God to apply. He filled us up to the brim with faith, and love, and joy, and power. The Spirit of the Lord lifted up, and caused us to triumph, and tread on all the powers of the enemy.

After a short interval, I received strength to preach again

in the court-yard, on, "Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?" The two-edged sword did great execution. I concluded with that hymn,—

"Glory and thanks and praise
To Him that hath the key!
Jesus, thy sovereign grace
Gives us the victory;
Baffles the world and Satan's power,
And open throws the Gospel-door," &c.

Sun., July 27th. I met the Society at Morva. I went to church at St. Just, and then to my old pulpit, the large stone by brother Chinchall's house. I preached from Matt. xxii. 1. All was quiet till I came to those words, "And the remnant took his servants, and intreated them spitefully, and slew them." Then one begun throwing stones; but I went on exhorting them to save themselves from this untoward generation. My discourse was as mixed as the multitude: law, Gospel, threatenings, promises, which I trust the Spirit applied to their several cases.

I rode to St. Ives, and expounded the woman bowed down with a spirit of infirmity.

Mon., July 28th. I began my week's experiment of leaving off tea; but my flesh protested against it. I was but half awake and half alive all day; and my headache so increased toward noon, that I could neither speak nor think. So it was for the two following days, with the addition of a violent purging, occasioned by my milk-diet. This so weakened me, that I could hardly sit my horse. However, I made a shift to ride to Gwennap, and preach, and meet the Society. I would have eaten afterwards, being very faint and weary, but could get nothing proper.

Fri., August 1st. I left two or three of a doubtful character out of the Society at St. Ives, not daring to trust them with the honour of God and his people. At the hour of intercession, our hearts were moved, and we desired to return to God, in weeping, and fasting, and mourning. They promised henceforward to meet the true members of the Church of England at the throne of grace on this day.

Sat., August 2d. At Sithney I spoke with one who had been set at liberty from the guilt of sin the first time he heard me. I think as soon as I had named my text. I

preached Christ crucified in the evening, and on Sunday morning, August 3d, to many who seemed truly desirous to know him.

From evening service at Redruth, I rode back to my own church, the valley, near our room at Gwennap, and found at least five thousand sinners waiting for the glad tidings of salvation. I bade them to the great supper, in my Master's name and words, and even compelled them to come in.

Tues., August 5th. I preached there again, and rejoiced over those blessed mourners. Some, I heard, were then filled with all joy in believing.

Thur., August 7th. I asked, at Trewallard, "What are those wounds in thy hands?" The Lord himself answered, and made himself known to us by the marks of his sufferings.

Before preaching, I read them the late Act against swearing; of which a hundred had been sent my brother by a Justice of Peace. I thought his design best answered by reading it in our largest congregations. Last Sunday I read it at Gwennap. I believe it was blessed to many. I rejoiced over this steady people. Near a hundred and fifty are gathered again, and knit together in the love of Jesus.

Fri., August 8th. I met the Society at five, and more of the power of God than ever. I thought he would give us a double portion at parting. We tasted the powers of the world to come, while the Spirit applied his own word, "These are they that came out of great tribulation."

I got back to St. Ives by one; and we humbled ourselves under the mighty hand of God. He did now begin to lift us up. A spirit of mourning ran through our hearts; and again in the evening, while I explained, "The Spirit and the Bride say, Come."

Sun., August 10th. At Gwennap, nine or ten thousand, by computation, listened with all eagerness, while I commended them to God, and to the word of his grace. For near two hours I was enabled to preach repentance towards God, and faith in Jesus Christ. I broke out again and again into prayer and exhortation. I believed not one word would return empty. Seventy years' sufferings were overpaid by one such opportunity.

Never had we so large an effusion of the Spirit as in the Society. I could not doubt, at that time, either their perseverance or my own ; and still I am humbly confident that we shall stand together among the multitude which no man can number.

Mon., August 11th. I expressed the gratitude of my heart in the following thanksgiving :—

“ All thanks be to God,
Who scatters abroad,
Throughout every place,
By the least of his servants, his savour of grace :
Who the victory gave,
The praise let him have,
For the work He hath done ;
All honour and glory to Jesus alone ! ” &c.

I preached, at St. Eudy's, “ Repent, and believe the Gospel.” Mr. Bennet and Thompson were present. As I was concluding, a gentleman rode up to me very fiercely, and bade me come down. We exchanged a few words, and talked together more largely in the house. The poor drunken Lawyer went away in as good an humour as he was then capable of.

I had more difficulty to get clear of a different antagonist, one Adams, an old enthusiast, who travels through all the land, as “ Overseer of all the Ministers.”

Tues., August 12th. Mr. Bennet's church was crowded at night. He read prayers, and I preached on, “ They that be whole have no need of a Physician.”

Wed., August 13th. I offered to preach in Tavistock ; but to such stocks and stones as I have not seen, no, not at Conham. The words rebounded as from a wall of brass. So great a bar I have seldom felt ; and was therefore forced in a quarter of an hour to dismiss them.

Thur., August 14th. Many letters I had received from Plymouth, importuning me to visit them in my return. A brother met us on the road thither, and informed me of what I expected, the indefatigable pains Satan has taken to alienate the minds of the people. Yet I complied with the request of Herbert Jenkins, Mr. Kinsman's family, and many others, by preaching in their house once more.

Fri., August 15th. I showed a simple people at the Dock

the blessedness of mourning ; and they tasted it in that hour.

Sat., August 16th. I spent the morning in conversing with Mrs. Stephens, M. Patrick, M. Hide's family, and other sincere followers after Christ. I baptized a young woman, who, *in* the ordinance, lost her burden of sin, and was soon after filled with joy in believing.

Sun., August 17th. My subject was, "They that be whole have no need of a Physician," &c. The number of the sick, I believe, increases. We walked back from the field with the voice of praise and thanksgiving.

Mon., August 18th. I took boat for the Dock with sister Gregory, Veel, Poppleston, and Herbert Jenkins. In perils by water, in perils among false brethren ! The rough, stormy sea tried our faith. Some supernatural courage I had given me for the rest. None stirred, or we must have been overset. In two hours our invisible Pilot brought us safe to land ; thankful for our deliverance, humbled for our littleness of faith, and more endeared to each other by our common danger.

I found thousands waiting for the word of life. The Lord made it a channel of grace. I spoke and prayed alternately for two hours. The moonlight added to the solemnity. Our eyes overflowed with tears, and our hearts with love. Scarce a soul but was affected with grief or joy. We drank into one spirit ; and were persuaded that neither life nor death, nor things present, nor things to come, shall be able to separate us.

I spent all Wednesday, August 20th, at Tavistock, to encourage their poor scattered Society, under the reproach which one had brought upon them all.

Thur., August 21st. I published the dying love of Jesus in Trismere church ; and on

Fri., August 22d, I enforced the duty, (Matt. vii. 7,) and pleaded the promise, in full assurance of faith. I was refreshed by the sight of my brother Thompson. At night I preached in Laneast church, to a people seeking the Lord.

Sun., August 24th. I preached morning and evening, not my own words, at St. Ginnys.

At Mr. Bennet's, I heard, from Captain Hitchins, that J.

Trembath was still alive, but his son Samuel departed in full triumph. His last words were,

“Ready wing’d for their flight
To the regions of light,
The horsemen are come,
The chariots of Israel, to carry me home !”

Thur., August 28th. At Bristol I met my brother, returned from Wales.

Fri., August 29th. The Lord gave me words of comfort for our own dear children in the Gospel.

Sun., August 31st. In expounding the woman bowed down, we found the ancient blessing. We concluded the day and month with a joyful love-feast.

Tues., September 2d. I preached at Bath and Brentford, where some of our friends met, and conducted us to town.

Thur., September 4th. Here I heard that Mr. Green, a Clergyman whom my brother had sent for to assist us, was fallen off to the Antinomians.

Thur., September 11th. Poor T. W. came to beg something of me, on pretence of visiting his father, before the Bishop of London ordained him for a Missionary. I got Mr. Watkins to assist him, although his promises of repentance had little weight with me.

I talked with a man of the world, in great affliction for the loss of a favourite child. When on the point of committing sin, he had been warned of her death, as if a voice had said, “If you do this thing, I will take away your child.” She died in the most triumphant manner, being perfected in the short space of nine years.

Tues., September 16th. I set out in a chaise with Mr. Edward Perronet, Mr. Watkins, and others, for Shoreham. I preached in our way at Sevenoaks, where we were much threatened, but nothing hurt. At Shoreham, Mr. Green read prayers. As soon as I began preaching, the wild beasts began roaring, stamping, blaspheming, ringing the bells, and turning the church into a bear-garden. I spoke on for half an hour, though only the nearest could hear. The rioters followed us to Mr. Perronet’s house, raging, threatening, and throwing stones. Charles Perronet hung over me, to intercept my blows. They continued their uproar after we were housed. Our sisters from Sevenoaks

feared to go home : but our Lord in some time scattered the beasts of the people, so that they escaped unhurt.

Fri., September 19th. An opposer desired to see me on his death-bed. Now his voice was changed, and he glad to hear, one might know our sins forgiven here ; but feared he was too great a sinner to obtain it. I left him waiting for redemption, as a poor trembling publican or harlot.

Sun., September 21st. I heard Mr. Green preach rank Antinomianism. In the evening I cried, in the name of my Lord, "Look unto me, and be ye saved"—from sin, not in it. He owned his own word. To the bands I explained the nature of Christian perfection,—another name for Christian salvation. Mr. Green sat by and mocked.

Mon., September 22d. I carried him to Newington-green, where he appeared an Antinomian barefaced.

Tues., September 23d. He fairly told me, my brother and I preached another Gospel, and were therefore accursed.

Wed., September 24th. I prayed by our sister Lincoln, rejoicing, as was thought, in death. The fever had taken away her senses, but not her joy. Still her words were all prayer or praise.

Fri., September 26th. I met my brother at Uxbridge. I heard him at our chapel in the evening. He read us an account of another son of James Hitchins, just going to glory ; which set us all on fire.

Sun., October 5th. We had the never-failing presence of our Lord at his table. I encouraged my companions in tribulation at the Foundery by the scriptural prospect of the new Jerusalem : added a few words, how they should observe the thanksgiving-day.

Tues., October 7th. I prayed with Edward Perronet, just on the point of receiving faith.

Thur., October 9th. The Foundery was filled at four in the morning. I spoke from those words, "How shall I give thee up, Ephraim?" Our hearts were melted by the long-suffering love of God, whose power we felt disposing us to the true thanksgiving. It was a day of solemn rejoicing. O that from this moment all our rebellions against God might cease !

Fri., October 10th. I set out for Newcastle with my

young companion and friend, Edward Perronet, whose heart the Lord hath given me. His family were kept from us so long by their mistaken notion, that we were against the Church. We lodged at Tetsworth. I could not rest for my vomiting and purging.

Sun., October 12th. At Quinton I preached repentance, from the strongest of all motives, "Turn ye unto the Lord, for he is gracious," &c. Out of the abundance of my heart my mouth spake, and both Preacher and people bowed down to the pardoning God.

In the evening my text at Evesham was, "His blood be upon us, and upon our children." We felt its softening power; and yet more at the Society, where Patty Keech and others were quite overpowered by it.

Mon., October 13th. I dined at Studley, where some poor drunkards, offended at our singing, endeavoured a while to silence us; but we fairly outsang them. Riding on, I had a narrow escape. A man discharged a gun just over my head, and shot a bird on the opposite hedge, which fell dead at my feet. The shot flew within a few inches of my face. One of our company told us, his father had been killed by such an accident.

I was much refreshed at Birmingham by my brother James Jones, and the rest of the children whom God hath given us.

Tues., October 14th. I rejoiced once more with our brethren at Wednesbury, who have rest at present, and walk in the comfort of the Holy Ghost. The Lord was with us as in the former days. Late at night came our brother Swindels, to conduct us to the Cheshire Societies.

Wed., October 15th. I preached at Tipton-green the necessity of taking Christ's yoke upon us. The few remaining Antinomians were present; but they only mocked at God's word and messenger.

I baptized a Dissenter's child. I went forth, and proclaimed my Master in the street. All were deeply attentive. How is the leopard laid down with the kid! It was past eight when we came to Penkridge, at the invitation of a brother. He comforted my heart on the way, by informing me that his father, aged seventy, and a great

opposer lately, had come last night to the preaching, and returned to his house justified.

We were hardly set down when the sons of Belial beset the house, and beat at the door. I ordered it to be set open, and immediately they filled the house. I sat still in the midst of them for half an hour. Edward Perronet I was a little concerned for, lest such rough treatment at his first setting out should daunt him ; but he abounded in valour, and was for reasoning with the wild beasts, before they had spent any of their violence. He got a deal of abuse thereby, and not a little dirt, both which he took very patiently.

I had no design to preach, but, being called upon by so unexpected a congregation, I rose at last, and read the first words I met : "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory." While I reasoned with them of judgment to come, they grew calmer by little and little. I then spake to them one by one, till the Lord had disarmed them all. One who stood out the longest I held by the hand, and urged with the love of Christ crucified, till, in spite of both his natural and diabolical courage, he trembled like a leaf. I was constrained to break out into earnest prayer for him ; and surely the Lord heard and answered. Our leopards were all become lambs ; and very kind we were at parting. Near midnight the house was clear and quiet. We gave thanks to the God of our salvation, and slept in peace.

Thur., October 16th. I rose much refreshed at four, and preached to an house-full of listening souls. I rode to Congleton, and preached in a yard, and prayed with the little Society, who seem on the brink of the pool. One impotent sinner, past seventy, was healed, and witnessed it the same hour.

Fri., October 17th. I directed a quiet multitude at the Cross to "the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world." Satan had sent one Smith to this place before me, who begged their charity, and railed at the Clergy. Yet the poor people heard me gladly. Two Ministers were of my audience.

Sat., October 18th. At Woodley I invited the weary to

Christ ; and on Sunday morning, October 19th, discoursed on, "Him that cometh unto me, I will in no wise cast out."

Mon., October 20th. I saluted our friends at Birstal.

Tues., October 21st. I preached at Dewsbury, where John Nelson had gathered many stray sheep. The Minister did not condemn them unheard, but talked with the persons wrought upon, and narrowly examined into the doctrine taught them, and its effect on their lives. When he found that as many as had been affected by the preaching were evidently reformed, and brought to church and sacrament, he testified his approbation of the work, and rejoiced that sinners were converted unto God.

At Leeds I called a lamb-like multitude to repentance. Many at the Society were unable to suppress their concern ; others, who had more power over themselves, were no less deeply affected.

Wed., October 22d. I preached in a yard at Keighley, on, "God so loved the world." Here, also, is the promise of a plentiful harvest. I went on to Haworth ; called on Mr. Grimshaw, a faithful Minister of Christ, and found him and his wife ill of a fever. She had been a great opposer, but lately convinced. His soul was full of triumphant love. I wished mine in its place. We prayed, believing that the Lord would raise him up again, for the service of his church.

I read prayers, and expounded Isai. xxxv. All listened, many wept, some received comfort. I returned, and exhorted the steady Society at Keighley. I lay at a public-house, and I slept, in spite of the serenaders, who entertained my fellow-traveller till the morning.

Thur., October 23d. I set out with Edward Perronet, and reached Newcastle by Saturday noon.

Sun., October 26th. My companion was taken ill of a fever. We prayed for him in strong faith, nothing doubting. Monday and Tuesday he grew worse and worse. On Wednesday the small-pox appeared : a favourable sort. Yet on Thursday evening we were much alarmed, by the great pain and danger he was in. We had recourse to our never-failing remedy, and received a most remarkable, immediate answer to our prayer. The great means of his recovery was the prayer of faith.

Fri., October 31st. I rode to Wickham, where the Curate sent his love to me, with a message, that "he was glad of my coming, and obliged to me for endeavouring to do good among his people, for none wanted it more; and he heartily wished me good luck in the name of the Lord." He came with another Clergyman, and stayed both preaching and Society. I discoursed on Matt. xi. 5.

It was the exemplary behaviour of our Society, with the deaths of two or three, which convinced the Ministers that this new sect, everywhere spoken against, is no other than the sect of the Nazarenes, or real Christians.

Sun., November 2d. I preached in the street, close to the Popish chapel, from Isai. i. 9: "Except the Lord of hosts had left us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom," &c. I put them in mind of their late consternation, and deliverance, in answer to the mourning, praying few. God gave weight to my words, which therefore sunk into their hearts. Many in this place, I am persuaded, will thank Him with their lives, and not be terrified when the scourge returns.

Mon., November 3d. Prayer has been made to God without ceasing for my young man, and God hath showed he heard. To-day the small-pox turned, and he is better than we could hope in so short a time. It is the Lord's doing, who has given him to his church. Whether he has not also received the sense of pardon in his sickness, let his life, rather than my words, witness.

Tues., November 4th. I preached at Biddicks, on, "How shall I give thee up, Ephraim?" and the numerous congregation were dissolved in tears. At one I spoke from those words, "Lord, when thy hand is lifted up, they will not see: but they shall see," &c. Again my voice was drowned in the general sorrow. We poured out a prayer while His chastening was upon us, and all lay at His feet weeping. At night many followed the example of the importunate widow.

Thur., November 6th. God broke us to pieces with the hammer of his word, Jer. xxxi., and the room was filled with strong cries and prayers, that pierced the clouds.

Fri., November 7th. I preached at Plessy, at Swalwell,

and at Wickham, where I got an hour's useful conversation with the two Ministers.

Sun., November 9th. I was very sensible of the hard frost in riding to Burnup-Field ; but did not feel it while calling a crowd of sinners to repentance. At my return, I found Edward Perronet rejoicing in the love of God.

Wed., November 12th. I preached on, "Let us come boldly to the throne of grace ;" and the Lord fulfilled the words. I cannot describe what our souls felt while we sat down with Christ in heavenly places.

Thur., November 13th. I expounded at Newlings. Here, also, J. Brown has gathered a flock, and suffered greatly for their sake.

Mon., November 17th. At Biddicks I preached on, "They all shall know me, from the least to the greatest." The least begin to know Him : when will it spread to the greatest too ?

Wed., November 19th. I had much serious talk with the friendly Dr. F. Such a Physician is truly the gift of God. He seems resolved with his house to serve the Lord.

Sun., November 23d. At night I could not preach, through the usual uproar ; but only exhort the Society, to which I admitted the backsliders.

Mon., November 24th. They were greatly moved under the morning word. We observed the day as a day of humiliation. I had a solemn hour of prayer with the mourners. God did not manifest himself so much in joy and comfort, as in power and firmness (which he put into our hearts) against sin.

Wed., November 26th. All seemed overwhelmed with the power of His love. For an hour or two I quite forgot myself, and those that burden me.

Thur., November 27th. I rode to Hexham, at the pressing instance of Mr. Wardrobe, a Dissenting Minister, and others. I walked straight to the market-place, and began calling sinners to repentance. A multitude of them stood staring at me, but all quiet. The Lord opened my mouth, and they drew nearer and nearer, stole off their hats, and listened. None offered to interrupt, but one unfortunate Squire, who could get none to second him. His servants and the Constables hid themselves. One he did find, and

bade him go take me down. The poor Constable simply answered, "Sir, I cannot have the face to do it ; for what harm does he do?" Several Papists attended, and the church Minister, who had refused me his pulpit with indignation. However, he came to hear with his own ears ; and I wish all who hang us first, would, like him, try us afterward.

I walked back to Mr. Ord's, through the people, who acknowledged, "It is the truth, and none can speak against it." A Constable followed, and told me, "Sir Edward Blacket orders you to *disperse* the town," (*depart*, I suppose, he meant,) "and not raise a disturbance there." I sent my respects to Sir Edward, and said, if he would give me leave, I would wait upon him, and satisfy him. He soon returned with an answer, that Sir Edward would have nothing to say to me ; but if I preached again, and raised a disturbance, he would put the law in execution against me. I replied, I was not conscious of my breaking any law of God or man ; but if I did, I was ready to suffer the penalty ; that as I had not given notice of preaching again at the Cross, I should not preach again *at that place*, or cause disturbance anywhere. I charged the Constable, a trembling, submissive soul, to assure his Worship I revered him for his office' sake.

The only place I could get to preach in was a cock-pit, and expected Satan would come and fight me on his own ground. Squire Roberts, the Justice's son, laboured hard to raise a mob ; (for whose riot I was to answer ;) but with a strong hand did our Lord hold down him that is in the world. The very boys ran away from him, when the poor Squire persuaded them to go down to the cock-pit, and cry, "Fire !"

I called, (in words then first heard in that place,) "Repent, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out." God struck the hard rock, and the waters gushed out. Never have I seen a people more desirous at the first hearing.

I passed the evening in conference with Mr. Wardrobe. O that all our Dissenting brethren were like-minded ! Then would all dissensions cease for ever.

Fri., November 28th. At six we assembled again in our

chapel, the cock-pit. I imagined myself in the Pantheon, or some heathen temple, and almost scrupled preaching there at first; but we found "the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof." His presence consecrated the place. Never have I seen greater awe, or sense of God, than while we were repeating his own prayer. I set before their eyes Christ crucified, and crying from the cross, "Is it nothing to you?" The rocks were melted into gracious tears. We knew not how to part. I distributed some books among them, which they received with the utmost eagerness; begged me to come again, and to send our Preachers to them.

Sun., November 30th. I went out into the streets of Newcastle, and called the poor, the lame, the halt, the blind, with that precious promise, "Him that cometh unto me, I will in no wise cast out." They had no feeling of the sharp frost, while the love of Christ warmed their hearts.

I took my leave of the weeping flock at Burnup in that of Jude, "Now to Him that is able to keep you from falling," &c. Nothing can be more comfortable than our parting, except our last meeting to part no more.

I preached before the usual time at Newcastle; yet the mob paid their usual attendance, our Lord still permitting them to try us.

Fri., December 5th. At Righton I preached, "Jesus Christ the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever." Many hungry souls listened with inexpressible eagerness. I was greatly enlarged, and knew not when to end.

Sat., December 6th. I visited one of our sick children, Phebe Crosier, and received *her* blessing and prayers.

Sun., December 7th. Many from the country increased our joy at the lovefeast. We were carried out in mighty prayer for the Church and nation.

Sun., December 14th. I had two or three hours' close conversation with the two Ministers at Wickham. At noon I preached in Swalwell to many, now quiet, serious hearers. Here, indeed, our Lord hath at last got himself the victory.

Tues., December 16th. I preached the Gospel to the poor at Spen, their spirit bearing me up. Next morning we had a double blessing, and diligently poured out our souls before the Lord.

Thur., December 18th. I waked between three and four, in a temper I have rarely felt on my birth-day. My joy and thankfulness continued the whole day, to my own astonishment. I rode to Hexham. I preached at the Cross, "Repentance towards God, and faith in Jesus Christ." All opposition was kept down, and the Lord was with us of a truth.

At four I attempted to preach in the cock-pit. Satan resented it, and sent, as his champions to maintain his cause, the two butlers of the two Justices. They brought their cocks, and set them a fighting. I gave them the ground, and walked straight to the Cross, where was four times as many as the other place could hold. Our enemies followed, and strove all the ways permitted them to annoy us. Neither their fire-works nor their water-works could stop the course of the Gospel. I lifted up my voice like a trumpet, and many had ears to hear.

Fri., December 19th. I took my leave of the dear people at the cock-pit. I called on Mr. — at Wickham, whose countenance was changed. He had been with the Bishop, who forbade his conversing with me. I marvel the prohibition did not come sooner.

Sat., December 27th. I rode in bitter weather to Pelton. I talked with each of the Society; and found nothing to reprove among them.

Sun., December 28th. I hastened through the snow to Gateshead; and preached out to many, who promise fair for making hardy soldiers of Christ.

Mon., December 29th. I left these poor languid souls, among whom God has been humbling me these many days. He vouchsafed us a blessing at parting. I rode with Edward Perronet and J. Crawford, to Biddicks: preached at night and next morning. The Lord gave us a token by which to remember each other.

Tues. noon. I preached and distributed books to a few starved souls at Ferry-hill.

Wed., December 31st. By three I came to Osmotherly. Mr. Adams carried us to his house, and then to his chapel, where I read prayers and preached repentance and remission of sin in the name of Jesus Christ.

PART X.

FROM JANUARY 1ST, 1747, TO DECEMBER 28TH, 1747.

THURSDAY, January 1st, 1747. In the evening I preached at Acomb, near York, and exhorted the brethren with great freedom.

Fri., January 2d. I was comforted among our dear brethren and children in Epworth.

Sat., January 3d. I waited with Mr. Perronet upon the Curate, who did not refuse us the sacrament, as he had my brother.

Sun., January 4th. I preached at the Cross, as usual.

Tues., January 6th. I got to Grimsby by three, saluted by the shouting mob. At six I began speaking at the room ; and the floods lifted up their voice. Several poor wild creatures, almost naked, ran about the room, striking down all they met. I gave myself to prayer, believing God knew how to deliver us. The uproar lasted near an hour ; when I told the poor wretches that I shook off the dust of my feet against them. Several of them caught at me to drag me down ; others interposed, and kept their companions off. I laid my hand on their Captain, and he sat down like a lamb at my feet the whole time. One struck at me, and J. Crawford received my blow, which left on his face the marks of the Lord Jesus. Another of the rebels cried out, "What, you dog, do you strike a Clergyman?" and fell upon his comrade. Immediately every man's hand was against his fellow ; they fell to fighting and beating one another, till, in a few minutes, they had all driven one another out of the room. I then preached without molestation for half an hour, and walked into the next room. I stayed, reading the Scripture, while the rioters at the door cried they would come in, and take their leave of me. I ordered them to be admitted, and the poor drunken beasts were very civil, and very loving. One of the ringleaders, with a great club, swore he would conduct me to my lodgings. I followed him, and he led me through his fellows, to our brother Blow's. They threw but one stone afterwards, which broke the window ; and departed.

Wed., January 7th. All was quiet at five. I met the

Society, and expelled two disorderly walkers, by reason of whom the truth had been evil spoken of. Immediately the Lord returned to his people, and began reviving his work, which had been stopped among them some time.

At eight I preached again, no man opposing. I heard an excellent sermon at church, it being the national fast-day, on Heb. xi. : "By faith Noah, being warned of God," &c. I preached repentance the third time at the room, where many of the rioters stood bound by the restraining hand of God.

God never lets Satan shut the door in one place, but that it may be opened in another. The violence of our enemies at night drove us to preach in the neighbouring towns, where the seed fell into good ground.

Thur., January 8th. I preached at Grimsby in the morning, and strongly exhorted our Society to adorn the Gospel of Christ in all things. At parting, our friend the rabble saluted us with a few eggs and curses only.

At Hainton I set forth Jesus Christ before their eyes as crucified. My congregation was mostly Papists ; but they all wept at hearing how Jesus loved them.

Fri., January 9th. I talked severally to the little Society, who are as sheep encompassed with wolves. Their Minister has repelled them from the sacrament, and laboured to stir up all the town against them. And they would have worried them to death, had not the great man of this place, a professed Papist, hindered these good Protestants from destroying their innocent brethren.

By three I came safe to Epworth ; and was received by Edward Perronet and the brethren, as one alive from the dead.

Sun., January 11th. I declared, at the Cross, "Except the Lord had left us a very small remnant," &c. I preached there again, with greater enlargement, in the afternoon ; and at night God comforted us on every side.

Mon., January 12th. At Sikehouse I preached Christ crucified. Many were comforted ; one received the faith that justifies.

Wed., January 14th. I expounded that comfortable promise at Leeds, "On them that fear the Lord, the Sun of righteousness shall rise with healing in his wings."

Sat., January 17th. I met Miss B. in Leeds, whom the Lord convinced this week, the first time she heard the word ; and on Thursday night, just as she was dropping into hell, received her into his everlasting arms. She appeared plainly justified. My spirit was much refreshed hereby, and my hands strengthened.

Sun., January 18th. In the midst of my discourse, we all broke out into joy and singing. The same comfort we had at Birstal, and were constrained to own, at our love-feast, that He had kept the best wine to the last.

Thur., January 22d. I preached in a large house at Haworth, but not near large enough. I lodged at my dear brother Grimshaw's.

Fri., January 23d. I told my host, at parting, that he had feared where no fear was, there being no law either of God or man against his lending me his pulpit. He was much ashamed at having given place to his threatening enemies.

I set out to preach in what were called William Darney's Societies. I preached at different places, morning, noon, and night, with much freedom.

Sat., January 24th. I rode to Manchester ; baptized a child of Thomas Taylor's, and our brother B. found a divine proof, that infant baptism is of God. At Davy-Hulme I had much conversation with our old friend John Boulton.

Sun., January 25th. I re-settled the poor shattered Society. One woman delighted me with her scrupulosity, telling me, "she would be of the Society if I would allow her to go to church : but the Germans used to forbid them." Through the blessing of God, I have brought back these wandering sheep to her pale.

I preached at several places in or near the Peak.

Fri., January 30th. I preached at Sheffield, where the rioters threatened much, but did nothing.

Sat., January 31st. I made up an old quarrel between some of the Society, which had hung on them, like a mill-stone, for many months.

Sun., February 1st. I rode to Rotherham, where I had been stoned through the town, the first time of my passing it. I heard a curious sermon, of which I was the unworthy subject. The accuser of the brethren was very fierce indeed.

I sat quite composed, till he had concluded ; then walked up to the table, expecting to be repelled, as he had threatened. I prayed the Lord to turn his heart ; and he was not suffered to pass me by.

From church I went to our brother Green's, and preached repentance and faith in Jesus Christ, from Isai. i. 16. Many of the principal people of the town were in a private room. The convincing Spirit went forth, and restrained the madness of the people. I departed in peace.

I warned the hardened sinners at Sheffield from those awful words, "Except the Lord of hosts had left us a very small remnant," &c. He filled my mouth with judgments against this people, except they repent, which I trembled to utter. So did most who heard, particularly some of our fiercest persecutors. I found relief and satisfaction in having delivered my own soul, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear.

I repeated my warnings to the Society, and believe they will escape into the ark, before the flood comes.

I baptized my host's child, and we were sensible of the divine presence.

Mon., February 2d. I never met with worse way and weather than in riding to Penkridge. About eight at night I was taken down from my horse, and found the congregation just going. The Lord gave me strength from above, though I could neither stand nor go, and held me up to call lost sinners to Him. I rode the next day to Wednesbury.

Thur., February 5th. I baptized the child of a Dissenter, which their Minister refused to do, because the parents heard us.

I preached in Darlaston at the door of our brother Jones's house, which had been pulled down in the former riot. The persecutors in this place were some of the fiercest in Staffordshire. I saw the marks of their violence, and thereby knew our people's houses, as I rode through the town. Their windows were all stopped up, &c.

The word was a two-edged sword. The ringleader of the mob was struck down, and convinced of his lost estate. I preached again with double power. The Minister's wife I had some talk with afterwards. Her husband has been, in

the hand of God, an instrument of quelling the mob. They have been all quiet since their Captain drowned himself.

Fri., February 6th. I put a woman out of the Society, for speaking disrespectfully of the Minister.

Sun., February 8th. At Wednesbury I expounded Acts ii. 42. The word was sent home to many hearts.

Tues., February 10th. God brought me safe to London.

Sun., February 15th. While I was preaching remission of sins, the power of God came down, and constrained many to confess it.

Tues., February 17th. I heard of our second house being pulled down at Sheffield ; and sympathized with the sufferers. Every day this week our Lord has given testimony to the word of his grace.

Mon., February 23d. At four I set out with Mr. Meriton for Bristol.

Tues., February 24th. Between three and four in the afternoon I came to Mr. Clark's, at the Devizes.

I found his daughter there, our sister Taylor, (who has won him to Christ without the word,) and a sister from Bath. We soon perceived that our enemies had taken the alarm, and were mustering their forces for the battle. They began with ringing the bells backward, and running to and fro in the streets, as lions roaring for their prey. From the time my brother told me in London, "there was no such thing as raising a mob at the Devizes," I had a full expectation of what would follow ; but saw my call, and walked with my brother Meriton, and M. Naylor, to an house where the Society used to meet.

The Curate's mob had been in quest of me at several places, particularly Mrs. Philips's, where I was expected to preach. They broke open and ransacked her house ; but not finding me, marched away to our brother Rogers's, where we were praying and exhorting one another to continue in the faith, and through much tribulation enter the kingdom.

The chief gentleman of the town headed the mob ; and the zealous Curate, Mr. Innys, stood with them in the street the whole time, dancing for joy. This is he who declared in the pulpit, as well as from house to house, that he himself heard me preach blasphemy before the Univer-

sity, and tell them, "If you do not receive the Holy Ghost while I breathe upon you, ye are all damned."

He had gone about several days, stirring up the people, and canvassing the gentry for their vote and interest ; but could not raise a mob while my brother was here. The hour of darkness was not then fully come.

While his friends were assaulting us, I thought of their ancient brethren, whom we read of Gen. xix. 4 : "Before they lay down, the men of the city, even the men of Sodom, compassed the house about, both young and old, all the people from every quarter. And they called upon Lot, and said unto him, Where are the men that came unto thee this night ? bring them out unto us." My own name I heard frequently repeated, with, "Bring him out, bring him out !" Their design was first to throw me into the horse-pond. They continued raging and threatening for the first hour ; and pressed hard upon us to break the door. The windows they did break to pieces, and tore down the shutters of the shop. The little flock were less afraid than I expected. Only one of our sisters fainted away : but beneath were the everlasting arms.

Our besiegers had now blocked up the door with a waggon, and set up lights, lest I should escape. Yet a brother got out unobserved, and, with much entreaty, prevailed upon the Mayor to come down. He came with two Constables, one a faithful brother, the other a persecutor, and threatened the rioters, but so softly, that none regarded him. It was the Lord who for the present rebuked the madness of the people. They hurried away from us to the inn, where our horses were ; broke open the stable-door, and turned out the beasts, which were found some hours after in a pond, up to their chin in water.

We were at a loss meantime what to do, when God put it into the heart of our next-door neighbour, a Baptist, to take us through a passage into his own house, offer us his bed, and engage for our security. We accepted his kindness, and slept in peace.

Wed., February 25th. A day never to be forgotten ! At seven I walked quietly to Mrs. Philips's ; began preaching a little before the time appointed, and for three quarters of an hour invited a few listening sinners to Christ. Then

the boys with their bells, like the devil's infantry, began ; and soon after, his whole army assaulted the house to bring us forth. We sat in a little ground-room, and ordered all the doors to be thrown open. They brought an hand-engine, and began to play into the house. We kept our seats, and they rushed into the passage. Just then Mr. Borough, the Constable, came, seized upon the spout of the engine, and carried it off in spite of them all. They swore, if he did not deliver it, they would pull down the house. At that time they might have taken us prisoners, for we were in their sight, close to them, and none to interpose ; but they hurried out to fetch the larger engine.

Meantime we were advised to send to Mr. Mayor ; but Mr. Mayor was gone out of town in the sight of the people. This was great encouragement to those who were already wrought up to a proper pitch by the painstaking Curate, and gentlemen of the town, particularly Mr. Sutton and Mr. Willy, the two leading men, Dissenters.

Mr. Sutton lived next door, and frequently came out to the mob, to keep up their spirits. Mr. Innys was there too, and quite happy on the occasion. Mr. Sutton sent word to Mrs. Philips, " that if she did not turn that fellow out to the mob, he would send them to drag him out." Mr. Willy passed by again and again, assuring the rioters he would stand by them, and secure them from the law, do what they would.

They now began playing the larger engine, which broke the windows, flooded the rooms, and spoiled the goods. We were withdrawn to a small upper-room, in the back part of the house, *seeing* no way to escape their violence. They seemed under the full power of the old murderer. Our brother who keeps the Society they laid hold on first, dragged him away, and threw him into the horse-pond, and broke his back, as was reported. But another of the Society ran in resolutely among them, and rescued him out of their hands, by little less than a miracle. His wife fell into fits again.

We gave ourselves unto prayer, believing the Lord would deliver us, how or when we saw not, nor any possible way of escaping. Therefore we stood still to see the salvation of God.

As soon as the mob had emptied the engine, they ran to fill it again, keeping strict watch on all sides lest we should escape. One advised us to attempt it through the garden of a persecutor, and I put on my coat on purpose, but could not think it the Lord's way of bringing us forth. I laid aside the design, and saw a troop of our enemies coming up the very way we should have gone.

Every now and then some or other of our friends would venture to us, but rather weakened our hands, so that we were forced to stop our ears, and look up. Among the rest, the Mayor's maid came, and told us her mistress was in tears about me, and begged me to disguise myself in women's clothes, and try to make my escape. Her heart had been turned towards us by the conversion of her son. Just on the brink of ruin, God laid his hand on the poor prodigal, and, instead of running away to sea, he entered into the Society, to the great joy and surprise of his parents.

The rioters without continued playing their engine, which diverted them for some time : but their number and fierceness still increased, and the gentlemen plied them with pitchers of ale, as much as they would drink. Mr. Meriton hid his money and watch, that it might do good to somebody, he said ; for as to the mob, they should have nothing of him but his carcass.

They were now on the point of breaking in, when Mr. Borough thought of reading the Proclamation. He did so, at the hazard of his life. In less than the hour, of above a thousand wild beasts, none were left but the guard. They retreated, as we suppose, by the advice of the old serpent, who sat observing us at an opposite house, in the shape of a Lawyer. We had now stood siege for about three hours, and none but the invisible hand could have kept them one moment from tearing us in pieces.

Our Constable had applied to Mr. Street, the only Justice in town, who would not act. We found there was no help in man, which drove us closer to the Lord, and we prayed by his Spirit, with little intermission, the whole day.

Our enemies, at their return, made their main assault at the back-door, swearing horribly they would have me, if it cost them their lives. Many seeming accidents concurred to delay their breaking in. The man of the house came

home, and, instead of turning me out, as they expected, took part with us, and stemmed the tide for some time. Then they got a notion that I had made my escape; and ran down to the inn, and played the engine there. They forced the inn-keeper to turn out our horses, which he immediately sent to Mr. Clark's. This drew the rabble and their engine thither; but the resolute old man charged and presented his gun, till they retreated.

Upon their re-visiting us, Mr. Meriton was for surrendering ourselves before the night came on, which, he said, would make them more audacious; and that there might be witness of whatever they did by daylight. But I persuaded him to wait, till the Lord should point out the way.

Now we stood in jeopardy every moment. Such threatenings, curses, and blasphemies I have never heard. They seemed kept out by a continued miracle. I remembered the Roman Senators sitting in the forum when the Gauls broke in upon them, but thought there was a fitter posture for Christians, and told my companion they should take us off our knees.

We were kept from all hurry and discomposure of spirit, by a divine power resting upon us. We prayed and conversed as freely as if we had been in the midst of our brethren; and had great confidence that the Lord would either deliver us from the danger, or in it. One of my companions (M. N.) cried out, "It must be so; God will deliver us: if God is true, we are safe."

I told my friend Meriton,—*et hæc olim meminisse juvabit*,—that our most distant friends were praying for us; and our deliverance would soon occasion many thanksgivings unto God. In the height of the storm, when we were just falling into the hands of the drunken, enraged multitude, he was so little disturbed, that he fell fast asleep.

They were now close to us, on every side, and over our heads, untiling the roof. I was diverted by a little girl, who called to me, through the door, "Mr. Wesley! Mr. Wesley! creep under the bed; they will kill you; they are pulling down the house." Our sister Taylor's faith was just failing, when a ruffian cried out, "Here they are, behind the curtain!" At this time we fully expected their appearance, and retired to the furthest corner of the

room, and I said, "This is the crisis." In that moment Jesus rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm. We heard not a breath without, and wondered what was come to them. The silence lasted for three quarters of an hour, before any one came near us ; and we continued in mutual exhortation and prayer, and looking for deliverance.

If ever we felt faith, it was now. Our souls hung upon that arm which divided the sea. I often told my companions, "Now God is at work for us : he is contriving our escape. He can turn these leopards into lambs ; can command the Heathen to bring his children on their shoulders, and make our fiercest enemies the instruments of our deliverance."

In about an hour after the last general assault, the answer of faith came, and God made bare his arm. Soon after three, Mr. Clark knocked at the door, and brought with him the persecuting Constable. He said, "Sir, if you will promise never to preach here again, the gentlemen and I will engage to bring you safe out of town." My answer was, "I shall promise no such thing." "But will you not tell me you have no intention of returning hither?" "Not till you are better disposed to receive me ; for, in obedience to my Master, if you persecute me in one city, I will flee to another : but, setting aside my office, I will not give up my birthright, as an Englishman, of visiting what part I please of His Majesty's dominions." "Sir, we expect no such promise, that you will never come here again ; only tell me that it is not your present intention, that I may tell the gentlemen, who will then secure your quiet departure." I answered, "I cannot come now, because I must return to London a week hence : but OBSERVE, I make no promise of not preaching here when the door is opened ; and don't you say that I do."

He went away with this answer, and we betook ourselves again to prayer and thanksgiving. We perceived it was the Lord's doing, and it was marvellous in our eyes. Our adversaries' hearts were turned. Even Mr. Sutton and Willy laboured to take off the mob, and quench the fire themselves had kindled. Whether pity for us, or fear for themselves, wrought strongest, God knoweth. Probably

the latter ; for the mob were wrought up to such a pitch of fury, that their masters dreaded the consequence, and therefore went about appeasing the multitude, and charging them not to touch us in our departure.

I knew full well it was not in their power to lay the devil they had raised, and none but the Almighty could engage for our security. We had hoped to make our escape in the dead of the night, if the house was not pulled down first ; and had therefore sent our horses toward Seen, intending to walk after them ; but now we sent for them back, and recovered them before they were got out of the town.

While the Constable was gathering his posse, we got our things from Mr. Clark's, and prepared to go forth. The whole multitude were without, expecting us. Now our Constable's heart began to fail, and he told us he much doubted if the mob *could* be restrained ; for that thirty or more of the most desperate were gone down the street, and waited at the end of the town for our passing : he should therefore advise us to hide ourselves in some other house, and get off by night. Mr. Meriton's counsel was, to escape by the back-door, while the mob were waiting for us at the fore-door. I asked counsel of the Lord, and met with that word, "Jesus said unto her, Said I not unto thee, if thou wouldest believe thou shouldest see the glory of God?" After reading this, I went forth as easy as Luther to the Council.

We were saluted with a general shout. The man whom M. Naylor had hired to ride before her, was, as we now perceived, one of the rioters. This hopeful guide was to conduct us out of the reach of his fellows. Mr. Meriton and I took horse in the face of our enemies, who began clamouring against us, and I answering them, when the Constable begged me to forbear. The gentlemen were dispersed among the mob to bridle them.

We rode a slow pace up the street, the whole multitude pouring along on both sides, and attending us with loud acclamations. Such fierceness and diabolical malice I have not seen in human faces. They ran up to our horses, as if they would swallow us ; but did not know which was Wesley. We felt great peace and acquiescence in the honour done us ; while the whole town were spectators of our march.

After riding two or three hundred yards, I looked back, and saw Mr. Meriton on the ground in the midst of the mob, and two bull-dogs upon him. One was first let loose, which leaped at his horse's nose ; but the horse with his foot beat him down. The other fastened on his nose, and hung there, till Mr. Meriton, with the but-end of his whip, felled him to the ground. Then the first dog, recovering, flew at the horse's breast, and fastened there. The beast reared up, and Mr. Meriton slid gently off. The dog kept his hold, till the flesh tore off. Then some men took off the dogs, others cried, " Let them alone : " but neither beast nor man had any farther commission to hurt. I stopped the horse, and delivered him to my friend. He re-mounted with great composure, and we rode on leisurely as before, till out of sight. Then we mended our pace, and in an hour came to Seen, having rode three miles about, and by seven to Wrexal. The news of our danger was got thither before us, but we brought the welcome tidings of our own deliverance.

Now we saw the hand of Providence in suffering them to turn out our horses, that is, to send them to us against we wanted them. Again, how plainly were we overruled to send our horses down the town, which blinded the rioters without our designing it, and drew off their engines and them, leaving us a free passage at the other end of the town !

We joined in hearty praises to our Deliverer, singing the hymn,—

" Worship, and thanks, and blessing," &c.

(See Redemption Hymns.)

Thur., February 26th. I preached at Bath, and we rejoiced like men that take the spoil. We continued our triumph at Bristol, and reaped the fruit of our labours and sufferings.

Sun., March 1st. In riding to Kingswood, Satan had another thrust at me. We were singing the thanksgiving for our deliverance, when our coach overturned. All six were hurt, but none dangerously. The voice of joy and thanksgiving was heard among our beloved colliers, both in the word and sacrament.

Fri., March 6th. I took horse at four, and on Saturday afternoon came safe to the Foundery.

Wed., March 11th. I spake with one who once walked

in simple faith ; but the Antinomian tempter has prevailed. Now he expressly renounces us, " who seek to be justified by works."

Fri., March 13th. Mr. M., a young Clergyman, was at our watchnight : one who seems inclined to think and judge for himself.

Fri., March 20th. I found, by the increase of my audience this morning, that my sharp rebuke of the Society last night had not been lost.

Sun., March 22d. In the evening we rejoiced as in the day when we came up out of the land of Egypt.

Tues., March 24th. I preached at Shoreham, without molestation. These wild beasts also are tamed ; and will, many of them, I doubt not, receive the truth they persecuted.

Wed., March 25th. I stopped one who had crept in among our Helpers, without either discretion or veracity.

Thur., March 26th. I was walking to J. Ellison's, when a gentleman ran out of his house, and exceedingly pressed me to step in, and dine with him. Although pre-engaged, I could hardly deny him, as the person was no other than Mr. Daniel Garnault.

Fri., March 27th. God gave us his blessing, both in the word and sacrament.

Sun., April 12th. I invited many to come in, upon that promise, " In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed."

Mon., April 13th. I met Mr. Bateman at our sister Witham's. My heart rejoiced and ached for him. What has he to go through, before he has made full proof of his ministry !

Thur., April 16th. He was with me at night in the desk. My text was, " Thy watchmen shall lift up the voice together," &c. Great was our rejoicing before the Lord.

Good-Friday, April 17th. We had sweet fellowship with Him in his sufferings ; and many cried after Him, being deeply wounded by his dying love.

Easter-day, April 19th. The Lord gave us, under the word, to know the power of his resurrection ; but in the sacrament he carried us quite above ourselves and all earthly things.

I went forth to an huge, unruly multitude in the fields : the Lord stilled them by the word of his power, and comforted me among the faithful.

Mon., April 20th. I preached again in the fields, to a solemn assembly.

Tues., April 21st. I was, with Sarah Perrin, in perils by water. Her calmness would not suffer me to fear.

Wed., April 22d. I received an unexpected invitation through M. Edwyn ; but, by Mr. Erskine's and Sarah Perrin's advice, deferred accepting it.

Mon., April 27th. That I might abstain from all appearance of evil, particularly of pride and resentment, I took up my cross, and went in Mrs. Rich's coach to Chelsea. I passed an hour or two at Lampe's, before I waited upon one who was once my friend. The first that greeted me was faithful Mrs. M., with her *old professions* ; next, Mrs. E. ; and last, *that person* ; at whose desire I sang, prayed, dined, exhorted, talked of the times, and took my leave.

Sun., May 3d. I took my leave of the Foundery and fields for a short season ; and on

Mon., May 4th, set out for Bristol. I overtook Charles Perronet at Brentford, and rode on to Hungerford.

Tues., May 5th. I received fresh strength among our colliers, and brethren in Bristol.

Wed., May 6th. I took Charles Perronet to see the new Change, and picked up some lost sheep ; one on the brink of the pit.

Sat., May 9th. My namesake and charge was taken ill of a fever, which soon appeared to be the small-pox.

Sun., May 10th. I stirred up the Society with forcible words, and greatly rejoiced with the faithful at our feast of love.

Tues., May 12th. I gave the sacrament to my patient, who grows worse and worse.

Fri., May 15th. I visited a brother, triumphing over death. He had found the door of hope opened the first time I prayed with him, and now is ready to depart in peace.

Tues., May 19th. Expecting the turn of the distemper, I sat up with Charles. The Lord is pleased to try our faith and patience yet farther.

Wed., May 20th. At Wick my text was, " In thy seed

shall all the nations of the earth be blessed ;” and surely we were all partakers of the blessing, in that hour. Near two hours we continued in tears of grief and joy. The Justice was as much affected as any of us.

Fri., May 22d. At our watchnight I asked in faith, that the Lord would give his beloved sleep ; and he heard and answered the prayer immediately. Our brother Perronet was then in the utmost danger, through the second fever, and delirious, for want of rest : ready to enter his rest eternal. But the Lord rebuked the fever, and he fell asleep, and waked late the next morning, as one raised from the dead.

Sun., May 24th. God gave us, under the word, great strength and resolution against sin.

Wed., May 27th. I preached at the Hall, on, “ The good God pardon every one of you,” &c. ; and surely he showed us his great readiness so to do.

Thur., May 28th. Ascension-day. We spent from four to seven in triumph with our Lord.

Fri., May 29th. Having made strict inquiry into the life of each member of the Society, to-day I left out fifty of them, who have not adorned the Gospel.

Mon., June 1st. I rejoiced at Bath with our dear dying brother Yapp. He blessed me, and blessed God that he had ever seen my face. Soon after we left him he returned to his Lord in paradise.

Wed., June 3d. I preached at the chapel in West-street, and rejoiced for the abundant consolation which our Lord administered to us all.

Thur., June 4th. I rode over to our friends at Shoreham, a joyful messenger of their son’s recovery.

Fri., June 12th. At St. Bartholomew’s I expounded Isai. xl. 1 ; and wrapped them up in the promises.

Sun., June 14th. I heard my brother in the fields, and was adding a word of confirmation, when our old friend Mr. Green began speaking from a table just behind us. I would not strive, but walked quietly away, and all our children with me.

Sun., June 21st. Great multitudes attended in the fields to His cry from the cross, “ Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by ? ”

Fri., June 26th. I expelled one who had taken a bribe for his vote. I hope there is not another like offender in all our Societies.

Sat., June 27th. I prayed by our sister Somerset, just ready for the Bridegroom. I read prayers at St. Bartholomew's, and heard a true Gospel sermon from Mr. Perrotet. I preached there myself on Sunday, "Come, for all things are now ready."

Mon., June 29th. I joined with Howel Harris, &c., in prayer, and groaned under the burden of this guilty nation.

At Wapping the Lord gave testimony to his own word, "Him that cometh unto me, I will in no wise cast out." A woman cried out, and rushed into the vestry; but her cries continued all the time of preaching. I saw her afterwards, in great agony; for *this time* she is no dissembler, although she is Sarah Robinson!

Fri., July 3d. We had our first watchnight at the chapel. I preached on, "Looking for, and hastening toward, the coming of the day of God." His blessing confirmed his word. One who had been slack, but was now returning, heard it, and went home, and died.

Sun., July 5th. The whole congregation were in tears, or in triumph; crying after God, or rejoicing in his favour. The cloud rested upon us the whole time of communicating. In the evening there was a great shaking among the dry bones; and in the bands the God of all consolation showed himself.

Wed., July 8th. I assisted Mr. Bateman at St. Bartholomew's; but was quite weighed down with the behaviour of the communicants, so contrary to the apostolical precept, "Let all things be done decently and in order."

Sun., July 12th. Our sister Hoffman, setting sail for Jamaica, we commended to the grace of God, and felt we could never be separated from that soul, while she and we were united to Christ.

Fri., July 17th. I gave the sacrament to a grievous backslider, now crying out of the deep for mercy. Soon after she departed in peace.

Sat., July 18th. One received a fresh seal of pardon under the word this morning, who was before on the brink of destruction.

Fri., July 24th. I expounded Rev. iv. at the watch-night. I have not lately known a more solemn season. The place was crowded with strangers, emboldened by the night to hear us. It was near one before we could part.

Sun., July 26th. Many hearts were touched by the history of the returning prodigal.

Sun., August 2d. My audience in the field seemed to feel the word; and much more those at the chapel, whom I strongly exhorted to continue in the ship.

Mon., August 3d. In Mr. Richards's school at Reading, I preached "the Lamb of God who taketh away the sin of the world."

Wed., August 5th. I met the bands in Bristol; and the power of God broke in upon us wonderfully.

Thur., August 6th. I found it again in singing with Miss Wells, Miss Burdock, and eight of our Preachers.

Sun., August 9th. I preached from Luke xiv. 15 at the old orchard; (I think, for the first time;) and we had a great pouring out of the Spirit. It put me in mind of a like season which the first Quakers had at the same place, when many were convinced.

Sun., August 16th. I preached again in Moorfields, on, "To the Lord our God belong mercies and forgivenesses," &c.

Fri., August 21st. I received a second summons from my brother, hastening me to Ireland.

Mon., August 24th. We parted at the Foundery in fervent prayer, particularly for the conversion of some Romish Priest.

Wed., August 26th. I left my old host at Oxford, Mr. Evans, and stretched with Charles Perronet to Huntley, seven miles beyond Gloucester.

Thur., August 27th. Before five we renewed our strength and our labour. We overtook an hearer of Howel Harris, who conducted us within ten miles of Builth. For the rest of the way the river was our guide. Between eight and nine we found our brother Philips, and were glad soon after to betake ourselves to rest.

Fri., August 28th. My brother not being come from Ireland, according to appointment, we concluded he was

delayed by cross winds, and had an opportunity thereby of resting ourselves and our weary beasts.

At nine I preached in the street, repentance and faith. The people behaved with great decency. Mr. Gwynne came to see me at Mr. Philips's, with two of his family.

My soul seemed pleased to take acquaintance with them. We rode to Maesmynis church. I preached, and Mr. Williams after me in Welsh. At four I expounded the good Samaritan in the street; and He was present, binding up our wounds. I preached a fourth time at Garth, on, "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people." The whole family received us as messengers of God; and if such we are, they received Him that sent us.

Sat., August 29th. I rode to Llandrindod-Wells, and called the burdened souls to Jesus. He gave me to speak both searching and comfortable words. Three Ministers were of my audience. I returned to Garth rejoicing. Still no news of my brother. While we were talking of him he came, and brought life and a blessing with him.

Sun., August 30th. I preached on a tombstone in Builth churchyard; and again, on the prodigal son. Then at Garth, on the marks of the Messiah, Matt. xi. 5: "The blind receive their sight," &c.

Mon., August 31st. After preaching at noon in the churchyard, my brother set out for Bristol. I preached there at three, and invited a great multitude to the Gospel feast; then expounded at Garth Simon the Pharisee, and the woman that was a sinner.

Tues., September 1st. I preached at Maesmynis, and again in Builth, on Lam. i. 12: "Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by?" Now the great blessing came, even the constraining love of Christ crucified. All were melted down as wax before the fire. I took a sweet leave of the weeping flock, and plainly found that if we never met again upon earth, yet shall we never be parted.

I returned to Garth, and showed the end of Christ's mission, even to make all mankind happy. (Acts iii. 26.) We continued rejoicing in the Lord till past eleven.

Wed., September 2d. At six I met the family, both servants and children, and strongly explained, "I am come

that they might have life," &c. All seemed to receive my testimony. We left them in body, not in spirit.

I took horse with Mr. Gwynne, Mr. Philips, and our guide, a brother from Anglesea. We found the seven miles to Raydor four good hours' ride. I preached in the church, and laboured to awake the dead, and to lift up the hands that hung down. The Minister seemed a man of a simple heart, and surely not eager for preferment, or he would not be contented with his salary of £3 a year. Three or four neighbouring Clergymen invited me to their churches, whom I had not time to visit. I rode forward to Llanidloes, and pointed a house-full of listening sinners to the all-atoning Lamb.

Thur., September 3d. I called near the Town-hall, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters." I rode to Dolgelly, where our dear friends, Mr. Gwynne and Philips, left us.

Fri., September 4th. I reached Tan-y-Bwlch by nine, and Bar-Myni Ferry by five. It blew so hard, there was no crossing till the tide was out. We waited two hours, part of which I slept on the ground. Then with much difficulty we got into the boat. The hurricane soon drove us out of danger. We rode in the dark over the heavy sands, and in an hour got to a little town in Anglesea. After midnight we came thoroughly wet to a brother's, where we dried ourselves, and pushed on to Holyhead by seven in the morning, having been in the saddle twenty-five hours.

Sun., September 6th. I sent an offer of my assistance to the Minister, who was ready to beat my messenger. I went to church, and wondered he did not refuse me the sacrament.

After evening service I preached, at the request of some gentlemen, who behaved as such, though the vulgar were rude enough.

Tues., September 8th. At ten we embarked. What wind we had was contrary. It increased in the evening, and at midnight was too high for us to sleep. Next morning, September 9th, we were taken into the smaller packet-boat, and by eleven the Lord brought us safe to Dublin.

Here, the first news we heard was, that the little flock stands fast in the storm of persecution, which arose as soon

as my brother left them. The Popish mob has broke open their room, and destroyed all before them. Some of them are sent to Newgate, others bailed. What will be the event we cannot tell till we see whether the Grand Jury will find the bill.

Wed., September 9th. I walked at five in the evening to the shattered room in Marlborough-street, where a few people were met, who did not fear what men or devils could do unto them. God has called me to suffer affliction with his people. The Popish mob, encouraged and assisted by the Protestant, are so insolent and outrageous, that, whatever street we pass through, it is up in arms. The Mayor would assist us, but cannot. The Grand Jury have had the plainest evidence of the riot laid before them; that a mixed rabble of Papists and Protestants broke open our room, and four locks, and a warehouse, stealing or destroying the goods to a considerable value; beat and wounded several with clubs, &c.; tore away the pulpit, benches, window-cases, &c., and burnt them openly before the gate, swearing they would murder us all. Yet it is much doubted whether the Grand Jury will find the bill! But doth not the Most High regard?

I began my ministry with, "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people," &c. None made disturbance till I had ended. Then the rabble attended us with the usual compliments to our lodgings.

Thur., September 10th. At five all was quiet within doors; but we had men, women, and children upon us as soon as we appeared in the streets. One I observed crying, "Swaddler, swaddler!" (our usual title here,) who was a young Ishmael indeed, and had not long learned to speak. I am sure he could not be four years old.

We dined with a gentleman, who explained our name to us. It seems we are beholden to Mr. Cennick for it, who abounds in such like expressions as, "I curse and blaspheme all the gods in heaven, but the babe that lay in the manger, the babe that lay in Mary's lap, the babe that lay in swaddling clouts," &c. Hence they nicknamed him, "Swaddler, or Swaddling John;" and the word sticks to us all, not excepting the Clergy.

I met the Society, and the Lord knit our hearts together

in love stronger than death. We both wept and rejoiced for the consolation. God hath sent me, I trust, to confirm their souls, and keep them together in the present distress.

Fri., September 11th. I met the Society at one, for the first time, and spent an hour in intercession for our nation and Church. We shall hear of these prayers again another day, even the day of the great slaughter, when the towers fall.

I preached morning and evening, this and the following day, no man forbidding me, though every one reviled us, both coming and going.

Sun., September 13th. In the strength of the Lord I went forth to Oxmantown-green. I stood under the wall of the barracks, and preached Christ crucified. They all, both Protestants and Papists, gave diligent heed, as to words whereby they may be saved.

I received the sacrament at St. Patrick's, and from evening service returned to the Green. Thousands were now assembled to hear the word, and many to hinder them. Our dying Lord applied his own words, "Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by?" In vain did the poor blind Papists rage, and shout, and cast stones. None were suffered to hurt me, or any of the hearers.

The mob waited for me on a bridge. We tried in vain to get a coach; and were therefore forced, when it was dark, to walk home another way, without calling upon our Catholic friends.

Tues., September 15th. Woe is me now, for my soul is wearied because of murderers, which this city is full of! The Ormond mob, and liberty mob, seldom part, till one or more are killed. A poor Constable was the last, whom they beat and dragged about, till they had killed him, and then hung him up in triumph. None was called in question for it; but the earth covered his blood. Last week a woman was beaten to death by the rabble; but that was all fair, for she was caught picking a pocket: so there is an end of her. No wonder if, in such a place, there should be no justice for Christians. A poor, weakly man, of Mr. Cennick's Society, was so abused by his neighbour, who knocked him down, and stamped upon his stomach, that he

died soon after. The murderer was indeed brought to a trial ; but acquitted, as usual.

I preached in the evening, without interruption ; the mob being awed for the present, while our bill is depending. The utmost application has been made by them to the Jury, and none at all by us. We leave the matter to God. If man does us justice, it is more than we expect.

Thur., September 17th. I got a particular account of the late riot. On Sunday, August 30th, a mob of Papists and Protestants assaulted the house, where the Society was met after evening service. They met them going out, with sticks and stones, knocked down several, both men and women, and beat them in a barbarous manner. Some escaped the back way ; others retreated to the house, and shut the door. The mob broke it open, and another inward door, tore down the desk and forms, carried two large counters, chairs, and part of the wainscot into the street, and openly burnt all, but what they stole.

There was a warehouse over the preaching-room, which they broke open and ransacked. Above one hundred pounds' worth of goods they seized as lawful prize, and committed the rest to the flames.

They have often threatened our lives. Mr. Paterson they knocked down, and cut in several places while on the ground ; then threw him into a cellar, and cast stones on him. Mrs. Young and many others were treated in the same manner. Half-hour past nine the Mayor came with his guard, and saw with his own eyes the havoc the mob had made. He readily granted warrants to apprehend them. Some of the poorest, Papists mostly, were sent to Newgate ; but the better sort made a mock of his authority, and walked about the town, from alehouse to alehouse, with the Constables, whom, by drink and money, they had secured of their party.

Our hour of intercession was a solemn season, most present receiving a manifestation of the Spirit, even the spirit of contrition and prayer.

I dined at Mr. Powell's, the printer, who informed us that the Jury have thrown out the bill. It was no surprise to me. My soul was filled with comfort, and confidence that the Lord would now take the matter into his own hands.

I met Mr. Millar, the Lutheran Minister, a simple, loving man, but not quite so courageous as Martin Luther.

Sat., September 19th. I breakfasted at Mr. Aggit's, and found him full of indignation at the injustice of the Jury. He did not seem to know that Christians are looked upon as outlaws, in all times and places.

Sun., September 20th. After commending our cause to God, I walked to the Green. I believed the Lord would make bare his arm in our defence. I called, in his name, "Come unto me, all ye that are weary," &c. His power was upon the hearers, keeping down all opposition. I spoke with great freedom to the poor Papists, urging them to repentance and the love of Christ, from the authority of their own Kempis, and their own Liturgy. None lifted up his voice or hand. All listened with strange attention. Many were in tears. I advised them to go to their respective places of worship. They expressed general satisfaction, especially the Papists. This also hath God wrought.

Returning, we were insulted by a gathering mob, when a Baptist came by, and desired us to take shelter in his house. We stayed and breakfasted; and left him quite happy in having protected us from the violence of the people.

The holiday folk were at the Green before me, it being the scene of all manner of diversions on Sunday afternoon. I lifted up my voice, and cried, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters!" A great multitude of serious hearers encompassed me, while those who had not ears to hear, withdrew on every side to the opposite hill, sat down in rows on the grass, and there remained the whole time. I never saw the hand of God more visible.

Mon., September 21st. I began examining the classes; and met several who received forgiveness under the word last week. But, justified or unjustified, all are in earnest, and seem made without fear. I have not seen such soldiers before, so young, and yet so valiant.

Wed., September 23d. I heard that, on Sunday last, after I was gone, the Popish mob fell upon the women, but were beaten off by the soldiers. They threaten to come with all their forces next Sunday.

Going to the room, the mob insulted us, and forced us to

take refuge at Mr. Aggit's. He was scandalized at such treatment of a Minister of the established Church ; and very sure, a Popish Priest, so used, would be succoured by the Magistrate. I believe so too. Error of every kind may meet with favour ; but the world never did, nor ever will, tolerate real Christianity.

In our return, the people gaped upon us with their mouths, like ramping and roaring lions. What restrains them from tearing us to pieces ? They want neither will nor power. The Jury have taken off the reins from the many-headed beast, and our Protestant brethren have sold us into their hands ; who think they would do God service, and merit heaven, by killing us.

Fri., September 25th. I passed the evening very agreeably at a Baptist's, a woman of sense and piety, and a great admirer of my father's Life of Christ.

Sun., September 27th. Never have I seen a quieter congregation at the Foundry than we had at the Green, both morning and afternoon. Many of the soldiers were within hearing, though behind the doors and walls, for fear of their officers. The Papists stood like lambs. I quoted Kempis, which makes some of them confident I am a good Catholic.

Mon., September 28th. Our landlady yesterday nailed up our preaching-room ; but we had it opened for the word this morning. We are now come to close quarters with the enemy, who threatens hard to drive us out of his kingdom.

I had an hour's conference with two serious Quakers, who hold the Head with us, and build on the one foundation.

Tues., September 29th. My subject in the evening was, "The kingdom of heaven is at hand : repent ye, and believe the Gospel." I was led, unawares, to describe the glorious appearing of our Lord ; and the word came with power irresistible. The cries of the wounded almost drowned my voice. One, I afterwards heard, received a cure.

At Mr. Powel's I met Mr. Edwards, landlord of Mr. Cennick's preaching-house. He told us he quite disliked his tenants, was resolved to raise the rent, and asked if we should be willing to take the room, if they refused it. We

answered, "If they had the first offer, and did not accept of it, we should be glad of the next refusal."

Fri., October 2d. I passed two hours with M. Powel, and another Baptist, whom I almost persuaded to give up their faith of adherence, so called, for the faith of the Gospel, which works by love, and is connected with peace, joy, power, and the testimony of the Spirit.

Sun., October 4th. At Marybone-lane I expounded those awful words, "The Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and the trump of God." Many trembled; and some rejoiced in hope of his glory. A Papist, behind the wall, at first lifted up his voice in curses; but in the end cried out, "The Lord bless you!"

Wed., October 7th. Several soldiers ventured to the word, notwithstanding the prohibition. Now and then officers came by, and stopped to see if any of their men were there. Then they skulked down, kneeling or sitting on the ground, behind the women.

Thur., October 8th. God is daily adding to our number. To-day I admitted two more into the Society; one a Papist, whom we caught in the Green.

Sun., October 11th. None has made the least disturbance for a week past, whether Protestant or Papist. Only one of the latter flung away in a rage, crying, I ought to be stabbed for lumping them all together, and telling them they might all be saved, of whatever church or party, if they would return, like the prodigal, to their heavenly Father.

I began preaching, with great reluctance, at Marybone-lane, where the Spirit came pouring down like a flood. All present were in tears, either of sorrow or joy. We continued above an hour, singing and crying. A more refreshing time I have not known, since I left England.

I spent the evening with Mrs. M——, a true mourner in Sion, till the Lord, on Wednesday, put the new song in her mouth. She set us all on fire with the warmth of her first love.

Sat., October 17th. I passed the day at the house we have purchased, near Dolphin's barn, writing and meditating. I could almost have set up my rest here; but must

not look for rest on this side eternity. I heard (as I do every day) of more sinners who have received the atonement.

Mon., October 19th. I dined at a gentleman's who offered us a large piece of ground to build upon, at a very moderate price. It seems as if the time for building were at hand, now the Magistrates are so favourable. The Mayor has declared he will send any man to Newgate who only calls after us in the streets : but we are not so vain as to think all the authority of man can long screen those who will live godly in Christ Jesus, from suffering persecution.

Fri., October 23d. I visited a sick man, who has been convinced by reading my brother's sermons, and justified, as far as I can find, by the immediate voice of Christ.

Sun., October 25th. I passed three hours at St. Patrick's, under my usual burden among the dry bones of the house of Israel. I seldom enter this place, but they are ready to drag me out as a profaner of the temple. The Dean I must except, who has always treated us with great courtesy ; looks pleased to see us make the bulk of the communicants ; appointed us a seat by ourselves ; and constantly administers to me first, as the Rubric directs.

I opened our new house at Dolphin's barn, by preaching to a great multitude within and without. After preaching five times to-day, I was as fresh as in the morning.

Mon., October 26th, I employed in examining the Society, and took in several new ones, and put out others, who had been too hastily admitted by our helpers. My hands were strengthened by meeting several who have found the pardoning love of God through my ministry.

Tues., October 27th. I prayed by our sister Baker, whom I had lately checked for her too great contempt of death, as it seemed to me. The trying time is come, yet she keeps her confidence.

Fri., October 30th. In our return from intercession, we were stoned for the length of a street or two. Charles Perronet interposed his back to screen me. Here I received the first blow since I came to Dublin. At our lodgings the mob took their leave of us, without hurting either.

Sat., October 31st. I heard the best news of any since our coming hither,—that our sister Baker is departed in

full triumph. To one who asked her this morning how she did, she answered, "Bravely ! bravely ! never better." The pains of death had then got hold on her, but she smiled on the welcome messenger ; took leave of her husband and children with calm joy ; expressed great satisfaction at having chosen to suffer affliction with the people of God ; confirmed those about her in the same happy choice ; and soon after fell asleep, and awoke in paradise.

I called at the house, as well to exhort the survivors as to see the late temple of the Holy Ghost. The happy soul had left a smile upon the clay, to tell where she was gone. We were all comforted in prayer and thanksgiving.

I preached for the last time in Marlborough-street, on, "These are they that came out of great tribulation, and washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb." It was a time of solemn rejoicing in hope of His coming to wipe away all tears from our eyes.

Sun., November 1st. At St. Patrick's Mr. K. entertained us with a discourse so full of low, pitiful lies and nonsense, as I never heard from any, except the ingenious Mr. Hoblin.

Preaching five times is not more than twice a day, when the order of Providence calls us to it. My strength do I ascribe unto Thee, and all my success, and all my blessings !

Mon., November 2d. I admitted five or six into the Society, and among them, the soldier who was put under arrest last Sunday, for the high crime and misdemeanour of hearing a sermon at the Green. The officer, after much threatening, let him go ; but he continues refractory still, that is, resolved to work out his salvation.

Sat., November 7th. I prayed by a man near death. When we first visited him, he was quite unawakened ; but is now saved from the fear both of death and hell, and waiting for the great salvation of God. We have several such instances of persons departing in the Lord, who never heard the Gospel till we preached it to them on their death-beds.

Tues., November 10th. I preached at a new place in Hanbury-lane, next door to a warm antagonist, the Rev. Mr. N. Therefore we did not expect to be long unmolested. Three nights, however, we have had peace.

Thur., November 12th. Hearing the Minister had procured a mob to hinder our preaching, I would not suffer any of the Preachers or people to expose themselves at Hanbury-lane. At night our adversaries, who till then had expected us in vain, broke into the house, and took possession.

Thur., November 26th. I spent the day in walking about and taking subscriptions for the building. At night I proposed it to the Society, who were glad to give of their little. This and the following day was subscribed upward of £70.

Fri., December 4th. I passed an hour at Mr. Millar's, the Lutheran Minister, who favoured me with a sight of Count Zinzendorf's famous declaration against my brother and me, and likewise his translation of the New Testament. We looked for St. James's Epistle, but he was not to be found, the Count having thrust him out of the canon by his own authority.

At midnight I was raised by a dying child, brought into my room to be baptized.

Sun., December 13th. We had a large increase of communicants at St. Patrick's, mostly of the Society. The good Dean expressed his approbation at the sight.

Mon. and Tues., December 14th and 15th. I had great rejoicing over our lately departed sister Witham. Her dying prayers for me I found strengthening my hands, and confirming my hope of shortly following her.

Wed., December 16th. Seldom have I been more alive than in the morning preaching, or more dead than in the evening.

Sat., December 19th. I spake from John i. 12: "As many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God;" and warned them against receiving Christ by halves, or so magnifying one of his offices, as to slight or deny the other. The Priest must not swallow up the King, nor the Saviour the Lord.

Wed., December 23d. I had a conference with two Clergymen concerning this way, which they seemed to believe was no schism, or new religion, but the faith once delivered to the saints. One of them invited me to his lodgings in the College.

Fri., Christmas-day. The people met at my lodgings between three and four. It was a day of rejoicing. So were the three following : suitable to the solemn occasion.

Mon., December 28th. I prayed by a constant hearer of the word, who was joyfully turning his face to the wall. The next morning he departed with that word, " Into thy hands I commend my spirit."

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.